

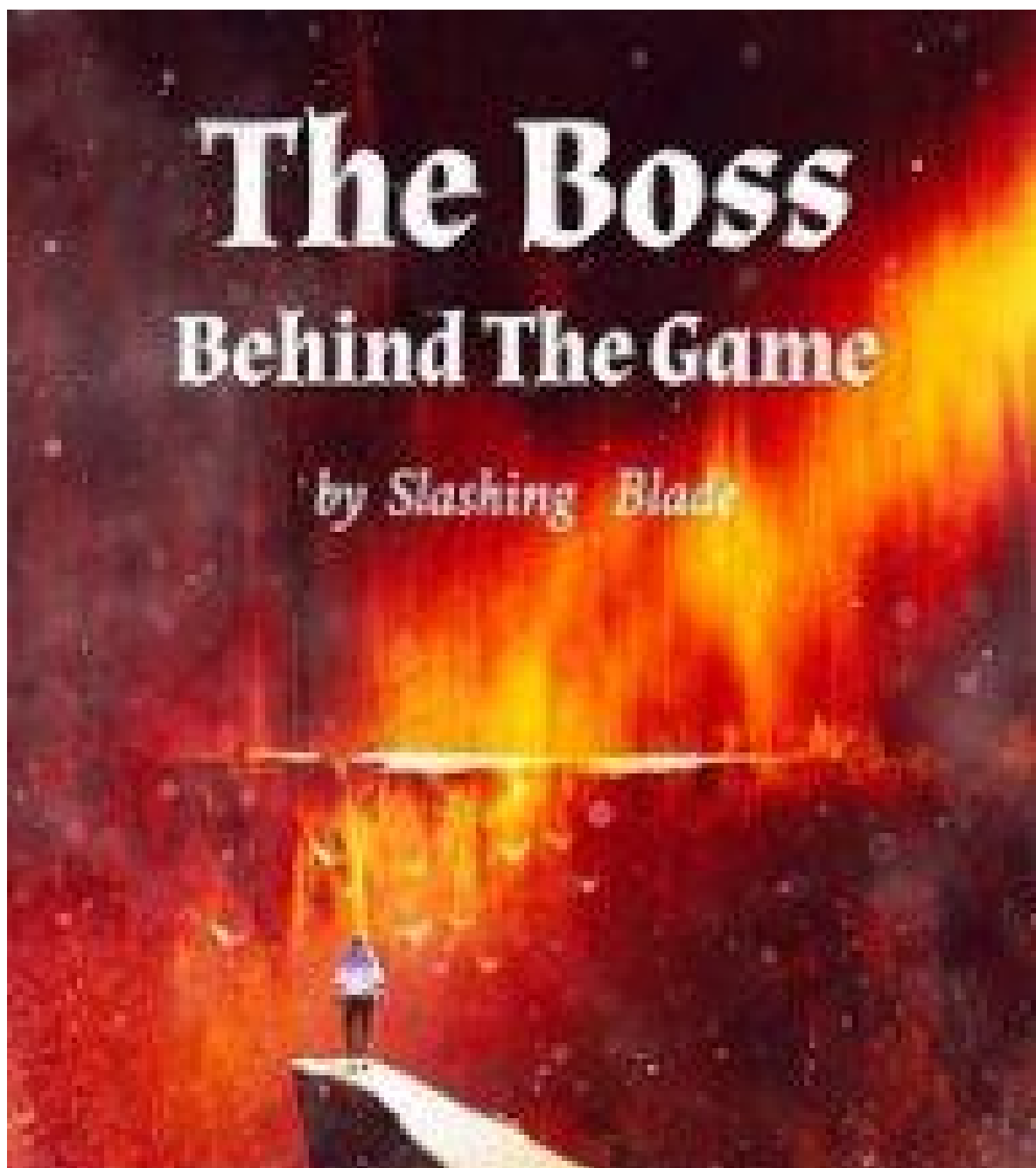
# The Boss

## Behind The Game

by Slashing Blade

# **The Boss Behind The Game**

*Slashing Blade*





Source: <https://boxnovel.com/novel/the-boss-behind-the-game>

Generated by [Lightnovel Crawler](#)

# The Boss Behind The Game Chapter 201-300

## 1. [Volume 3](#)

1. [Chapter 201 - A Malignant Player Does Not Deserve A Natural Death!](#)
2. [Chapter 202 - The Strongest! The Strongest!](#)
3. [Chapter 203 - Bei Li'S True Form](#)
4. [Chapter 204 - The Final Curtain](#)
5. [Chapter 205 - Vibranium Pirate Ship](#)
6. [Chapter 206 - Ghost Commander Trial](#)
7. [Chapter 207 - Cross-Server Account And Ign Evaluation](#)
8. [Chapter 208 - No, You Wanted To!](#)
9. [Chapter 209 - Beiqi Expeditionary Force](#)
10. [Chapter 210 - Prestige And Rank](#)
11. [Chapter 211 - The Arrival Of The Expeditionary Force!](#)
12. [Chapter 212 - I Suspect They Were Cheating](#)
13. [Chapter 213 - The Dog And The Knight](#)
14. [Chapter 214 - I'M Not A Mount](#)
15. [Chapter 215 - Live Performance Of The Staff Technique](#)
16. [Chapter 216 - Justice Will Never Be Absent](#)
17. [Chapter 217 - The Emergence Of The Seal](#)
18. [Chapter 218 - Fight Against Heaven](#)
19. [Chapter 219 - Sealing The Heavens](#)
20. [Chapter 220 - Mech System](#)
21. [Chapter 221 - Mo Xiaoxin](#)
22. [Chapter 222 - A Massacre Triggered By A Fish](#)
23. [Chapter 223 - The Onlookers](#)
24. [Chapter 224 - Death And Calamity](#)
25. [Chapter 225 - The Meeting Of The Seven Nations](#)
26. [Chapter 226 - Please Return, Great Demon King](#)
27. [Chapter 227 - Transform Into A Human](#)
28. [Chapter 228 - The Players' Blessings](#)
29. [Chapter 229 - The Station Auction](#)
30. [Chapter 230 - Kuilong Ocean](#)
31. [Chapter 231 - Players Supporting The Sea King In Establishing A New Nation](#)

32. [Chapter 232 - The Forces Who Changed Their Worldview](#)
33. [Chapter 233 - Make Frequent Visits](#)
34. [Chapter 234 - The Power Of The Players](#)
35. [Chapter 235 - Wang Damang'S Acting Time](#)
36. [Chapter 236 - : It Cannot Be!](#)
37. [Chapter 237 - Lu Wu Was Ambushed](#)
38. [Chapter 238 - The Final Riddle](#)
39. [Chapter 239 - Bei Li'S Treasure](#)
40. [Chapter 240 - Yin Xiaoqi Fell Right Into The Trap](#)
41. [Chapter 241 - Close Your Doors, Let The Great Demon King Out!](#)
42. [Chapter 242 - Let'S Have Some Fun!](#)
43. [Chapter 243 - The Terror Of The Great Demon King\\_\(Part 1\)](#)
44. [Chapter 244 - Yin Xiaoqi'S Script \(Part 2\)](#)
45. [Chapter 245 - We Are Warlike People And We Do Not Fear Death \(Part 3\)](#)
46. [Chapter 246 - The Garden Of Death](#)
47. [Chapter 247 - The Infinite Darkness](#)
48. [Chapter 248 - The Great Demon King Got Banned](#)
49. [Chapter 249 - Extending The Year](#)
50. [Chapter 250 - Our Big Brother](#)
51. [Chapter 251 - The Blood Sacrifice War Dance \(Part 1\)](#)
52. [Chapter 252 - The Blood Sacrifice War Dance \(Part 2\)](#)
53. [Chapter 253 - Let'S Slaughter Him Ferociously\\_\(Part 1\)](#)
54. [Chapter 254 - Let'S Slaughter Him Ferociously\\_\(Part 2\)](#)
55. [Chapter 255 - A Failed Victory](#)
56. [Chapter 256 - Being Moved For Nothing](#)
57. [Chapter 257 - Liu Chai'S Challenge](#)
58. [Chapter 258 - The Return Of Number One](#)
59. [Chapter 259 - Unreliable Researchers](#)
60. [Chapter 260 - The Broken Page](#)
61. [Chapter 261 - The Nine Brothers Of The Nine Luminaries](#)
62. [Chapter 262 - The Arrival Of The Messengers](#)
63. [Chapter 263 - Putting On A Good Show](#)
64. [Chapter 264 - Welcome Gifts For The Future Subordinates](#)
65. [Chapter 265 - Big Dorky Liu Chai](#)
66. [Chapter 266 - Yue Yao Showed Himself](#)

67. [Chapter 267 - Brothers Dividing Property](#)
68. [Chapter 268 - We Surrender](#)
69. [Chapter 269 - His Excellency Yue Yao](#)
70. [Chapter 270 - The Beginning Of A Good Show](#)
71. [Chapter 271 - The Sea King'S Astonishment \(Part 1\)](#)
72. [Chapter 272 - Outbreak Of Events \(Part 2\)](#)
73. [Chapter 273 - It Was Evident \(Part 3\)](#)
74. [Chapter 274 - Extremely Wronged \(Part 4\)](#)
75. [Chapter 275 - I Am A Player](#)
76. [Chapter 276 - Legendary Sniper Black Lily](#)
77. [Chapter 277 - Dream Eater](#)
78. [Chapter 278 - Bot-Like Player](#)
79. [Chapter 279 - Even The Useless Players Could Become Gods](#)
80. [Chapter 280 - The Black Lily Of Death](#)
81. [Chapter 281 - Potion Master Trial](#)
82. [Chapter 282 - Changing Fate By Studying](#)
83. [Chapter 283 - A Trial That Caused One To Self-Isolate](#)
84. [Chapter 284 - The Art Of Explosion](#)
85. [Chapter 285 - An Explosive Life](#)
86. [Chapter 286 - April Fool'S Event](#)
87. [Chapter 287 - Two White Phantoms](#)
88. [Chapter 288 - The Evolution Of Sun Qi The Dog](#)
89. [Chapter 289 - The Smoking Gun For Cheating](#)
90. [Chapter 290 - The Cobra Squad](#)
91. [Chapter 291 - Double Kill](#)
92. [Chapter 292 - Safety Tag](#)
93. [Chapter 293 - Tomb-Sweeping Day Event](#)
94. [Chapter 294 - Anti-Addiction Setting](#)
95. [Chapter 295 - The Debut Of A Super Sidekick Force](#)
96. [Chapter 296 - : Lang Ya'S Incentive](#)
97. [Chapter 297 - Just Raid](#)
98. [Chapter 298 - Go! The Sea King!](#)
99. [Chapter 299 - Research Maniac](#)
100. [Chapter 300 - Battle Fortress](#)

# **Volume 3**

# Chapter 201 - A Malignant Player Does Not Deserve A Natural Death!

Chapter 201: A Malignant Player Does Not Deserve A Natural Death!

The tables were turned on the Sea King Navy from being the formidable party that dominated the battle initially to the current neck and neck situation. The Sea King knew he had blundered as he did not expect the forces of Beiqi to all join them in this battle.

What surprised him more was that the Xiao Tian Army's leader that he once thought to be dead was still alive. He even led the Xiao Tian Army in this blatant betrayal.

Under these present circumstances, the strength of the two sides was not far apart.

When the battle came to the third hour, it was a scene of great carnage with corpses of the Sea King Navy all over the Mansion of the Dead's border.

Meanwhile, the first batch of respawned players began to log in one after another, maneuvering the forces of Beiqi from an unfavorable position to ascendancy.

The Sea King seemed to know that his side would lose if the situation kept on this way. With a howl of rage, his body was engulfed by beams of blue energy before it started to expand.

The players were familiar with this ability. It was the Sea God Figure, the sacrificial ability Liu Chai gained after swallowing the famed Son of the Sea.

However, Liu Chai's Sea God Figure could not be compared to the Sea King's, be it in either size or vigor.



Huge waves suddenly rose from the Mansion of the Dead's border as the Sea King swung his icy blue trident.

“Oh no, he's making a realm!” the Rock Ghost King yelled in fury.

Seeing this, the Hydra King promptly turned sideways and charged toward the Sea King, trying to ruin his realm construction.

The Sea King Navy was unable to fully display their combat strength on land. Nonetheless, the forces of Beiqi would definitely be weakened if he were to build a Realm of Sea here. On top of that, the Sea King Navy's power would grow immensely.

“Leave now!”

The Sea King swung his trident hard upon the sight of the charging Hydra King. The enormous wave that rolled ahead of him was subsequently transformed into a roaring water dragon. It then swept across the horizon and sent the Hydra King flying.

The Mansion of the Dead's border was soon flooded with water. As the water level rose, countless beasts of the Sea King Navy started to bellow and all the water-controlling sea creatures began to cast their water spells.

“Your Daddy Tong Gua is here!” it was then that a silhouette descended from the sky with his wings slapping the Sea King violently in his face, interrupting his spellcasting.

“Tong Gua!” the Sea King's pupils shrank.

In this Land of Beiqi, he feared Tong Gua the most. But now that he knew Tong Gua's strength was fully predestined, he dreaded him no more. He immediately swirled his trident and sent three rogue waves thrusting upward as they rolled Tong Gua up and smacked him into the water.

“Hmph, paper tiger!” the Sea King snorted as he watched Tong Gua struggle out of the water and flutter his feathers.

“Sea King, you brat, you’re just lucky this time that your daddy Tong Gua was predestined to the Ghost King Intermediate Realm’s strength. Don’t let it get to your head... with three of us fighting you now, you’ll be knocked out in any second!” as Tong Gua spoke, he threw both the Hydra King and the Rock Ghost King a significant glance.

Both of them took the hint and hurried to Tong Gua’s side. All of them had their gaze fixed on the Sea King who was in his Sea God Figure from afar.

“Three of you can’t beat me either!” sneering, blue lights gleamed on top of the Sea King’s trident before he plunged it into the sea.

Within a split second, the seawater in the newly-formed sea realm began to surge vigorously. The turbulent waves slammed on every side and greatly hindered the players as well as the various forces of Beiqi on the battlefield.

On the other hand, the Sea King’s soldiers took the advantage to attack the players. Their attacks became progressively brutal.

“Kill them!” the Rock Ghost King let out a wail, followed by his body rising into the air before it went crashing down on the Sea King’s head with overwhelming momentum.

At the sight of this, the Hydra King dove into the water and began to attack the Sea King from below.

At the same time, Tong Gua flapped his wings and lunged at the Sea King as he kept on screaming, “Tong Gua’s eighteen smashing styles!”

“Sea God!”

A blue armor precipitated out of the seawater and covered the surface of the Sea King’s body. The bluish glow made him appear godly as he shone bright like a diamond.

Attacks from three directions hit on the Sea King’s body simultaneously. Right then, cracks appeared on the Sea God Armor.

“Hmph! Pay for the lives of my dead men with your blood!”

As the Sea King's voice died down, his trident sank into the water. Following that, the seawater rapidly converged as it revolved around the trident. It morphed into a giant water dragon, raising the Sea King up into the sky.

Although this water dragon was made up of seawater, it had a sturdy body. Despite being crushed by the Hydra King, it did not succumb to his attacks and scatter. Instead, it stretched its claw out to pin him down. It then lifted its head and bit the Rock Ghost King who dropped from the sky again, throwing him into the water.

...

On the other side of the battlefield which was now enshrouded in the Sea God's Realm, the players were drifting along in the water. They were once again the weaker party fighting the Sea King Navy.

"Everybody summon your warship! Fuck it! They think they are the only party who can do a naval battle, huh?" Liu Chai yelled in that zone's live chat channel.

Almost instantly, numerous warships began to take shape in the realm.

"A naval battle on land is so fucking exciting! It's time to test out these newly evolved energy cannons. I will only admit defeat if I don't kill a thousand sea creatures!" Lu Zhan from the Slayer Alliance stood in front of the warship discharge outlet and shouted excitedly while holding the energy cannon's handle.

"Come out! Wandering Spirit!"

"Fight! Spirit of Desperation!"

"Growl! Guardian Spirit!"

The spirits of warships in their virtual forms were summoned by the players. They detached from the warships and pounced on the snarling sea creatures from afar.

The players, previously in a disadvantageous state, were now able to compete with the enemies after summoning their warships!

“Hahaha, secret weapons, as expected from a secret weapon! Sea King, looks like your realm is just for show!” the Rock Ghost King laughed jeeringly at the Sea King.

“Go to hell!” the water dragon made by the trident dashed forward to bite him, pushing the Rock Ghost King underwater.

At this moment, innumerable vines emerged from the water and trapped the water dragon before dragging under the water.

“I’ll take care of it. You hold the Sea King down and don’t let him engage in the war. The longer you drag it on, the better it is for us. It seems that these secret weapons can be reborn!”

Hearing this, the Hydra King threw an astonished glance at the player who was standing on the warship amid the battle with the Sea King Navy. He then nodded hard and charged at the Sea King again.

The Sea King’s Ghost King Peak Realm strength was undoubtedly the mightiest. Regardless of the merged attacks from the Hydra King and Tong Gua, the two elites in their Ghost King Intermediate Realm, the Sea King still had them under his thumb. Both of them ended up being continuously attacked by the Sea King.

However, they could not afford to care about all these anymore. They had gambled their every asset the moment they chose to enter the war. If they were to lose this battle, all the forces of Beiqi would be destroyed and the Sea King would fully take over Beiqi.

“Roar!” the severely wounded Hydra King tensed his hideous face up and let out another battle cry as he sprang forward relentlessly.

...

When the battle lasted till the sixth hour, the Sea King started to sense that something was wrong.

Although the number of players in the Beiqi main army force was sharply reduced, a portion of people would rejoin the war from time to time.

This gave him a sense of foreboding.

If this force had sufficient backup, they could have joined the battle at the beginning. What was going on with this bizarre situation where they would come in batches?

Being completely in the dark and not knowing the players' respawn ability, the Sea King's face was ghastly pale.

Nevertheless, he was being kept in check by the Hydra King and Tong Gua. He could not possibly rush forward to aid the battle, and this led to his frustration.

“Brothers, keep fighting! The Sea King Navy is declining in numbers!”

Seeing that the bodies of the Sea King Navy's soldiers were continuously floating to the top of the water as time went on, the players realized that they had regained their advantage and burst into excited cries.

Though this was just a game, the players could feel the passion and excitement rushing through them once again. This was what they couldn't get from the bustling city life as they unleashed their beastly instincts, hence it fueled their impetuosity.

“We'll grill sea creatures for dinner tonight, so let's work harder! If we don't beat the crap out of the Sea King, count this as our failure, the Fourth Disaster Army's failure!”

“Nothing can stop us today. Since you guys are here, don't leave! As the heir of Beiqi, I would like to welcome you warmly! So, take that!”

“Haha, we're getting the upper hand now! Kill them! Push forward!”

...

The tide was turning in their favor.

As the flocks of support arrived, their strength gradually expanded. The Specter Warships that had cost them millions of soul coins to cultivate were currently repaying the players with their artillery fire and powerful Warship Guardian Spirits.

Seeing the light of victory at last, the players got more exhilarated as they fought. On the contrary, the Sea King Navy began to get exhausted in the incessant war and slowly, their fatigue showed.

“Go away!” the Sea King knocked the Hydra King down with a punch. He tried to rush to their rescue, but the Hydra King threw himself at him again with his eyes gleaming with determination. Constraining him tightly, he prevented him from heading to the main battlefield.

As he sent the Hydra King sprawling with another punch, the Sea King knew he could not continue fighting like this. The constant support of Beiqi’s new backup forces was beyond his comprehension. If this went on, his side would definitely suffer a disastrous loss.

This consequence could be so serious to the point that he might lose ground and get chased out of the Void Ocean completely.

After all, there were many forces outside the Void Ocean keeping their eyes on him, so he could not afford to lose.

“Retreat!” the Sea King growled unwillingly to the sky. As his words rang out, the Sea God’s Realm began to dissipate.

“Dumbass, don’t just come and go as you please, stay right here!”

“Wanna go? Leave your head!”

“Fuck you! You killed me twice! Let me kill you just once before you go!”

...

Shouting excitedly, the foolish thought of letting the dying foes go never once crossed their minds as all of them were thinking of just one thing right now, “Fuck!”

Meanwhile on the Sea King’s side, the Rock Ghost King leaped out of the water and landed on the Sea King after the Hydra King was sent flying once again.

“Change... give him to me!”

The Hydra King nodded tiredly and dove into the water to fight the water dragon.

Having fought to this point, the Rock Ghost King could clearly see that the new forces of Beiqi wanted to wipe out the entire Sea King Navy.

They never had this notion even when Lu Yan was here. Seeing the players who held sway over their enemy and counter-attacked crazily, the fire of passion within the Rock Ghost King was lit up again.

Annihilate the Sea King Navy! It was something that he did not even dare to dream of back then, but now everything seemed to be steering toward the impossible.

The memory of being oppressed by the Sea King after Lu Yan disappeared was still fresh in his mind. All the rage erupted at this moment and was converted into his power to battle.

He began to throw himself around the Sea King at the risk of his life and restricted him from leaving. The way he did it with all his might showcased a madness peculiar to the players!

With the help of the Rock Ghost King and other Ghost Kings, the players continued to widen their strength and fought on bravely. Their aggressive attacks somehow made the Sea King Navy tremble.

The enduring battle, exhaustion, and the ceaseless death of their comrades had taken a toll on their mental health. The Sea King Navy was now certain

to be at a complete disadvantage.

They were now on the horns of a dilemma. Just as the Sea King ran out of ideas, a black silhouette appeared from the East. Looking at the Sea King, he then shifted his gaze to the Cliffs of Desperation. A tinge of perseverance shone in his eyes as he pressed his hands downward.

A giant veil of black light swept across the entire area like a shock wave, engulfing the battlefield.

What happened next stunned everyone.

Those floating bodies of the Sea King Navy soldiers in the Sea God's Realm suddenly moved. In the next second, they stood up and charged toward the forces of Beiqi fearlessly.

Under the control of Mu Zhiguang, the Sea King Navy's dead soldiers were infected by death energy and became zombie fighters! Their transformation once again helped the Sea King Navy to even up the odds of the battle

This time, the players could also feel how troublesome this was.

It was because these zombie fighters could be respawned under this black light even if they were killed.

Unless they were completely smashed into pieces, they could still attack the players even with a single arm left.

“Dumbass! Report the bug, and what an overwhelming respawning bug this is!”

“What the heck is this? Cheating, darn him!”

“Who's that up there who fucking came straight away with the bug?”

“Motherfucker, come down if you dare. I promise I won't fucking kill you!”

...



Staring at Mu Zhiguang who was high up in the sky, the players could hardly hold back their curses.

Right now in the left region of the battlefield, Hu He was fighting his way out through the enemy with his strengthened zombie spirit, Cha Na.

In this battlefield where everyone was fighting against the enemy, Hu He was forgiven by other players despite being the public enemy of the whole server. The players around him no longer attacked him when they saw him fighting tooth and nail. In fact, some of them even shielded him from attacks.

Hu He had also met the bounty couple that he feared the most, but they spared him as well.

Being deeply touched, Hu He felt that his name could finally be cleared after this battle and he would never have to hide himself like a street rat anymore.

“Hu He, your zombie soul is very strong. Let it follow our fighters to the front line later,” a guild leader shouted at Hu He.

“Okay, no problem!” this acknowledgement caused tears to well up in his eyes.

Is this friendship? It’s been such a long time!

Hu He’s emotion rose under such a circumstance as he put his heart and soul into the battle.

Just then, Mu Zhiguang’s Aura of Death enveloped the land and the Sea King Navy soldiers respawned as zombies.

While the players were cursing Mu Zhiguang, they could not help but scan him with their analyzing ability.

[Mu Zhiguang (Ghost Emperor Peak)]:

Character Information: He was the previous king of the Mu Te Sea Nation and his people fell under the invasion of the Death Clan. Since then, he aspired to seek revenge by guarding the abyss under the ocean in order to restrain the Death Clan. He was later awakened by player Hu He and returned to the Void Ocean with the determination to assist the Sea King in rebuilding the Mu Te Sea Nation.

Character State: Handicapped (Absence of right arm).

When the players saw the Analysis Menu of Mu Zhiguang, they were all dumbfounded.

Especially for those who fought in the same zone together with Hu He, their intentions to forgive Hu He collapsed right away.

Hu He raised his head with awkwardness written all over his face.

“Believe it or not, this really had nothing to do with me. I just took a stroll down there and then he suddenly woke up. I think the analysis has a bug!” Hu He tried to explain with a solemn expression as he looked around.

“Why don’t you just say that the analysis menu is slandering you!” a cute girl beside Hu He pointed her sword angrily at him.

“Fuck us for believing you! Again? We were already winning, you fool!”

“Malignant player, what a fucking malignant player! We tried so hard and were just a step away from defeating the Sea King, yet you created such a super big boss. Let me beat the shit out of you!”

“Hu He, leave the game and get lost! Fuck your ancestors!”

...

The same went for the other parts of the battlefield with scoldings of Hu He filling every corner. This malignant player had left them speechless. He was such a troublemaker! Was he trying to take down the entire legion of players before he called it quits and settled down?

# Chapter 202 - The Strongest! The Strongest!

Chapter 202: The Strongest! The Strongest!

At that moment, Hu He, who was on the verge of clearing his name, was turned into public enemy number one once again.

Hu He was so desperate that he would die for a chance to explain himself, yet he could not think of anything to say. All he could do was look around him pitifully.

The players did not give him a second chance at all this round. They proceeded to activate their hostile mode and encircled him.

“My dear brothers, this is the time for us to unite and fight the intruders, you can’t kill me!” Hu He cried while pulling a long face.

“I’m afraid that we would still have uncertainties if you were to stay. You’re the biggest enemy of all!”

“I won’t be at ease without killing you, so you must die!”

“Go to hell, you malignant player. From today onward, we’ll be enemies for life!”

...

Amidst the shoutings of the crossed players, a wave of despair washed over Hu He. After being slashed with multiple swords, he morphed into a puff of black smoke and logged out of the game.

Back in the outside world.

Hu He's gaming pod slowly opened, yet he did not get out. He remained lying in his pod, weeping quietly.

It was as if fate was playing games with him. Just as he was about to clear his name, he was stabbed brutally in the back while twisting him around like a finger puppet.

It was just like a backstabbing truth that would appear behind him anytime; it was utterly despairing!

Does my future only hold darkness?

He rolled himself into a ball and sobbed.

...

Beiqi, at the border of the Mansion of the Dead.

The battle switched sides again due to Mu Zhiguang's appearance.

The players' respawning advantage was offset by the undead army they had. Currently, the players' factions have yet to overpower the Sea King Navy's strength, so the arrival of the zombie soldiers made the battle more arduous for them.

Seeing Mu Zhiguang in action, the Sea King burst into laughter because he knew there was no longer any doubt about the outcome of this battle. The Sea King Navy will be victorious!

From what the Sea King remembered, Mu Zhiguang once fought the Death Clan all on his own. He had the strength of an army and this gave the Sea King great confidence.

"Soldiers, kill! Let's take Beiqi down today!" the Sea King who initially gave the order to retreat once again called out for the soldiers to keep on fighting.

Upon seeing such a sight, the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King's hearts hammered hard against their chests. They thought they were only up against

the Sea King Navy in this battle. However in this round, a Ghost Emperor Realm Elite had appeared unexpectedly.

This deflated their high spirits that they had brought with them to battle.

This was because they knew that there was no way they could ever defeat a Ghost Emperor Realm Elite. They were destined to lose the battle the moment Mu Zhiguang arrived.

As he looked at Beiqi's combined forces at the mercy of the Sea King Navy and the zombies, the Rock Ghost King put on a melancholic smile.

History is indeed the best verification. No one can stay at the top forever. Someday I will meet my end as well. Little did I know that day would come so soon.

“Old buddy, let's battle till the end! Even if we die, we will die fighting!” said the weakened Hydra King as he turned to look at him.

“This is our last fight! Let's make it a great one!” the Rock Ghost King hollered to the sky in reply and the veins that were tangling around him danced like crazy.

Just when the two great Ghost Kings thought that there was no turning back from the battle, an ancient war song rang from far away.

“Thump! Thump! Thump!”

It was a mixture of heavy footsteps, drawn out melodies, and rhythmic sounds of weapons knocking on shields.

An earthy yellow army marched slowly from the west.

“What should be done to the ones who sullied His Majesty's pride?” Lie Shan, who was walking in the front, shouted at the top of his lungs.

“Kill!” the warriors of the Earth Breaking Clan growled in unison.

“How about the ones who invaded our Land of Beiqi!?”

“Kill!”

“The enemy is standing right before us, let us obey His Majesty’s orders and chase the intruders away!”

“Roar!” all the warriors from the Earth Breaking Clan yelled in excitement.

“Go, my children. Prove your loyalty to His Majesty!”

After Lie Shan said this, the Earth Breaking Clan’s warriors started to run. They picked up their speed, and like a yellowish sandstorm, they charged murderously into the battlefield!

“The Ancient Earth Breaking Clan!” the pupils of the high-flying Mu Zhiguang shrunk.

From afar, the Sea King, the Rock Ghost King, and the others were all astounded.

This clan which had never shown themselves to the world before had actually appeared at that very moment.

...

Three hours ago, at the Earth Breaking Clan’s base.

Sun Qi the dog, who had just rushed back from the Cliffs of Desperation, handed the expired Beiqi Royal Decree he received from deceiving the white-haired man to Gu Yu.

This was the reason why Gu Yu had asked him to visit the cliffs.

When he saw that the players were having the lower hand through the live stream, Gu Yu knew that even if he had interfered, he would not be able to save them. Thus, he thought of lending the strength of the Earth Breaking Clan.

To the Earth Breaking Clan, the King of Beiqi had never left them. Although Gu Yu and Sun Qi knew that the decree had long expired, it still

proved useful to the Earth Breaking Clan.

When Gu Yu took out the decree, even Lie Shan, the Ghost Emperor Realm Elite, got down on his knees before it.

Gu Yu had borrowed the supremacy of the Beiqi Royal Decree, expressing that by the order of the King of Beiqi, he was required to bring in the Earth Breaking Clan to join the battle to protect the Land of Beiqi.

The Beiqi Royal Decree was unique to the King of Beiqi, so Lie Shan did not suspect Gu Yu. He obeyed the order right away and hurriedly maneuvered his Earth Breaking Clan to take part.

...

The Ancient Earth Breaking Clan. Even their name could put fear in the mightiest elites. The strength they portrayed could even send shivers down the Sea King's spine.

The sky was covered in yellow dust as rock giants emerged one after the other on the battlefield. Each of them had combat powers that were almost on par with a Ghost Commander's, and most of the people from the clan had the strength of a Ghost General Level. Also, the amount of people among them who had achieved the battling power of a Ghost King Level was a terrifying number of eight.

Once this monstrous ancient army appeared on the battlefield, the tides seemed to have completely turned again.

No matter how resilient the undead army was, they would only be torn to pieces when going against the strongest of the strong.

Gu Yu cackled when he saw the scene unfold before him. Sun Qi was hopping in excitement next to him.

In the sky, Mu Zhiguang's expression darkened. He clenched his teeth and transformed into a black flow of light, falling from the sky. He wanted to

dash toward the Earth Breaking Clan, but before he could even touch the ground, he was blocked by someone.

“Boom!”

Two silhouettes fell backward at the same time!

After catching his balance, Mu Zhiguang glared at Lie Shan coldly.

“Piss off, you’re not my enemy!”

“Hahaha, you sure think highly of yourself. You’re just a clansman from the Mu Te Sea Nation, how dare you invade the Land of Beiqi! Did you really forget how your clan’s king was defeated by the King of Beiqi?” Lie Shan looked at Mu Zhiguang with a jeering expression.

Hearing this, Mu Zhiguang’s eyes became colder and colder. He transformed into the black light again and struck at Lie Shan.

“Earth!” as Lie Shan yelled furiously, the earth below his feet began to crack and a muddy-yellowish energy was drawn up continuously from the earth.

Boom!

The earth where Lie Shan and Mu Zhiguang collided sank instantly. All the players and the Sea King Navy around them were flung away and shredded into dust.

“Impossible! How could you have such strength!?” after fighting hand-to-hand, Mu Zhiguang turned back, his face full of terror.

This was because Lie Shan’s strength was evenly matched to him. From his standpoint, this was impossible, since he himself was a Ghost Emperor Realm Elite!

“Haven’t you heard? In ancient Beiqi, every competitor of the King of Beiqi had the strength of a Ghost Emperor Peak Realm! And I am one of



them!” Lie Shan slowly raised his head after sustaining the heavy impact. He stared at Mu Zhiguang, a smile forming on his lips.

“Every single one of them are Ghost Emperors Peak Realms!?” Mu Zhiguang was horrified, he thought he had heard wrongly.

“Since His Majesty has ordered me to fight, the seal shall be broken!” Lie Shan hammered his arms onto the ground as he spoke.

The cracks were like spiderwebs spreading all across the earth as large amounts of muddy-yellowish energy flooded into Lie Shan’s body.

Crack!

A silvery sound rang as Lie Shan held out his arms with a face full of contentment, “Oh, how I miss this strength!”

“I’ll make you take back your words this instant, you are no match for me!”

Mu Zhiguang’s face turned gloomy upon hearing this. His hand grasped below him and uncountable black lines of energy shot in Lie Shan’s direction.

Each of these lines carried a strong sense of death. Even when the earth came into contact with them, black holes were formed from the corrosion.

Soon, Death Threads tangled around Lie Shan, restricting him in place.

The corrosive energy began to seep into Lie Shan’s body.

However, Lie Shan did not move an inch. He proceeded to raise his right foot and stomped it down hard. All of a sudden, he extended his arms out, snapping the twines of death.

After glancing at Mu Zhiguang, Lie Shan stomped his foot again, shaking and wobbling the earth.

“You’ve used one of your chances, you have two left. Unleash your strongest technique!”

Lie Shan's provocative words successfully enraged Mu Zhiguang to his core. On his forehead, a Death Halo engraved with runes was formed. Then, this halo enlarged ferociously, dashed toward Lie Shan, and finally stopped before floating above his head.

Boom!

A black energy pole surrounded by black lightning streaks struck Lie Shan from above.

The death energy poured out by this black halo was so lethal that other players and creatures who touched its remnant waves would disintegrate into dust in mere seconds.

Under the impact of such energy, worried expressions started to show on the players' faces.

Although they had never met the Earth Breaking Clan, they were still their comrades because they had taken part in the battle. Naturally, they would hope for them to be victorious.

After a minute of blasting by the destructive death rays, the halo shrunk gradually and flew back to Mu Zhiguang's forehead.

When the smoke dissipated, the people noticed that a bottomless hole had formed in the earth. Lie Shan was nowhere to be found. No one knew if he had fallen into the hole or had turned into dust.

Just as the crowd was still making up theories, a silhouette levitated from the hole and landed by one side.

As he dusted away the debris that covered him, Lie Shan looked up with a smile again.

“Not bad this time, but if you truly want to inflict injuries on me, try a little harder!”

Who on earth is this monster!?

It was not only Mu Zhiguang that stood stupefied, but the Sea King, the Rock Ghost King, and the others were all stunned, too.

Everyone, including the Sea King, thought they could not hold on for long when the death ray shone. However, not only did the leader of the Earth Breaking Clan sustain all damages, he was not injured one bit. This left everyone feeling appalled.

“How did you do that?” Mu Zhiguang asked coldly.

“The Earth Breaking Clan are the best at defense. If you’ve never heard this before, you might want to ask your ancestors from the Mu Te Sea Nation, perhaps in return, they’ll tell you... not to mess with me!”

After he had said those final five words, Lie Shan stomped the ground fiercely once again. The land quaked horribly and both armies who were fighting toppled to the ground.

“I know, I know who he is... he is the Rock! He’s the man who was given the name ‘Rock’!” the Rock Ghost King began to cry out in alarm.

“What do you mean, aren’t you the Rock?” the Hydra King turned and looked at him, flabbergasted.

“That’s because my territory is on the rocks, so I’m called the Rock Ghost King. I’ve once read the history of the North Rocks on an inscription located in the depths of the North Rocks. The origin of this name had relations to the largest forces that had entrenched themselves in the northern area. This was because the strongest king of the force was given the name ‘Invincible Rock’ in the outside world. Perhaps that person is him!”

As if Lie Shan heard all that the Rock Ghost King had said, he turned to him and grinned.

“Junior, you’re absolutely right. The North Rocks were named after me!”

Seeing the astonished eyes of the crowd, Lie Shan looked at Mu Zhiguang again.

“If I take action this instant, you’ll be left with no more chances... so last chance, show me the best you can!”

Looking at the grave expression on Mu Zhiguang’s face, Lie Shan slowly crossed his arms over his head. He was in a defensive position.

Just as everyone held their breaths to see if Mu Zhiguang’s last move could inflict damage on Lie Shan, a silhouette suddenly appeared behind Lie Shan. With a tight slap across his face, Lie Shan fell to the floor.

Lie Shan was taken aback. He snapped his head back, only to see more slaps coming.

Whack! Whack! Whack!

“The strongest! The strongest! Watch as I kill you myself, the strongest!”

“Your Majesty, why are you hitting me, please stop!” Lie Shan rolled on the ground while covering his head.

“You still don’t know where you went wrong? If I don’t teach you a good lesson today, I’ll regret it for the rest of my life!” the more he thought about it, the more furious the white-haired man became. He rolled up his sleeves and started to punch and kick Lie Shan on the ground.

The scene that had unfolded before everyone’s eyes left them stunned. The two armies had even forgotten that they had a battle to fight. They all stared at Lie Shan who was magnificent and boastful just a second before, but was now crouching like a child getting smacked.

# Chapter 203 - Bei Li'S True Form

## Chapter 203: Bei Li's True Form

At that moment, the white-haired old man's figure remained blurry, but Lu Wu could see his appearance clearly behind the scenes with the help of the artifact.

It was the white-haired old man who lived halfway up the Cliffs of Desperation.

Lu Wu finally realized that the predictions he had made were correct. This man was the first King of Beiqi, North Sea himself.

Looking at the white-haired old man, a sense of familiarity arose from within Lu Wu. He felt as if he had met this person before.

After going through his training, Lu Wu's soul had grown stronger, making these kinds of feelings obscure to him. There seemed to be some kind of connection between their souls.

Lu Wu was puzzled by this. Logically thinking, his ancestor should be Lu Yan. Not to mention that that man had left his traces all over the Land of Beiqi, and this was an actual fact. However, why would he feel this way when it came to North Sea, a man who had barely anything to do with him?

"Do I know him?" Lu Wu turned his head swiftly to look at Bei Li.

Bei Li immediately started to act adorable and awkward, as if totally clueless about who she was, where she was, and why she was there.

"Little Li!" Lu Wu threw himself at Bei Li and raised his paws.

"Is it alright if my answer is that I don't know?" Bei Li squeaked.

"Not a chance!" Lu Wu rolled his eyes at her.

“Okay... basically, he’s not your enemy. You two are closely related, but not biologically!”

“What do you mean? Could it be that he was my lover from a previous life?” fear surfaced in Lu Wu’s eyes.

Bei Li blushed with shame and could not help but to swing her hand and slap Lu Wu’s head.

“It’s not what you think, what were you actually thinking? He was personally trained by you...”

As she went on, Bei Li’s voice turned into a soft whisper. Lu Wu had his ear right in front of her mouth, his curiosity beginning to overflow.

“Say it... what do you mean by trained by me? Tell me clearly!” Lu Wu could not wait anymore.

“I won’t say it!”

“I’m gonna have to fight you if you keep this up!” Lu Wu showed his paw.

“Over my dead body!”

“I’ll cut down on your snacks by half!”

“Okay, I’ll talk!”

Bei Li sadly hung her head low.

“Spill, what does this old man have to do with me!?” Lu Wu questioned her in a pretentious manner.

“He’s the heir that you’ve trained yourself!” Bei Li puffed up her mouth, her face fuming.

“Heir? Isn’t he the first King of Beiqi? And he’s going to continue my legacy as the next King of Beiqi?” Lu Wu was utterly dumbfounded.

Bei Li looked up, stared at Lu Wu seriously and said, “Wu, do you still remember the girl who called herself Li?”

“Yes, she’s strong, she even sealed the Demonic God away!” Lu Wu nodded.

“Her real name was Bei Li! She was the elite of the Beiqi Divine Clan and the founder of the Land of Beiqi!”

Bei Li’s words left Lu Wu completely shocked. Then, he showed an expression as if he expected this.

“That girl in white was really you!”

“I already told you that she wasn’t me, but you must be mentally prepared for what I’m about to tell you next...”

Lu Wu nodded, although his heart was jumping up and down, feeling as if it was not going to be good news.

“The elite of the Beiqi Divine Clan, Bei Li, was you. And who you are now is her present form after countless rounds of reincarnation!”

Lu Wu’s cat eyes widened, his body leaning backward from the surprise.

“Yes, you heard it right. You were once Bei Li, the elite of the Beiqi Divine Clan!”

Splat!

Lu Wu fell to the floor.

“What about Lu Yan? Who was he? Was he my reincarnated form, too? Also, why did I choose to reincarnate if I was so strong? Moreover, if I’m Bei Li, then who are you?”

Bei Li picked Lu Wu up in her arms.

“Lu Wu was the old ancestor from your reincarnation. As I have mentioned before, you and I, we both have a very complicated relationship. After you left, I changed my name to Bei Li, and about my identity...”

As she spoke, Bei Li smiled, her eyes disappearing in squints, “You wouldn’t wish to experience the pain back then, right?”

Lu Wu shook his head without hesitation. Having experienced that feeling once, he never wanted to try it again. The agony from within his soul was far worse than killing him.

“That’s right, so you should focus on improving your strength as fast as you can. Follow your thoughts and take one step at a time. Now, your soul has achieved Ghost Commander Intermediate Realm. Just have a bit more patience and everything will reveal itself in the future!”

“Okay then!”

At that moment, Lu Wu was still shocked and had yet to recover from it.

Little did he know that the one who suppressed the Demonic God was himself, and the white-haired old man was his heir that he had trained.

Right now, his mind started to run wild, but his train of thoughts gradually became clearer.

If the goddess in white was really him, then the order for the white-haired old man to suppress the Demonic God had obviously come from him.

But what was I really conspiring? Could it be that I had given the order for the white-haired old man to conceal himself, too?

The more Lu Wu thought, the more dumbfounded he was.

But hey, I was so cool back then! Why did I have to be a girl!?

Lu Wu stomped on the floor in frustration!

...



After enduring the white-haired old man's ruthless beating, Lie Shan's tears dried up.

I only followed his orders obediently to leave the Barren Grassland and go into battle. Where did I go wrong?

Was it because I was too cocky when I granted three moves to the opponent before I took action, and this has enraged His Majesty?

The more he thought about it, the more he felt that this was the reason behind it. Lie Shan raised his head.

“Your Majesty, I was wrong, I shouldn't have acted cocky, I shouldn't have granted the opponent three moves!”

The white-haired old man glared at him, “You still don't fucking know what you did wrong!”

Seeing that the white-haired old man was about to hit him again, Lie Shan habitually pulled himself back and lied down on the ground.

Nevertheless, the white-haired old man did not hit him this time, but only said, “Since you're here, finish your business first before meeting me at the Cliffs of Desperation. I'll be waiting!”

After he was done talking, the white-haired old man glared at Mu Zhiguang before disappearing on the spot.

...

Seeing the white-haired old man leave, Lie Shan's heart was in despair. Deep down he knew that there would only be bad news if he went and looked for him.

Even until now, Lie Shan was still unsure about what he had done wrong.

He then slowly picked himself up. His gaze once again fell on Mu Zhiguang, who was hovering in the sky.

“Tsk! It’s all your fault for making me receive a beating from that old man just now, you should have a taste of it, too!”

This time, Lie Shan did not mention a word regarding his last move. He banged both his fists on the ground as rusty yellow energy gushed into his body, making him twinkle in golden light.

Mu Zhiguang was aware that Lie Shan was about to make his move. Thus, he held a straight face as the Death Halo appeared once more on his forehead.

The halo shot up in the air and enlarged, its shine complementing the black light that enveloped the world. A black, scaly, enormous arm slowly emerged out from this halo and dashed toward Lie Shan.

“So you finally grasped the basics of the Law of Death? Not bad!” Lie Shan flashed a cunning smile and his figure disappeared. Then, a glimmering gigantic golden hammer morphed in his hand, which he swung heavily toward the enormous hand.

Boom!

The impact from the collision tore a crack in space and time.

A roaring current swept past as pebbles on the ground shot in every direction like bullets due to the titanic shockwave that was brought upon by it, causing tons of creatures beneath them to be caught in the crossfire.

As he blocked the oppression from the enormous black hand, the golden hammer in Lie Shan’s hand burst out in rays of light, which only got more and more blinding.

“Open!” with an angry growl from Lie Shan, the giant hammer thrust upward.

Under such enormous force, the black gigantic hand began to slightly back off and was forced to re-enter the halo. Lie Shan then lifted the large golden hammer before smashing it onto the black aura.

Crack!

The Aura of Death enveloping the world instantly broke and the zombie fighters of the Sea King Navy fell flat.

“Today, anyone who dares to invade my beloved Beiqi will not leave. Kill them all!”

With Lie Shan’s words, the warriors of the Earth Breaking Clan charged at the Sea King Navy once again.

The players also quickly followed up and assembled, launching an attack on the Sea King Navy alongside the army of the Earth Breaking Clan.

The tables in this fight had turned so many times. After a few ups and downs, even the experienced fighters, the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King had drawn a blank.

They didn’t dare say if they would surely win this round. After all, what if there was another stronger party hiding behind the scenes?

However, the Sea King knew that his strongest trump card was Mu Zhiguang. Nonetheless, judging from how they fought, it was clear that Mu Zhiguang was not someone who could go against the leader of the Earth Breaking Clan, so he knew he had already lost.

Looking at the vast land covered with the bodies of fallen soldiers, the Sea King understood that his position as the overlord of the Void Ocean was no longer guaranteed.

“I will not resign myself to this!”

There was a malicious look on the Sea King’s face. He threw himself at the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King fiercely as the hopelessness that weighed on him turned into his last hysterical fight.

# Chapter 204 - The Final Curtain

## Chapter 204: The Final Curtain

After the white-haired old man disappeared, the battle erupted once again.

The Sea King was fighting against the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King while Lie Shan and Mu Zhiguang continued their battle of the strongest.

Facing such a strong opponent like Lie Shan, Mu Zhiguang did not dare to take any risks. He began to catalyze the black halo and a humongous ugly beast peeked out from within.

“Dark Sky Beast!” seeing that large creature, excitement flashed through Lie Shan’s eyes.

“Have a taste of my hammer!” as the Dark Sky Beast pressed toward him, Lie Shan raised his battle hammer and was prepared to clash directly with him.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

With each clash, lightning boomed in the sky and space was stirred by the strong force. Ruptures appeared occasionally, but they were repaired immediately.

After years of inactivity, Lie Shan’s blood boiled with an intense passion. He had finally met a worthy rival. Yelling with euphoria, his large hammer smashed into the Dark Sky Beast’s huge claws again.

“Open!”

After smashing away the Dark Sky Beast’s huge claws, Lie Shan darted closer and grabbed the giant Dark Sky Beast’s finger with his left hand. The muscles and veins on his body popped and he flung his hammer backwards

as he moved along swiftly. Then, he utilized this force to throw the Dark Sky Beast onto the ground.

Boom!

Dust flew, the earth cracked, and a massive pit appeared.

“Nice!” Lie Shan cackled loudly. With his battle hammer raised high, he sprinted downward while yellow gusts of smoke steamed on the surface of his body. When he struck the Dark Sky Beast with his hammer once again, it was like a high magnitude earthquake. The land rumbled and was parted into pieces.

A deep imprint of a hammer was left on the Dark Sky Beast’s back.

Stepping on the Dark Sky Beast’s back, Lie Shan looked upward to Mu Zhiguang, whose face was pale.

“You think you can invade Beiqi with this kind of strength? You should know that that kid Frozen, that fool Da Huo, and the rest haven’t even arrived, and you can’t even defeat me. You’re just here as a joke, right?” Lie Shan could not help but sneer at him with a smile.

To Lie Shan now, no matter how many newbies Beiqi had, those old forces were still the same, so he thought Mu Zhiguang overestimated himself.

Watching the extremely arrogant Lie Shan, memories appeared in Mu Zhiguang’s head.

Back then, many of the clan’s people stayed beside the dying king of the clan, promising him that the legacy of the Mu Te Sea Nation would go on.

However, the king of the clan gave them a warning before he died.

If the Mu Te Sea Nation plans to enlarge their territory in the future, they must never touch the Land of Beiqi. This is because that is a forbidden and untouchable land, a land where numerous elites had fought and killed!

Mu Zhiguang almost forgot this memory.

According to what Lie Shan said, every competitor for the King of Beiqi in ancient Beiqi were Ghost Emperor Peak Level Elites. Now, Mu Zhiguang finally knew why the old king of the clan gave the clan this warning before he passed away.

Just then, Mu Zhiguang looked at the Sea King and his eyes sparkled with affection.

A forbidden land? A land of massacre? So what? I have been fighting against the world my whole life. I am the pride of the Mu Te Sea Nation! I shall protect the glory of our clan!

“O’ Ruler of Death, I am willing to sacrifice my dying body for the power of the supreme Law of Death...”

Mu Zhiguang mumbled lightly and the death halo began to shiver. Black light flowed within it, as if they were answering Mu Zhiguang.

Upon feeling the struggles of the Dark Sky Beast to break free, Lie Shan sank down in order to suppress it. Then, he looked at Mu Zhiguang with hope in his eyes.

“Don’t let me down!”

“I won’t!” Mu Zhiguang replied coldly. His pupils suddenly turned black, his black robes flew without wind blowing and his body was covered in black flames.

“Sacrificing yourself, are you planning on going all in?” Lie Shan had yet to make a move, but he asked with anticipation.

Mu Zhiguang did not answer. He raised his hand to point at the halo. Instantly, a black light appeared from within and quickly rushed into his body.

Lines of the Death Curse floated on the surface of Mu Zhiguang’s body, glowing with a dark black gloss.

Roar!

Mu Zhiguang started to growl in pain. He opened his mouth and sucked in the direction of the Dark Sky Beast. The Dark Sky Beast also began to shriek in agony, its body disintegrating, turning into black smoke before flowing into Mu Zhiguang's mouth.

After swallowing the Dark Sky Beast whole, Mu Zhiguang's body began to swell and contort. Black scales grew on his skin and sharp black claws grew from his hands. In a matter of a few seconds, he transformed into a terrifying monster of around 30 feet tall.

“Wow, looking all intimidating now, are you? Come at me!” Lie Shan laughed, hoisting the battle hammer onto his shoulder.

Roar!

Mu Zhiguang's figure vanished into thin air before suddenly reappearing in front of Lie Shan. He then slammed his huge, pointy claws down.

Crack!

As the claw and hammer collided, a rupture in space and time was formed. It expanded instantly and the bent timespace continuum tore up every creature it touched into nothing.

Lie Shan was taken aback by Mu Zhiguang's power, but this only fueled the fire burning within him. He lifted his battle hammer again and made a hard swing directly onto Mu Zhiguang's head.

The hammer landed firmly on Mu Zhiguang's head, causing him to fly out. When he stood up again, there was a dent on Mu Zhiguang's head which was quickly dissipating.

Roar!

The uninjured Mu Zhiguang transformed into a flashing light again, charging toward Lie Shan.

“Ha, good one!”

The two silhouettes collided once more.

The earth continued to crack from the huge force of the collision. Moreover, the close combat techniques showcased in their fight made the other forces around them suffer. The remnant energy waves were too strong, making it unbearable even for Ghost Kings like the Rock Ghost King.

From those who were watching from the outer world, these two silhouettes were too fast. All that could be made out were just black and yellow lights running into each other.

Currently, Lu Wu was lying in Bei Li's arms, focusing attentively on the battle of the two Ghost Emperor Peak Level Elites.

Before him was a data menu added up by the artifact.

These numbers caused Lu Wu to be truly stunned.

In just a mere second, more than 10,000 collisions had occurred between them. To top it off, an average of more than 300 close combat techniques were performed per minute.

Nonetheless, this was not the most frightening fact. After their collisions were digitized by the artifact, the health bars that reflected their health conditions appeared on their bodies.

With every collision, their health would drop.

However, Mu Zhiguang was in the state of Death Curse and had triggered a health revival feature. Thus, no matter how much health he lost, it would recharge instantly.

On the other hand, a similar phenomenon was happening to Lie Shan. Every time he was injured, a pure strength of the earth would emerge from the ground, healing all his wounds.

As this battle grew fiercer, all other forces stopped fighting and scattered to find shelter.



At this point, the battle was starting to affect other parts of the world.

The constantly splitting space and time caused a sudden change in heaven and earth. One moment it was bright, then in another second, it turned dark. The skies howled with strong winds and wept with rain, then all of a sudden, the sun would return again to clear skies.

After another half an hour of battle, not only were there no signs of stopping, Lu Wu realized that both their body's statistics were still increasing.

A black line fell from the black halo in the sky, connecting itself to Mu Zhiguang. Lie Shan was still summoning the strength of the earth to support himself in maintaining his full power.

Luckily, the battle was happening at the border. If it had been at the Mansion of the Dead, they would all be done for. Lu Wu was mentally rejoicing.

The two silhouettes sped up in the lasting battle, their speeds completely overcoming the sound barrier. The outer world could only hear delayed explosions coming from all directions, with no head nor tail of their origins.

“Bow down!” With a deafening holler that shattered the world, a gigantic golden battle hammer came into sight. Then, it plummeted right smack on to Mu Zhiguang's body.

Boom!

A blinding white light changed the world into daytime.

A mushroom cloud rose from the borders of the Mansion of the Dead.

“Arghh, I'm blind! Is this some sort of fucking atomic bomb!?”

“Dammit, can the two of you who are fighting with cheat codes sympathize with us players? This is too much!”

“Am I dead? Why did the world turn white!”

“Totally amazed! The battle between the Demonic God and Hiderigami was scary enough, but I think this battle is way cooler. I’m watching from so far away and yet my health bar is still going crazy. It can’t go on like this, I gotta run further away.”

“Whoa, I’m so glad that I could play till this stage in this life!”

“We can’t afford to provoke the gods while they are battling, let’s run!”

...

This strike caused chaos among the players as they scattered to retreat to safe areas farther away.

The tree spirits, wolves, mythical snakes, and other creatures, too, dug into the earth and hid.

A few moments later, everything returned to silence.

What followed was a magnificent shock wave that travelled three times the speed of sound. Everything outside was cut by the pebbles which were flung out, and no players were spared from the fatal barrage of the bullet-like pebbles raining down on them.

Aside from the Earth Breaking Clan who were protected by the rock giants and some Beiqi forces that hid underground, all of the players and the Sea King Navy were wiped out simultaneously.

A bead of cold sweat fell from Lu Wu’s forehead when he saw this.

This is so terrifying. If these two came to the real world, they would be walking nuclear weapons.

As a heavy hammer dropped down, Mu Zhiguang’s health decreased by half on the menu.

However, before he could recover, Lie Shan hurled down another strike with his hammer.

The roaring shockwaves swept across the land once more.

When the storm ended, Lu Wu noticed Mu Zhiguang lying half-dead on the ground, his cursed body plastered with cracks.

“This is the end. You are an elite, but because you are an invader, you must die!” Lie Shan said while heaving his golden battle hammer up.

Mu Zhiguang opened his eyes weakly, his eyes full of resentment as he looked at Lie Shan.

Once, he was called the black sheep of the Mu Te Sea Nation because he possessed the power of death.

However, there was also a time he was called the hope of the clan, ironically for the same reason.

One thing never changed.

He was the strongest genius in the history of the Mu Te Sea Nation!

Moments before he passed away, Mu Zhiguang had an epiphany.

The world is big, hence it's expected that there are still many geniuses stronger than me.

He slowly closed his eyes, but when the huge hammer was about to fall on him, Mu Zhiguang suddenly opened his eyes and grabbed toward the direction of the Sea King.

The death halo in the sky slipped down, covering the Sea King, who was still stunned. Then it quickly glided toward the Void Ocean letting the Sea King escape.

Lie Shan was shocked. He tried to stop it, but it was too late.

As he witnessed the disappearance of the death halo, Lie Shan's anger grew. He had failed to fulfill the King of Beiqi's order to kill all invaders.

As he growled furiously, the battle hammer came crashing down!

In his moment of death, Mu Zhiguang's eyes were only filled with relief.

He was exhausted. He had sacrificed everything and given his all for his clan. It was time for a well-deserved break.

Golden lights erupted and everything was torn by a golden glow...

...

“You're the only one left from the Mu Te Sea Nation... there's no need to fight anymore, just promise me you'll make it out alive!”

Inside the halo, the Sea King clenched his teeth and listened to Mu Zhiguang's last words for him.

His big brother had once sacrificed his freedom for his clan. This time, he had given his life up for the Sea King. This caused his heart to be filled with hatred and guilt.

“Big brother, I hereby swear to avenge you! May you rest in peace!” the Sea King's eyes glowed with vengeance as he looked at Beiqi from afar.

# Chapter 205 - Vibranium Pirate Ship

## Chapter 205: Vibranium Pirate Ship

North of the Void Ocean.

A black halo traveled speedily from afar before diving straight into the water and swimming downward.

Invading Beiqi cost the Sea King everything. He knew he could no longer regain his position before the incident with his own power.

Such deep vengeance drove the Sea King crazy, so he came up with a maniacal idea. This was also the only way he would be able to earn his revenge.

The death halo kept sinking below the water. 5,000 leagues... 10,000 leagues... 20,000 leagues...

Suddenly, a huge sculpture appeared before his eyes.

Seeing the arrival of the death halo, the huge sculpture turned slowly and looked at the Sea King.

Whoosh!

A current flowed and a gigantic hand suddenly grabbed the Sea King.

“Guardian, I am Mu Hai of the Mu Te Sea Nation!” the Sea King’s thoughts condensed into a consciousness, threading straight into the body of the Spirit of Mu Te.

This time, the huge sculpture did not grab him. Instead, it lowered its arm slowly and allowed the Sea King to approach it.

After approaching the Spirit of Mu Te, the Sea King came out from the halo. He scratched his arm to let a few drops of blue blood drip onto the Spirit of Mu Te, which quickly seeped into the sculpture.

Moments later, the voice of the Spirit of Mu Te rang in the Sea King's head.

“Member of the Mu Te royal family, state your business!”

“I want to release the Death Clan and make them invade the Void Ocean!”

“No, sealing this place was an order from the clan's king, Mu Zhiguang. I reject your order!” the Spirit of Mu Te's voice echoed in his head with a buzz.

“Mu Zhiguang is dead. The only way I can take revenge on his passing is to release the Death Clan. I am the only one left in the Mu Te Sea Nation. I am your king now!” the Sea King roared wildly.

“I do not believe you!” the Spirit of Mu Te was so shocked that his body shivered.

The Sea King's face darkened. He immediately delivered Mu Zhiguang's last words to the Spirit of Mu Te.

After a while the Spirit of Mu Te spoke, “He hoped that you would not take revenge but instead survive as the last member of the clan.”

“I'd rather die than live on my own in shame. I've made up my mind!” the Sea King said in all seriousness.

“The last King of the Mu Te Sea Nation, I obey your order!”

The Spirit of Mu Te did not say anything else this time. He was created by the Mu Te Clan, so he would follow the orders of the clan's king. Since the Sea King was the only one left in the clan, the Sea King was their last king.

The huge sculpture raised its right leg, revealing a Hexagram Formation, which had deafening sounds emanating out of it as if there were ghosts crying out.

Tentacles reached into the seal and began to grow crookedly.

“Do you need me to open the seal?”

“Wait!” the Sea King said while sweeping toward the seal.

Instantly, black tentacles circled around the Sea King in a craze.

Thud!

The Spirit of Mu Te stomped his foot and all the illusory tentacles were torn by an invisible force.

When the Sea King’s feet touched the seal, innumerable sounds rang in his head.

Cunning jeers, husky screams, sad sobs...

“Mu Zhiguang... die... die... die, Mu Zhiguang...”

The Sea King hummed coldly, chasing away all the sounds in his head. He then looked at the Hexagram Seal below him and said, “Do you wish to come out? Ruler of Death!”

When the Sea King’s voice died down, all the tentacles which were stretching outward disappeared and a skull face slowly formed at the area around the seal.

“Mu Zhiguang... die!”

“I am not Mu Zhiguang. I was just asking if you want to come out or not. If you don’t, I think Mu Zhiguang will keep you guys locked down here for eternity!”

When talking to this demon in the Valley of Death, the Sea King would naturally not say that Mu Zhiguang was dead, or else, it would send the Death Clan into an uproar and they would attack the seal.

Without Mu Zhiguang, the Spirit of Mu Te would not be able to oppress the sudden outburst of the Death Clan once the seal bursts, and the Sea King was well aware of this.

“Who are you... can you let us... out?” beneath the seal, the voices changed abruptly from crying, to anger, then to wailing.

“I can let you out, but what can you give me in return?”

“I can grant you death... let you die... let you embrace the darkness...” piercing laughter came from below, turning the Sea King’s complexion ghastly pale.

“Looks like you never want to leave this place!” the Sea King snorted.

“What do you want... you seem to want the power of death... I felt that!”

“That’s right. Let me have the power of death. Let me rule your Army of Death! I’ll lead them to kill, to swallow every life!”

“It’s a good condition... I like it very much... but are you brave enough to do it?”

At the end of the Ruler of Death’s sentence, an elixir surrounded by an aura of death slowly appeared above the seal.

“Would you dare? Hehehe... you might really die after drinking this!”

The Sea King looked at the elixir and reached out to take it.

The aura of death surrounded his hand and his arm turned black in seconds. The power of death kept soaking into his body, destroying his bodily functions.

“If this can grant me the strength I want, I’ll let all of you out!” after saying this, the Sea King swallowed the elixir with determination.

“Ah!”



In an instant, the aura of death spread through his whole body. His eyes gradually turned black like Mu Zhiguang's. Black currents were flowing in and out of his body and the Sea King began to scream in agony.

“Hahaha... embrace your death... enjoy the last moments of your life...” the voice coming out from below began to laugh madly when it saw the Sea King crying out in pain.

...

After the battle, the players learned how really weak they were.

When faced with such disastrous powers, even if they were huge in number and possessed the ability to respawn, they would never be able to balance their forces with true power.

However, this battle also brought princely rewards to the players.

They gained a lot of experience points and soul coins from the massacre.

After the battle, the players wasted a boatload of soul coins to upgrade their abilities, change accessories, and repair their warships. Once again, the strength of the players increased tremendously.

Meanwhile, the person who gained the most was Lu Wu. He could not stop smiling when his number of soul coins exceeded 500,000.

Even the danger of the hidden Beiqi forces was taken off of his mind.

After knowing that the white-haired old man was his subordinate, he had no worries at all. The only thing that bothered him to the extent of making him slap the floor every time he thought about it, was about how he was originally a female.

After the battle, Lu Wu used some soul coins and Yin energy to repair the border of the Mansion of the Dead.

After all, this was a place where players must pass by when heading to the Liuli Coast. Now that this area had been severely destroyed by the battle

between Lie Shan and Mu Zhiguang, the players might fall into some deep holes while travelling by foot.

Lu Wu did not shed any tears over this expense. He paid without hesitation!

At the same time, there was one important task waiting for Lu Wu to settle.

When he completed most of his miscellaneous work, he condensed his incarnation in the Mansion of the Dead and walked toward Tong Gua's Forge.

...

Right now, in Tong Gua's Forge.

Tong Gua, Xiao Tian, the Rock Ghost King who was in his plant form, and the Hydra King who was in the form of a baby snake, looked at each other but nobody talked.

"Tong Gua, I didn't know you've become so weak!" the Rock Ghost King spoke, breaking the awkward silence.

"I say, you look familiar in this state!" Tong Gua did not answer him, instead he looked at the current form of the Rock Ghost King and sank into deep thought.

"Cough..." the Rock Ghost King couldn't help but cough, his face uneasy.

When he snuck into the Mansion of the Dead, he thought Tong Gua was still that terrifying Ghost King Peak Elite, which was why this awkward scenario played out.

"By the way, Tong Gua, since we've already decided to submit to him, why won't he come out and meet us?" the Hydra King asked curiously.

"Be patient, he's the kind of person who will appear at any time. As long as we wait, it'll be fine. However, you must be mentally prepared. Submitting is not as simple as it sounds," Tong Gua couldn't help warning them.

“Do we have to do the Soul Oath to prove our loyalty? When His Majesty was here, I had to do it. Since it’s to prove our loyalty, to prevent betrayal, I think it’s normal to do this,” the Rock Ghost King frowned.

“Then you’re too naive! After you board this Vibranium Pirate Ship, they will weld the door shut so you can’t leave even if you die,” Xiao Tian mentioned quietly from beside.

Although when he said this, Xiao Tian was not even sure what vibranium was, just that it was something incredible based on what the players said.

Hearing this, the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King were both dumbfounded.

Just then, a silhouette appeared in the house. His dark figure was clouded by fog, making his appearance hardly visible.

“Rock Ghost King and Hydra King, I’m here!”

Seeing that somebody was here, they jumped out of their skin. After some pondering, they faced Lu Wu, bowed and yelled, “Greetings, King of Beiqi!”

“Actually, having you guys submit your loyalty to me cost me a lot of resources. But it’s okay, since I can also enlarge my force’s territory!” as he spoke, Lu Wu shifted his thoughts, and the words regarding their submission of loyalty to the artifact were sent directly to their minds.

“Read it. Then when you’re done, we will be family!” Lu Wu said with a smile.

“Your Majesty, why are the words from this Soul Oath different from the original one?” the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King were puzzled as they looked up.

“Don’t ask too many questions, just read it. What are you afraid of? Can’t you see I read it, too!” Tong Gua coaxed them, but deep down, he was very glad.

After all, he was pulling two more people down with him, so he felt really good.

After the duo exchanged looks, they finally read the words that appeared in their minds.

Meanwhile, the artifact also sensed their souls and sucked them into the channel after they finished reading the Soul Oath which pledged their undying loyalty.

Bei Li, who was already waiting in the artifact, had her mask and white coat on, and was totally prepared for the new brainwashing surgery.

After about an hour, the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King were sent out of the Channel, their faces blank.

“What is this!? Was this the secret weapon Lu Wu made back then?” they both seemed terrified after coming back to their senses.

Especially in the Artifact Channel when they saw the mysterious Bei Li who kept following the previous King of Beiqi, it was so unbelievable to them.

“The information is already in your heads,” Lu Wu spoke again.

Once they heard this, they sank into their thoughts immediately.

Rows and rows of information about the artifact and players appeared, shocking the ever so knowledgeable duo.

“See, I told you, you can’t leave this Vibranium Pirate Ship. Now you can’t even die!” Xiao Tian laughed at them from beside.

“Your Majesty, I would like to know your plans!” the Rock Ghost King asked with a straight face.

“To make an army capable of fighting any force... including the world of immortals!”

Although Lu Wu had said that with a stable tone, it still greatly surprised the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King, since they knew how deadly were the forces of the world of immortals.

“Don’t be scared, I can do this with the help of the artifact!”

Regarding this point, both of them acknowledged it after understanding the functions of the artifact.

“Now I know why these secret weapons... no, these players, kept annoying my North Rocks region. It was their way to get stronger!”

The Hydra King nodded, too.

“Getting stronger by snatching things, huh? After being digitized by the artifact, their strengths will be infinite, it is indeed the best way of progress!”

“Your Majesty, I know potion making. Shall I provide it to the players and develop this into their character classes?”

Just as Xiao Tian said, since they had already boarded this ship and had made up their mind to follow Lu Wu, he made the initiative to give suggestions in order to assist in the players’ growth.

“Go back and keep being the Ghost Kings. The players’ strength still has room for improvement, and I’m preparing a new chapter. About the players’ invasion, please ignore them. When it’s time, I will announce your participation to the players!”

The Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King pulled their faces after listening to this.

They thought after joining this team, they could finally rest, but it turns out they have to serve the players and help them get stronger.

“Yes!”

At last, the duo bowed and agreed.

Seeing that they had agreed, Lu Wu nodded in contentment.

“When the timing is right, send your trusted subordinates here, I’ll digitize them, too. The other subordinates who are not involved can keep being the source for the players’ growth.”

Delight flashed on their faces, because they were worried about this, too. Since their subordinates had followed them for years, if they could only assist the growth of the players, it was rather unfair. Little did they know, before they voiced it out, Lu Wu had already mentioned it.

“Yes!” they bowed again.

“Very good!” after saying that, Lu Wu’s figure disappeared.

After Lu Wu left, the four people fell into a baffled silence.

“Don’t complain. Once the players get stronger, you’ll benefit from it, too. Since we’re all one force now, don’t stress too much about those insignificant subordinates. Since you guys are not emotionally connected to each other, don’t be too bothered by it!” seeing as Lu Wu had left, Tong Gua said from beside.

“Oh right, now you know that the artifact can extract soul power and convert them into soul coins. This is also the only currency shared by us, other NPCs, and the players. The game shop, too, is available for us. We actually have loads of benefits...” while saying this, Tong Gua’s eyes glimmered slyly. Then, he walked to the Rock Ghost King’s side and hooked his arm around his neck.

“Brother, since we’re family now, I... am lacking some funds and I need some assets. I see your North Rocks are filled with spiritual materials. How about you cut down some trees and sell them to the game shop, then lend your brother some money to spend?”

The Rock Ghost King’s face changed upon hearing this.

“I don’t even have soul coins, and yet you want me to lend some to you? No way!”

“Hey, you’re so cruel. Since you have the soul coin function now, I’m certain that you’ll secretly cut down some trees for yourself. You think I don’t know? What will happen if you lend me some soul coins? I work like a bull all day to get a few hundred soul coins a day, can’t you just pity me?” Tong Gua yelled angrily.

Looking at the messy wine bottles on the floor, the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King looked at each other before rushing away from the scene.

Right now, they didn’t have any idea of cutting down trees and selling them. To them, soul coins were the divine items that could help them cultivate the Ghost King Intermediate Realm.

They also had a sudden thought that this Vibranium Pirate Ship was actually quite decent.

# Chapter 206 - Ghost Commander Trial

## Chapter 206: Ghost Commander Trial

After settling the two Ghost Kings, Lu Wu started to think about how he was going to standardize the players' strengths.

At the current stage, the players' strength formed their own system which was completely different from the power system of the Underworld.

To line up these two very different systems, Lu Wu handed this arduous task to Bei Li. Bei Li did not disappoint. She quickly researched the trial for players to line up their battle powers to the Underworld.

When the players logged on, they noticed a new trial system in the game.

[Game renewal, addition of a Trial System]:

Content: After this renewal, every player at Level 100 or higher will be able to register for the Trial Challenge at the chamberlain's area of the Mansion of the Dead. Specific information about the trial are as below:

[One, Ghost Commander Preliminary Trial (at least Level 100)]:

Trial Content: After receiving the task at the Mansion of the Dead's chamberlain's area, enter the scene of the trial and engage in single combat with Beginner Level Ghost Commanders. The trial will be completed upon defeating the creature of the Ghost Commander Level.

Trial Reward: 300 soul coins, a decorative purple title added behind your menu name (Beginner Ghost Commander), and a purple Ghost Commander pendant (the symbol of a trial passer).



[Two, Ghost Commander Intermediate Trial (at least Level 168 and has passed the preliminary trial)]:

Trial Content: After receiving the task at the Mansion of the Dead chamberlain's area, enter the scene of the trial and engage in single combat with Intermediate Level Ghost Commanders. The trial will be completed upon defeating the creature of the Ghost Commander Level.

Trial Reward: 600 soul coins, a decorative purple title added behind your menu name, and a purple Ghost Commander gold ring (the symbol of a trial passer).

[Hidden Trial Bonus: Will be given after the Prestige System is launched!]

...

Lu Wu launched three trial system settings at the same time, each referring to the three stages of a Ghost Commander.

The level of the settings was also decided after Bei Li's meticulous consideration.

The launching of these trials was to standardize the players' battle powers. Lu Wu also donated soul coins to be awarded to winning players.

Of course, Bei Li had set Level 100 as the minimum requirement to enter the trial, but they didn't expect a Level 100 player to succeed. A lot of weak players would not be able to pass the preliminary Ghost Commander Trial even if they were at Level 150.

Basically, in Lu Wu's opinion, other than a few superbly gifted players, most of the players at Level 100 would be unable to pass the trial.

Yet Lu Wu would not lower the threshold. It was to be an acid test of the strengths of the players and the Underworld.

Lu Wu also considered how the auxiliary classes would complete the trial at the current stage.

Currently, there were only two auxiliary classes: Sun Qi the dog's White Phantom and the Wood Spiritmaster who had advanced his class from a Mage.

Sun Qi didn't have to worry. Since his attributes were higher than those of the same class, his outputs were not weak. However, what gave him a headache was this Wood Spiritmaster class which controlled and healed but had little output.

Still, Lu Wu would not be biased. He spent nights discussing with Bei Li before launching a new pathway known as the auxiliary trial.

In this trial, the specific mission did not involve engaging the Ghost Commander Elites in single combat.

Rather, it was a trial to refine a player's controlling and healing powers.

This trial would be divided into three stages.

In the healing trial, ten puppets with dropping health would appear in the scenario. The players must ensure that none of them died over a period of ten minutes.

The second trial scenario would be about control. The players' mission would be to confine all the roaming piglets in the scenario to their respective positions within the set time frame.

The third trial would be the most significant combat trial.

However, they didn't have to assist the players to fight. Instead, they have to protect a Level 100 player and ensure that the player survives until the end to kill the Ghost Commander Level monster.

This game update quickly sparked a discussion in the forum.

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Ohoo~ I want to ask the officials: are the Ghost Commander Elites in this trial equipped with intelligence? If they are, I choose to commit suicide (laughing emoji)!"

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Probably not, since the point of this trial is to test our strength. It’s still going to be tough, though, I don’t think any of us can single handedly defeat the Ghost Commanders!”

Watermelon\_Taro: “Ao Jian might do it, that bastard’s incredibly strong. He’s totally a bot-like player!”

My\_Wife’s\_The\_Cutest\_In\_The\_World: “Can we enter as a couple?”

My\_Husband’s\_The\_Coolest\_In\_The\_World: “Yes! Yes! Can two people enter together? If we can’t we’ll be half as strong!”

Peppa\_Boar: “Impossible. If we can enter the trial together, I’ll pull one of my guild members into this (laughing emoji)!”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “I think that for those who want to enter the trial, advance your character classes first. Don’t bother entering if you haven’t advanced. Don’t waste your 10 soul coins on registration. If not, I reckon your levels will be delayed, but us inherited character classes are excluded (laughing emoji)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Invincible\_Loneliness: “Someone~ Beat this cocky billionaire to death (laughing emoji)!”

A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “So, should I enter the auxiliary trial or the combat trial? (confused emoji)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “Maybe the officials forgot to launch a mount trial for you whereby after you succeed, you’ll be awarded the title of ‘Excellent Mount’ (laughing emoji)!”

...

However, Lu Wu underestimated the players’ potential.

Within a day after the launch, two players had already completed the trials.

One of them was Ao Jian, who has the highest level among the players, Level 109. He failed on his first attempt and succeeded on the second try.

The second player to finish was Qi Ming. He, too, only succeeded during his second attempt.

The server announcement of the two players' victories spurred everyone's excitement again.

It declared that only the top 100 players would be awarded with a server announcement. Thus, everyone wanted to fight for this chance to show off.

A level-training craze was kickstarted by the content update.

Many players who reached Level 100 began to bombard the Top 100 Trial List, dreaming of owning the Ghost Commander pendant and roaming to other towns to show off.

All the players' progress was heading toward a positive direction.

Just when Lu Wu thought a steady progressive era came, a message posted in the players forum caught his eye.

A player posted a video showing a huge amount of black, octopus-like creatures raging in the Void Ocean, attacking players and other creatures the second they came into their line of sight.

To investigate what happened, Lu Wu used the artifact to move his vision to the Void Ocean. Then, he spotted the horrifying scene occurring up north.

Countless hideous monsters swarmed the waters as more black monsters surfaced. Their enormous population dyed the seawater black, making Lu Wu's head go numb.

Before this, Hu He discovered the Abyss Death Clan's existence when he was at the bottom of the ocean. Witnessing this sight, he knew that the Death Clan had come into being.

As to why the Death Clan would break the seal, Lu Wu suspected that this was all the Sea King's doing. After all, who else would dive several thousand leagues underwater to do such diabolical things?

Of course, Lu Wu automatically filtered the fact that one of his allies, Hu He, could actually do this evil thing.

After pinpointing the root cause, Lu Wu released another server announcement right away to alert the players.

[Server Announcement: There is a deathly natural disaster outbreak in the Void Ocean. Players, please exercise caution when sailing out to sea!]

After releasing the announcement, Lu Wu started to find a solution with Bei Li.

This danger might be hazardous, but it could also be an opportunity.

Now, the players were already lusting for level advancement. This crisis might be the key to boost all the players' levels.

Hence, Lu Wu and Bei Li began to prepare new downloadable content to help the players upgrade their strength for the crisis. They also hinted that cash-purchased weapons would help greatly in their fight.

# Chapter 207 - Cross-Server Account And Ign Evaluation

## Chapter 207: Cross-Server Account And IGN Evaluation

While Lu Wu and Bei Li were researching the new upgraded content, something happened in the forum, evoking new discussion amongst the players.

The problem was, a player from the European server who logged into his account in the local server noticed that his character class menu was still on a Beiqi player's menu after he returned to Europe. His character also remained in Beiqi instead of his normal Land of Cangxu.

Similarly, local players who started playing Battle Online in Europe found their log-in locations still in the Hidden Dragon Village of the European server after they came back. Their character class menus were also unchanged, remaining a dead soul warlock, knight, etc.

Due to a sense of attachment to their original servers, many players hoped the officials could launch a server changing service so they could return to their preferred server.

After some discussion between Lu Wu and Bei Li, they thought this was a great suggestion, so they released an official announcement.

[Cross-Server Account Update Announcement]:

Content: Following the feedback received about the location linked to a player's account, the officials have decided to add a cross-server account function. Each account will be able to change servers once by purchasing a pass at the game shop for 100 soul coins. Once purchased, players need to activate the pass, where they will be given the option to choose their desired servers (currently only available for the local server and European server).

Cross-Server Precaution One: After selecting a server, a player's level, equipment, channel items, and situation will be transferred to the new server without any changes. However, their exclusive title in the previous server will be forfeited.

Cross-Server Precaution Two: Upon logging in to the server for the first time after a server change, players will be given a chance to change their default character classes. After changing their default character class, only a character's level attributes will change. Your character's levels will remain unchanged. However, the player's character class advancement or inherited character class will be forfeited!

Cross-Server Notification (Red): Crossing servers is only allowed once, no multiple crossings allowed!

...

The efficiency of the officials won the players' positive reviews.

At the same time, many European server players who had previously logged in to the local server started to spend cash to cross their servers. A few local players on the European server also chose to come back to their original server.

However, not many players changed their default character class when they crossed, since they were familiar with their respective character classes. Several other players chose not to change character classes as they were reluctant to give up their class advancements.

Following this, the officials released another announcement. Even in different servers, their skills in the Cultivation Pavilion were the same. Players could grow and progress in the other server.

With the officials' guarantee, most players just gave up changing. They continued with their original character classes and kept battling in different servers.

...

As Battle Online gained fame and became more popular day by day, several foreign professional gaming organizations began to invite Lu Wu for interviews.

Lu Wu did not explicitly turn them down. The timing was certainly not ideal because he was still just a cat.

Even so, the agency with the leading authority on all things gaming, the Imagine Game Network aka IGN, produced a review for Battle Online.

The world-renowned gaming media company had a professional comprehensive rubric by which they assessed games. Expert reviewers would try a game and write their reviews based on this rubric and award a score to the game ranging from 0.0 to 10.0 on the overall game experience.

Each aspect of the game would also be assessed on a scale of 0.0 to 10.0, including performance, graphics, audio, gameplay, and attractiveness. However, the overall score was independently awarded and not calculated by the individual factors.

As Battle Online had not yet been launched in America, where IGN is based, their evaluation was carried out on the European server.

What the reviewers found in their evaluation of Battle Online utterly blew them away.

After obtaining multiple confirmations on their test report, IGN published their review. Their review quickly went viral in the gaming community.

Graphics: 10.0

Evaluation: Completely realistic scenario simulation. One could not tell if they were in the real world or in the game. Every scenario was replicated to the very detail, a falling leaf, a gentle breeze, even the light shadows during the sunrise and sunset were impactful. Could be named as a revolutionary product.

Audio: 10.0



Evaluation: Perfectly synced to the visuals, the audio sounded very realistic and not artificial at all. One could only imagine what kind of monster the audio master was behind the scenes!

Gameplay: 9.8

Evaluation: Super realistic graphics make gameplay very enjoyable. A high level of liberty in the game, air walls are absent, long shots of the graphics were also not two-dimensional. All areas on the map were accessible to players. The progress system was also comprehensive and versatile, with more than one way to fight monsters and level up. A player could be any character class they desired: an explorer, beast trainer, sailor, adventurer, and more. It is to be noted that there are even more gameplay options available on their original server, but we have yet to carry out our evaluation there. Since there still are elements of the game that have yet to be launched on the European server, we can only give a 9. However, once these new features are launched in the future, you can expect to see full marks from us!

Attractiveness: 10.0

Evaluation: The game introduced a very interesting character class development system. While leveling up, the body conditions would upgrade in sync. Each level advancement was extremely rewarding. At the same time, the warship-development mode in the current stage added more pleasure to the game. The game was absolutely enticing. It had a wide, open-world view and a very high power system. Even after reaching the final level in the game, there was still plenty for a player to do as there were many new territories to explore.

Game Performance: 10.0

Evaluation: Battle Online received positive feedback from players on both the original server and European server, and quickly amassed a huge user base. At the same time, it has been constant with its position as the game with the top number of active players among new releases. Moreover, other highly-anticipated games released in the same period were given a cold shoulder, attracting far fewer players.

For one, Star Wars was launched in Europe in the same period as Battle Online. Although having been chosen as one of the top three most-anticipated titles, its release being a day later than Battle Online's launch proved to be detrimental, as it only attracted less than 30,000 players from Battle Online. These players still came back to Battle Online after that. What a dreadful ending.

Overall Review: The game has a grand world view with 100 percent realistic graphics. It has a comprehensive economic system, realistic player killing system, an intuitive interface, and various entertainment elements. The developers have perfectly handled cheaters and bugs that may ruin the gaming experience. We have become avid fans of this game and we look forward to the launching of an American server! This is a legendary game that must be played!

(Attached is an 80 minute intricate review of the contents of the game.)

...

When IGN published its test report and video reviews, Battle Online became the hot topic in the gaming industry all around the world. It caught the attention of foreign players, lured by the enticing gameplay videos, resulting in the registration of a huge batch of players.

A huge influx of foreign players entered the official Battle Online forum, eagerly posting requests to launch an American server and Asian server as soon as possible so they could have a taste of the latest and greatest game. After all, the review published by IGN spread the word in the gaming community about the amazing gameplay.

At the same time, the players that searched for related contents of the game knew it had a cross-server account function that meant a late start might hugely affect their respective servers.

So the requests of foreign players in the forum got higher and higher.

Lu Wu valued the launching of other servers, too.

He immediately contacted Wu Guoyi, and was told that the other two servers could be launched anytime as long as he had all the preparations done.

Hearing Wu Guoyi's guarantee, Lu Wu wasted no time and got busy again. He sorted out all the game settings himself and left all the research to Bei Li.

Recently, Lu Wu kept on thinking that he had become more useless since he had Bei Li, and for this, he concluded three reasons.

One, if he had any problems, look for Bei Li.

Two, if anything was not understandable, look for Bei Li.

Three, just look for Bei Li.

They say that behind every successful man is a great woman. To Lu Wu it couldn't be any more true.

However, he still felt different. Behind him stood a hungry, adorable, premature little girl with infinite potential.

This weird feeling of dependence made Lu Wu feel very happy indeed!

# Chapter 208 - No, You Wanted To!

Chapter 208: No, You Wanted To!

Beiqi, North Rocks.

A sly figure was venturing further in. Behind him, a tall, sluggish silhouette followed.

Hu He had been on edge ever since he entered the deeper region of North Rocks because he was encroaching on the Rock Ghost King's territory. It was not uncommon for players to be viciously attacked by either the Rock Ghost King himself or the ancient tree demon upon entering this area.

However, Hu He was rather surprised. Apart from a few tree demon soldiers, he did not encounter any boss level creatures. Hu He let out a sigh of relief.

After another hour of walking, Hu He's eyes welled up with tears as the border came into sight.

If I can't remain here, I'm sure I can make somewhere else my home!  
European server, here I come!

He had considered changing servers before, but he still had a strong sense of attachment toward his original server. He decided that for the time being, he would hide in the European server and only return to prove himself after becoming stronger.

Hu He welcomed the warm sun when he walked out from the woods. He walked on with a feeling of ease as he could already feel his new life waving him hello.

After walking for a while, a game notification rang in his head.

[Game notification: You have entered the European server's Land of Cangxu. From now on, you will respawn at the Hidden Dragon Village resurrection point.]

Goodbye justice of backstabbing! Farewell, players who saw me as a malignant player! From now on, I won't lack either friendship or love...

A bright smile lit up Hu He's face as he imagined a perfect future to come.

He sped up and raced toward the purple safe zone shown on the map. He wanted to make some new friends first, since he had always been by himself. Indeed, he was lonely. It was high time for him to put in some effort to chat with other players.

Right then, the compass he was carrying started beeping.

Instinctively, Hu He took the compass out and was surprised to find a high Zombie Energy Value shown on the compass.

But this time, Hu He hesitated. He wondered if he should proceed to dig it up.

His recent grave-digging endeavors left him traumatized. He was afraid of encountering another seal or worse.

He debated with himself for a while before finally deciding to check it out.

He followed the navigation on the compass and marched toward the selected destination.

When he arrived at a hill covered in weeds, Hu He stopped in his tracks, "It's here!"

He took out his spade subconsciously. Just when he was about to dig, his mind tangled up.

"It wouldn't be a seal again, right!?"

No, it can't be. I'm near the newbie village, surely the game developers would've considered this. They wouldn't set such a high difficulty...

After some self-talk, the troublemaker within him woke up and his immorality as a zombie forgemaster erupted again.

I'll just have a light dig. I'll stop if things get fishy! Yes, it'll be like this.

So Hu He took out two spades and handed one over to Cha Na's zombie spirit. Then, they began to dig diligently at the hill.

After nearly half an hour, Hu He plunged his spade hard into the huge hole he made. Suddenly, the earth under his feet loosened and his body fell vertically downward, straight into the hole underneath.

Upon seeing this, Cha Na's zombie spirit jumped in, too.

The grave chamber was pitch black. Hu He stood up immediately, took out the torch he prepared specifically for tomb raiding and began to scan his surroundings.

He instantly found himself in a prison with ten metal-caged cells. It appeared to prevent creatures from escaping.

This relieved Hu He. Perhaps it was not a grave chamber. The bodies of the dead elites could not be a seal, so he should be able to continue digging without any worries.

Hu He walked along the dark tunnel, flashing his torch around the insides of the cells to see what was kept within.

The first cell contained a pile of bones. The bones looked too big to have come from a human-like structure. It was a pity that these bones were too old and severely corroded. He would not be able to forge anything out of them.

Hu He let out a sigh and moved on to the second cell.

It was a similar sight to the first one, a pile of rotten bones with nothing valuable found. When he tried to touch the metal cages, the rusted surface crumbled away into fine powder.

How old is this place? Hu He's eyes were full of shock.

In this world, most of the materials were spiritual. Judging from the Zombie Energy, those who were jailed here must have been elites and these metal cages were not just normal metal either.

Hence, Hu He could not begin to imagine how old this prison had to be in order for such spiritual metal to turn into rust.

As he browsed the cells, Hu He realized that all the creatures here had become rotten bones, so he could not make anything out of them. Hu He was greatly disappointed and thought he would return empty-handed this time.

When he came to the eighth cell, Hu He raised his torch and noticed that this one stood out from the other cells.

This metal cage glowed with a silvery-white light under his torchlight and it had not been corroded by time. It seemed very unusual and must be a valuable metal.

This sparked Hu He's curiosity. He flashed his light inside the cell. When the darkness receded, a scrawny silhouette lying on the floor came into light.

Hu He was excited to find a usable corpse, so he quickly scanned the target with the analysis ability.

[Yuanxu (Level ???)]:

Character Information: Previous ruler of the Land of Yuanxu. After losing a battle to Xian Xu, his title of His Excellency was abdicated. His cultivation was revoked and he was imprisoned here.

Character State: Half-dead.

...

This was the first time Hu He had seen a creature with question marks for its strength condition. However, he was not afraid, since it was half-dead and its cultivation had been revoked.

Looking at this person, Hu He contemplated scavenging him.

Since this person was once a ruler, he must be much stronger than an ordinary character. Since he was abdicated from his position, though, he could still be holding a grudge. If released, he'd potentially wreak havoc.

Thinking about this, Hu He shivered and decided against it.

Although his cultivation was revoked, anything was possible in the world of this game. Maybe this old chap had a trick up his sleeve to regain his cultivation so he was able to survive until now. It was best for him not to stir up any trouble.

With this in mind, Hu He decided to retreat as he did not want to have a target on his back the moment he arrived in the European server.

“Quick... help me out...” just then, an old voice could be heard coming from his front, making Hu He tremble vigorously.

“You... can talk?” Hu He flashed the cell with his torch again. He saw that the frail old man had sat up and was staring directly at him with his murky, dented, and hollow eyes.

“Let me out... save me...” Yuanxu's mouth wobbled, speaking with his husky voice.

“What are you going to do if I let you out?” Hu He couldn't help but ask.

“Kill... Cangxu... rebuild my land of Yuanxu!” even through the metal bars, Hu He could feel the piercing sense of hatred.

“Goodbye, old chap, I don't have time for you. I'll patch up the hole I came through on my way up, just stay here for the rest of your life!” Hu He did



not dare free him after his intentions became clear, so he instantly turned and walked away.

What a joke, I used to be naive. Once bitten, twice shy. I will never again let a Demon King out into the world, lest it be another Mu Zhiguang!

Seeing Hu He leaving, a light glitched in Yuanxu's foggy eyes in the cell. He pointed in the direction of Hu He.

A green light zapped from Yuanxu's fingertips, blazing toward Hu He. However, a shield of light from the cage blocked the attack, stopping it from shooting outward.

Buzz!

The sound from behind him alarmed Hu He. He turned back and saw a green light clashing with the silvery-white metal cages, almost blindingly bright.

“Trying to run away?” Hu He was startled and he rushed back to the cell.

“Hey you, stop right there!”

Hu He bit his lip, he did not wish to be related to the reveal of this great demon.

Last time, Mu Zhiguang's explanation menu had already brought him enough trouble. He hated the words that he was awakened by himself to be forever added to his analysis menu.

When that happens, he would never be able to explain himself.

“This Silvermoon Metal... is almost... out of spirit... help me!” Yuanxu continued to yell, stuttering.

“No way am I helping you. Stop this right now, I'm warning you! Don't make me hurt you!” Hu He was panicking. He raised his spade to threaten him.

Yuanxu was not shaken by this, he kept mumbling words as the green and silver light continued fighting each other.

“Dammit!” frustrated, Hu He slammed his spade on the silver cage, trying to scare him.

When his spade hit hard, the silvery white light buzzed for a while before dimming, and a crack appeared on the metal bars.

“Shoot!” Hu He’s head went numb and he cursed silently. Little did he know that this metal was a lot weaker than it appeared.

“Thank you...” a voice came from within the cell.

Hu He had no tears left to cry. He grabbed the Zombie Poison Powder from his pocket and threw it in an attempt to stop him.

Buzz!

There were sounds of metal corroding away. Before it could enter the cell, the Zombie Poison Powder was stopped by the silvery white light and quickly disintegrated while the silver glow dimmed even more.

“Go to hell!” Hu He held his head and leaned back, fear plastered all over his face.

Crack!

A crisp sound of a silver metal bar snapping rang out.

Just when Hu He thought this was the end for him, the green aura spreading from Yuanxu’s body went out with a puff, and only green smoke remained.

Yuanxu went speechless.

Hu He was rendered speechless as well.

“Hahaha, you’ve used up your health, right? Can’t come out? Hahahaha!” Hu He burst into hysterical laughter. He had barely made it out by the skin

of his teeth.

At that moment, Yuanxu moved his body slowly, approaching the broken silver bar. He fixed his opaque eyes directly on Hu He.

[Facing soul attack... manipulation through seizure... successfully exempted!]

Hu He was taken aback by the game notification. He then shifted his fearful eyes to Yuanxu.

“You tried to manipulate me just now!”

“Why... is your soul... not... manipulatable?” amazement flashed through Yuanxu’s blurry eyes.

Listening to Yuanxu’s answer, Hu He’s body shivered.

How creepy, if this guy can manipulate souls, he may have other powers. I can’t stay here anymore, it’s best if I go up and bury him again now.

At this point, Hu He definitely wanted to leave.

However, after a few steps, Hu He felt weird. Cha Na’s zombie spirit did not follow him.

Right after, he heard some knocking sounds from his back.

Hu He looked back quickly, only to find that Cha Na’s zombie spirit was banging his spade on the cell.

“Holy fuck, you idiot. What are you doing? Are you crazy?” Hu He screamed at the top of his lungs.

He wanted to summon Cha Na’s zombie spirit back into the zombie storage bag, but Cha Na’s zombie spirit did not respond to any instructions. A game notification appeared.

[Game notification: Your subordinate, Cha Na's zombie spirit, has been manipulated, you no longer have the ability to control it!]

Hu He's heart sank. Looking at the gradually opening cell, he whispered, "Shoot! Shoot! I didn't do it on purpose, I didn't mean to let him out!"

"No, you wanted to!" Cha Na's zombie spirit smiled devilishly at Hu He.

# Chapter 209 - Beiqi Expeditionary Force

## Chapter 209: Beiqi Expeditionary Force

Hu He's eyes widened in bewilderment as he fixed his gaze on Cha Na's zombie spirit who was destroying the prison. He ran toward it immediately with the intention of stopping such out-of-control behavior.

Bang!

Cha Na's zombie spirit turned around and gave him a backhanded smack using the shovel, causing Hu He to fly out of the room.

Hu He stood up again as he spoke gravely, "I'll fight with you!"

Bang!

Another loud smack was heard and once again Hu He was thrown across the room.

Lying on the floor, Hu He's face was covered with tears. He was just a Zombie Forgemaster, not a strong fighter. On the other hand, the zombie spirit of Cha Na had been strengthened numerous times and possessed the combat capability of the Ghost Commander Level. He could never beat that strength.

Clang! Clang! Clang! Crack!

As the prison bars broke open, Yuanxu was seen walking slowly out of the cell. He staggered toward Hu He's side before tapping on his shoulder and said, "Thank you!"

"You're welcome!" Hu He grit his teeth and replied bitterly.

Feeling the air of the outside world, Yuanxu's face was filled with an unspeakable sense of enjoyment as he gradually extended both of his arms.

At that moment, there was a gust of wind as masses of the world's pure soul energy poured in and whirled around him. Then, it turned into a soul energy fog and seeped into his body, nourishing his shriveled frame.

Under the horrified gaze of Hu He, Yuanxu's body slowly restored to its original state. His muscles formed and bulged up steadily, while his rough skin gained elasticity under the nourishment of the soul energy.

Not long after, Yuanxu transformed from looking like an old man in his twilight years to a seemingly dignified man in his thirties.

“Land of Cangxu! It's time to change this name!”

Yuanxu's grayish-white hair danced with the wind while his expression was grim. He knew that it was time for him to claim the rightful throne of His Excellency.

While Hu He was praying for a game notification to never come, it finally appeared.

[Server Announcement: In the region of Cangxu, the Great Demon Yuanxu has been released by player Hu He. He will descend in the Land of Cangxu once again to fight for the throne of His Excellency. All players, please be prepared (Note: This demon with extremely formidable strength was previously His Excellency of the Land of Yuanxu!)]

The news came as a shock in the forum.

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Congratulations to the brothers in the European server. Happy to announce that there's a disaster maker coming your way. Throws flower petals (laughing emoji)!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Haha, he has gone to the European server? This is hilarious, it will keep the brothers in the European server busy for a while. Have fun you guys, this is just the beginning (laughing emoji)!”

Watermelon\_Taro: “So freaking happy this scourge is finally gone! I was so excited that I instantly bought myself a red outfit (ecstatic emoji~)!”

A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “I’m on cloud nine~ This is the biggest good news so far. We respectfully escort our Hu He, the Great Demon King, to the European server. Oh and don’t even bother coming back (Tong Gua laughing hysterically with arms akimbo.jpg)!”

Star\_Universe (European): “Fuck, I’ve heard so much about this Hu He Demon King. Why would he come to our European server all of a sudden? Please don’t!”

Reinhardt (European): “Fuck! Damn you Hu He... We’re doomed, this is terrible news! The European server is definitely going to explode soon!”

Mechanic\_11 (European): “I’m going to kill him, I’m going to kill him! We’re in the middle of planning the Hidden Dragon Ghost General’s murder. Now that he’s here, everything will turn into disaster mode, fuck him!”

High\_Ping\_Warrior (European): “We beg the other server to take him back, please!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to High\_Ping\_Warrior: “You’re being too kind. Players in all the servers are a big family, so just take it. Not accepting it means disrespect to the original players (laughing emoji)!”

ZERO (European): “It looks like something big has happened. I just got to the forum, can anyone tell me what’s going on? (Confused meme)”

Jason (European): “Boss, we’re done for... player Hu He, the Great Demon King, seems to have transferred to our zone. Besides, he has dug up a disaster level existence, an existence who is much more powerful than the Hidden Dragon Ghost General!”

ZERO (European): “WTF! Gather the players, we have to kick him out as soon as possible! Quick!”

...

At that moment, players on the local server were bursting with joy whilst players on the European server were in utter misery.

To begin with, the European server was going through a major development stage in an effort to catch up with the others, but now, the presence of Hu He had left them in a complete mess.

A lot of players started running toward the safe zone, waiting for the arrival of a huge calamity.

However, the severity of the situation far exceeded the expectations of the players.

...

Yuanxu appeared after Cangxu was dead.

At that time, the main forces of Cangxu had refused to accept one another as everyone wanted to be the new king. Now that the all-powerful Yuanxu had appeared, the initial balance of the situation would likely be disrupted.

After all, those who had no support in the underworld would easily be bullied, just like the time when Beiqi first lost Lu Yan. Thus, they would most probably seek the patronage of Yuanxu.

The players of the European server had gradually grown stronger under the mutual restraint of different forces. However, if Yuanxu was successful in conquering each of the forces, the players would have to face a truly powerful contingent of the Yuanxu Army.

Cangxu was fuming when he received the news. He barely managed to train the players to be stronger, but now that the Land of Cangxu might be unified by Yuanxu, what would become of them?

If Lu Wu was not there to stop him, Cangxu would have ran over to Hu He and strangled him a hundred times.



Even though Lu Wu prevented the violent behavior of Cangxu, he couldn't help but have the urge to choke Hu He to death. This bastard was incredibly dastardly. He was basically the players' number one nemesis.

If only he could, Lu Wu would create a server on Mars and throw him out of Earth, sending him straight toward outer space to let him suffer alone. By that time, it would all be fine even if Hu He decided to blow his new planet up!

Just as Lu Wu and Cangxu had expected, once Yuanxu discovered that Cangxu was dead, he started roaming around to subdue a crowd of Ghost Kings and Ghost Generals in an attempt to obtain the throne.

Moreover, a number of Ghost Generals and Ghost Kings had once again pledged their loyalty to Yuanxu.

In the face of this situation, Cangxu immediately sought the help of Lu Wu.

At this stage, the European server could be said to be his lifeblood, he could not bear to lose it. After all, he can only resurrect his Xian Ke after they become strong.

After much consideration, Lu Wu decided to provide Cangxu with some support. He reacted by launching a new event.

[Cross-Server Event Update: Beiqi Expeditionary Force!]:

Event Details: The Land of Cangxu is about to face the invasion of Yuanxu, the Great Demon. Xian Xu, a longtime close friend of the King of Beiqi, has requested our help.

Brave warriors, the sound of the horn signals an assembly. Put on your battle armor and sharpen your knife for it will be a bloodbath. Let us fight bravely for the great future of Cangxu!

Event Participation Requirements: Event registration will be held at the Mansion of the Dead. Players will become a part of the Beiqi Expeditionary Force upon successful registration. Once the event officially starts, players

will be transported to Cangxu and participate in the fight to defend our home!

A purple title of 'Beiqi Expeditionary Force' will appear above all players on the team once they enter the Land of Cangxu.

Event Reward: Privilege to activate the prestige and rank system in advance. Rewards will be given based on the player's rank in exchange with the prestige earned.

With the start of this event, the local players who were prepared to laugh at the sufferings of the players in Cangxu suddenly had ants in their pants.

All the players got envious, particularly for the early activation of the prestige and rank system reward.

They knew what it meant if the system could be activated in advance. It signified that they would be one step ahead of any others, and that advantage could potentially bring extra rewards.

Not long after the event was opened for registration, the Mansion of the Dead was crowded with people. These players were eager to sign up for the Beiqi Expeditionary Force as they feared that they might not be able to get a place.

# Chapter 210 - Prestige And Rank

## Chapter 210: Prestige And Rank

A particularly large number of players had signed up for the new expeditionary force. If Lu Wu had not set the participation limit at five million players, he feared that all players in Beiqi would join the expedition and leave their land behind.

After a full battalion of five million players were gathered, Lu Wu took the plunge to start the update.

[Update Content: Prestige and Rank System]:

**Prestige System Description:** At the current stage, the Prestige System will only be in service for cross-server events. Prestige can be obtained by killing enemy monsters in the cross-server battle mode and Prestige Points will be given based on the strength of the creature killed.

Wandering Souls Level: 1 Prestige Point

Ghosts Level: 3 Prestige Points

...

Ghost Commander Level: 10,000 Prestige Points

Ghost General Level: 80,000 Prestige Points

...

Prestige points obtained can be traded for special items in the Prestige Shop.

**Rank System Description:** After earning a sufficient amount of Prestige, players can exchange their points for a corresponding Rank in the Rank

System.

Rank Distribution:

Corporal (Level 1 to 10): 100 Prestige Points per exchange (Each level requires 100 Prestige Points)

Attributes: Health +30 (30 health points incremental for each level)

Sergeant (Level 1 to 10): 200 Prestige Points per exchange (Each level requires 200 Prestige Points)

Attributes: Health +40 (40 health points incremental for each level),  
Endurance +2 (2 points incremental for each level)

Commander (Level 1 to 7): 300 Prestige Points per exchange (Each level requires 300 Prestige Points)

Attributes: Health +50 (50 health points incremental for each level),  
Endurance +25 (3 points incremental for each level)

...

Items available in the Prestige Shop:

Prestige Shop Level One (available for Corporal):

[Surging Blood (Rank Skill)]: 500 Prestige Points

Skill Effect: After casting the skill, the player gains a 1.2x bonus on their main attribute. Lasts for ten minutes and has a cooldown period of two hours.

[Swordsmen Summoning (Rank Skill)]: 800 Prestige Points

Skill Effect: Summon ten swordsmen with strength equivalent to that of Level 30 Berserkers to join the fight (vanishing upon death). Lasts for half an hour and has a cooldown period of five hours.

...

Prestige Shop Level Two (available for Sergeant):

[Calvary Summoning (Rank Skill)]: 1500 Prestige Points

Skill Effect: Summon ten warriors with strength equivalent to that of Level 50 Calvary soldiers to join the fight (vanishing upon death). Lasts for half an hour and has a cooldown period of five hours.

[Fiery Elixir (Can only be used once)]: 500 Prestige Points

Item Effect: After drinking the elixir, all skills (including passive attack) will deal fire damage. Lasts for ten minutes.

...

Prestige Shop Level Six (available for Lieutenant General):

[Elixir of Resurrection (Can only be used once)]: 5,000 Prestige Points

Item Effect: The effect of the elixir will last for five minutes after consumption. During this period, the player will be resurrected upon death (not available in the Versus Arena or other battlefields).

[War Cry (Rank Skill)]: 5,000 Prestige Points

Skill Effect: The player releases a war halo covering a radius of fifty feet upon letting out a war cry. Allies (including the player) within the range will gain a 1.3x increase on their main attributes. Lasts for ten minutes and has a cooldown period of eight hours.

...

At this point, Lu Wu had released ten tiers of ranks and there were hundreds of items available for each rank in the shop, all of which were special items that could not be purchased in the regular game shop.

He was sure to make many Elixirs of Resurrection from Prestige Shop Level Six available. Players who would take this elixir would be as good as souls who returned to the battlefield after getting their injuries repaired by Lu Wu using some soul coins. This explained why the price was extremely high.

The players of the Beiqi Expeditionary Force were whipped into a frenzy by this wave of updates. They were dazzled by all the skills and growing range items available in the Prestige Shop and their hearts were filled with the desire to own everything.

Moreover, by enabling immediate growth to their attributes and health, the ranks were even more powerful.

This was simply an artifact in the eyes of Mages and Assassins.

Prior to this, their health would not increase much even after each upgrade, but the addition of ranks would turn the situation around.

For instance, when a Mage would upgrade their prestige to Level Five, attributes aside, the health itself would be increased to 3,500, fully transforming them into a human tank. Mages no longer have to hide from the Assassin's attack, they could just stand tough and cast their skills head on.

The introduction of the Prestige System gave many civilian players the hope of a brighter future.

Although soul coins could be purchased by the rich, prestige was not something that could be bought. Only by killing the monsters and demons could one obtain prestige points. As long as the players were diligent enough, they could easily utilize the Prestige System to close the gap between them and the high-end players.

Nevertheless, it was true that these things were difficult to obtain.

Even so, it stirred up the players' hearts. Those who failed to register had no choice but to beat their chests and stomp their feet, lamenting the missed

opportunity for them to rise.

The five million players who had activated the Prestige System in advance were on cloud nine. They boasted about their luck and rubbed their fists together, preparing to enter the Land of Cangxu to put up a good fight with the demons.

Now that everything was in place, Lu Wu just had to wait for Cangxu's feedback on the current situation before releasing this large contingent on the warpath.

...

Beiqi, Cliffs of Desperation.

In the white-haired old man's small cottage situated halfway up the mountain, four figures were seen aside from the white-haired old man.

"Your Majesty!" the four who appeared in the cottage proclaimed as they got down on one knee in front of the white-haired old man.

"Are you all aware of the reason why I commanded the four of you to stay hidden from the world?" the white-haired old man looked at Frozen, Da Huo, Earthbreaker, and Barbarian Bull, his four great subordinates of the Ghost Emperor Level.

Frozen and the rest were puzzled. After all, they had lived in seclusion for hundreds of thousands of years, their patience had definitely worn out. If it was not for the overbearing pressure from North Sea, they would have escaped much earlier. However, at that moment, no one dared utter a word.

"It is coming. The mark on her body shall reappear very soon. As the leader of the Heavenless Alliance, she had no choice but to reincarnate if she didn't wish to expose herself. But this time around, I believe she won't do the same. It is probably time for me to lend her a helping hand..."

"The opportunity for me to attain divinity has finally come!" the white-haired old man said with a smile.

The facial expressions of Frozen and the rest were grave upon listening to his opportunity for divinity.

They knew that the power of North Sea had reached the pinnacle of a Void Deity. To achieve apotheosis, all he needed to do was to fill in his name on the Underworld God List.

At first they were wondering why North Sea had been stalling his apotheosis, but they did not expect their leader to change his mind all of a sudden.

“Your Majesty, are you saying that she is the Old Ancestor?” Frozen lifted up his head and asked.

“Yes! It’s time for her to come back. However, those in the world of immortals would never let her get away with it. So do you all know what I’m planning to do next?” North Sea looked at his subordinates and chuckled.

The four of them felt goosebumps and three words appeared in their hearts at the same time, “Going against Heaven?”

“Afraid?”

“No. Since the Old Ancestor had such courage to do so, then it is only natural for me, as a posterity, to display true valor by going against Heaven along with Your Majesty!” replied Frozen, his delicate face filled with perseverance.

“I, Da Huo, pledge to follow Your Majesty until my death. Those arrogant fellows are a real eyesore. If I was crowned King of Beiqi in the past, I, too, would have definitely joined the Heavenless Alliance.”

When he finished speaking, the three of them turned their gaze toward Da Huo at the same time.

“Ahem... I’m saying if... in short, I now pledge my allegiance to Your Majesty without a second thought!” Da Huo seemed to have noticed



something, hence the swift explanation.

“We pledge to follow Your Majesty until our deaths!” Earthbreaker and Barbarian Bull made a vow resolutely.

“Actually, if any of you are afraid, rest assured that you will not be blamed. Resume your hiding and this battle will certainly not affect you.”

“We pledge to follow Your Majesty until our deaths!” the four of them said in unison once again.

“You all are truly contemptible to the bones! Hahaha!” looking at the four of them, North Sea could not help but to let out a loud laugh.

“Now that we are going against Heaven, would Your Majesty like to visit the Great Emperor to accept your amnesty in advance, thereby increasing your strength before the war?” Frozen parted his lips and asked.

“There is no need, my chance of divinity still lies with the deity!”

The four of them were stunned by what they heard. They immediately thought of a special myth about attaining divinity and they mentally gasped it in surprise.

At that moment, they realized that the King of Beiqi whom they had pledged loyalty to for hundreds of thousands of years had not changed a bit. He was still that insanelly dauntless man just like he was before!

# Chapter 211 - The Arrival Of The Expeditionary Force!

Chapter 211: The Arrival Of The Expeditionary Force!

That day, Cangxu approached Lu Wu once again to tell him about the bad news.

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General had already pledged his allegiance to Yuanxu. At the same time, they were already preparing to advance toward Hidden Dragon Village and annihilate those who were threats to the players.

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General was originally worried about whether he could still live in the Land of Cangxu if their losses were too great during his fight against the players. However, he had different thoughts now.

Based on the Hidden Dragon Ghost's opinion, the Land of Cangxu would definitely be unified in the near future with Yuanxu in the lead. So, even if he were to lose some of his powers, it was no longer important.

The Hidden Dragon Zone was initially his territory and this foreign force must be eliminated sooner or later. Thus, he was ready to carry out a full force attack upon the Army of Xian Xu to annihilate or expel them from his territory.

Obviously, this matter could not be delayed.

After discussing with Cangxu, Lu Wu decisively issued a statement to announce that the Beiqi Expeditionary Force would be leaving for battle in three hours.

At that point of time, Yuanxu had not fully gathered the power of Cangxu's respective forces and was still shifting between the forces. Hence, they had to make a move first in order to remove some of their threats.

When the expedition announcement was made, most of the players started to gather at the Mansion of the Dead, preparing for their next battle.

...

Cangxu, too, began his preparations after knowing that Lu Wu's support would be arriving soon.

That moment, there were players from the European server everywhere outside of Hidden Dragon Village.

After Cangxu released the announcement, they were already aware that a war was about to commence and they were all ready to fight till the end.

Throughout their confrontation with the Hidden Dragon Ghost General all this time, they had already witnessed the enormous strength of the Ghost General Peak Elite. They were certain that they would experience difficulties in trying to withhold this strong wave of attack with the power they owned.

The players clenched their fists tightly as soon as myriads of figures dressed in bronze armor appeared near the Hidden Dragon Marsh.

If they were to lose this battle, they would lose their foothold in the Land of Cangxu as well.

They would only be able to drift around after losing their resurrection point along with their safe zone. It would be impossible for them to rise from the ashes and reconstruct the huge force they once had.

Facing the heavy enemy infantry, the players expressed their perseverance and were ready to fight till the end.

They appeared under-equipped in comparison to the finely-equipped Hidden Dragon Army. There were very few red and purple-suited players on their side, even the knights' mounts were omnifarious.

Besides the few who managed to catch marsh crocodiles and marsh deers as their mounts, low-leveled knights would not even own a mount to ride on.

As for the rest of the mid-leveled knights, they were all just awkwardly riding on little boars which they caught by the marsh borders. They looked like complete rubbish.

But of course, there were also the professional players.

Reinhardt, for instance, was wearing Level 40 purple armor while riding on an Earth Dragon Mount as he stood at the frontline of the army of players, showing off his stance like a commander.

Also, take Li Xing, Jason, and the rest, for example... all of them had the dazzling purple stream of light on them.

Basically, all the members of the Zero Guild owned captivating weapons and equipment. They had Jason, a very wealthy patron who would sponsor them. Thus, the overall equipment of the guild was far more advanced thanks to their great ability of spending cash in-game.

Besides that, the Zero Guild was also the pillar of strength for the forthcoming war.

At that moment, the Hidden Dragon Army that appeared at the outskirts of the marsh suddenly separated into two halves. A giant upright lizard man with a height of about seven feet walked out gradually from the inside with a wooden staff in his hands. He gazed at the players' camp with a pair of emotionless eyes.

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General did not understand how this wave of forces appeared in his territory.

He could no longer endure the constant and insane assaults of the players.

He had a negotiation with the leader of the forces before, but no matter how intimidating or tempting he tried to be, they were all of no use. Not only did they refuse to give in, they even threatened to take down the entire Hidden Dragon Zone.

The several subsequent conflicts that happened between them gave Hidden Dragon a headache as well.

He also felt that the new forces could reproduce swiftly. They seemed just like a small group of people but they just could not be annihilated nor chased away.

Yuanxu's appearance gave him the courage to wipe off those who claimed that they were part of the Army of Xianxu while being ignorant of the consequences.

"I'll give you one last chance... get out of Hidden Dragon and retain your forces!"

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General looked at the players from afar and spoke calmly.

Once he was done speaking, the pearl at the tip of his sophora staff lit up. His voice was amplified around the surroundings, allowing the players to hear him loud and clear.

"I'll give you a chance as well... withdraw your troops and give us more time to develop our forces!" Li Xing, the leader of the army, chuckled as he replied.

"That's right. You are trying to attack us before we fully develop our force, that is not how it is supposed to work at all. Don't you know the rule of letting the players develop their forces in a stable condition and not push them to their limits as the first boss of the newbie village?" Jason, who was standing by the side, raised his gun and pointed it at the Hidden Dragon Ghost General with a provocative expression.

Even though the Hidden Dragon could not understand what the players were trying to say but judging from their actions, it seemed like they were underestimating and challenging him.

"Woo!" the Hidden Dragon Ghost General roared in anger. A gust of black wind was then aimed toward them as he waved his magic staff forward.

A strong wind blew as the players upfront lost their balance and fell onto the floor one after another.

At that very moment, the Hidden Dragon Army began to advance along the black wind. The war was about to commence.

“Charge! Victory to the Army of Xian Xu!” since they were in for the fight, Li Xing did not hold back as he bellowed before in the zone channel.

The Boar Knights at the frontline charged forward that instant to begin the assault.

The situation was not in the players’ favor because of the disturbance of the black wind. The Hidden Dragon Army on the other hand, were advancing in the same direction as the wind. The players’ first wave of attack was easily diminished.

The situation could only be described as total chaos when both parties collided into one another.

The Boar Knights’ faction at the first line of defense was scattered. The situation was total havoc.

The European server was developing rather quickly at this point. However, they could not compare themselves to the experienced Beiqi players. It was still just their first time experiencing an actual battle.

They were experiencing maladjustments both mentally and physically.

The war zone turned into a mess in an instant. The battle had no formations as the players were simply killing any enemy which appeared before their eyes and boars were just running all over the place aimlessly.

However, even though there was a huge difference in strength, the players did not lose their momentum. Every one of them put on a ferocious expression as if they were not afraid of death. This actually put the Hidden Dragon Army who had not been in battle for quite some time at a loss.

However, the disadvantages of the players in battle were still rather apparent.

Li Xing had no choice but to command each guild leader through the zone channel to lead their own guild to attack in a small group formation as they did not know how to attack in tactical formation as a big group.

His strategy was indeed effective. The attack was not as scattered as before with the utilization of small group formations, leaving a gap for a joint counterattack.

However, the situation was still not in their favor. The first few lines of defense were breached one after another. No matter how ferocious their attack was, they still could not impede the Hidden Dragon Army from moving forward.

Cangxu's facial expression went pale and he mentally sighed as he was observing the military disaster in the dark. Why didn't I just suffocate the Hidden Dragon to death back then!?

As time passed and the war continued, the situation was becoming worse and worse.

Even though they had millions of players, their war experience was really insufficient.

It was impossible to compare with the soldiers of the Hidden Dragon Army in terms of individual strength. Besides that, the three hours of recharge for resurrection was too long, they could not bring out the advantage of resurrection to the fullest in the battle.

The moment defeat took its shape, it was already out of control. The European server's troop was a mess compared to the more organized and neat formation of the Hidden Dragon Army.

Suddenly, a blue vortex emerged in the sky followed by an enormous light beam which landed on one side of the war zone just as Li Xing and the others were struggling in the battle. They were trying to kill as many

enemies as they could even if they were to lose the fight so they would have more time to prepare for their counterattack in the future.

The European server players and Hidden Dragon Ghost General watched the scene in shock as countless figures appeared from the blue light along with noises heard.

“Ahahaha! Here we come! I’m going to kill 100 today, don’t snatch my targets!”

“Wow, prestige, those are all prestige points in waiting. Please just stop and stand aside, brothers of the European server. Let us handle this difficult battle instead. Retreat for now. Battles are small matters but getting hurt is definitely a big matter!”

“Brothers of the Beiqi Army, happy first expedition. Let us teach this Ghost General a lesson and let him know what the Fourth Disaster is all about!”

“Wow! I hope that I will be able to reach a major rank after this battle. I’m excited!”

“Don’t squeeze, let me be in the front line, you bastards!”

“Idiotic mages of the Guardian Angel, you lots are Mages, why are you all standing at the front? Don’t you have some self-awareness, all of you don’t have the looks of proper mages at all! Fuck, don’t squeeze, let me go through!”

“Why don’t you look at yourself, you’re just an assassin, why do you want to be at the front, get lost!”

“This is too much, you Assassins and Mages are all squeezing to the front. Where are your manners? Do you even have the slightest respect toward us, the warriors?”

“Everyone, please keep quiet. This is our first expedition, we need to show the grace of the Beiqi Army. So, please don’t crowd around here, let me go through first!”



“Get lost!”

...

A big group of the Beiqi Army who surrounded the mountains appeared on one side of the war zone as the blue beam of light dispersed.

At that moment, a game notification appeared in the European server players' minds:

[In this battle, the Beiqi Expeditionary Force has come and will provide you with support!]

After hearing the announcement, the European server players were shocked. They knew that it was their chance to perform a counterattack.

“Brothers of Beiqi, thank you so much for coming, now the situation doesn't seem so bad!”

“Thank you so much! At least now the strengths of both parties are somewhat balanced and we have a chance to fight back!”

“Also, in addition to our resurrections, it will definitely give us an advantage at the end of this war. We're saved! Victory is ours!”

...

The players of the Beiqi Expeditionary Force were speechless when they heard the words of the other players.

They should be aware that it was the Beiqi Army who took down half of Beiqi.

The European server players actually thought that the strengths of both parties were balanced with them around. The Beiqi players simply could not bear their underestimating statements.

Thinking back on how they were once able to fight against Cha Na, the Ghost General for one night and were finally able to behead him by the

Liuli Coast. His head was even hung up on the city gates as a war trophy.

As of now, even though the Beiqi Army forces could not promise a steady win against someone of the Ghost King Level, at least they still had the ability to fight against them.

Although everyone knew that it was all because the European server players did not understand their complete strength. However, their words still made the Beiqi players feel very unhappy.

It felt like they were underestimating them.

Hence, the original players started their act of pretence!

# Chapter 212 - I Suspect They Were Cheating

## Chapter 212: I Suspect They Were Cheating

The sudden blue vortex that emerged left the Hidden Dragon Ghost General in shock. The millions of Beiqi forces that appeared after that stunned him even more.

He had never heard of any force that had the ability to transport millions of troops through the air aside from the Yin Talisman itself.

Besides, it had to be the Yin Talisman from His Excellency Cangxu. They were in the Land of Cangxu after all.

His Excellency Cangxu was already dead, though. Therefore, the sudden appearance of the Beiqi Expeditionary Force made the Hidden Dragon Ghost General completely dumbfounded.

“Brothers of the European server, retreat and pass the front line to us!” Liu Chai shouted through the zone channel.

“Let’s do this together!” Li Xing replied swiftly.

Liu Chai helplessly shook his head once he heard him. After all, they were insisting to fight at the front line just for the benefits. For them, the Hidden Dragon Army were merely tantalizing prestige points. They were not trying to prove their bravery or anything.

“Brothers, attack them from the front. For prestige!” Liu Chai simply took the lead and shouted a war cry in their live chat channel.

“For prestige!” the Beiqi players bellowed in sync before advancing toward the Hidden Dragon Army from the left.

“We are charging as well!” Li Xing issued an attack command at that same moment.

Both sides of the army intersected at the front.

“Hey, hey, fuck. Beiqi players, are you guys insane!? What’s with the rush?”

“Fuck, what’s happening, why did they move to the right?”

...

Both armies intersected. Rune Warriors from the Beiqi faction stood in front and blocked out all the European server players with their strong physiques, pushing them to the right.

Every single one of the Beiqi players only had one thought in their mind. Don’t stop us from getting those prestige points, don’t stop us from being pretentious!

After pushing the group of European server players away from the front lines, Liu Chai began to take command.

“Mages, use the Water Turret!”

Just as the last of Liu Chai’s words fell, the blue Element of Water behind the Beiqi Army fluctuated and dispersed. A line of Water Turrets were then finished constructing efficiently.

The Hidden Dragon was astonished and enraged at the same time when they realized that the force which suddenly appeared was actually the reinforcements of the Hidden Dragon’s latest force.

However, the battle had begun once more. The sophora staff was waved again as a gust of black wind was sent forward, trying to create an upwind effect.

The Hidden Dragon Army also started to charge forward.

“Warriors to the front, listen to my command...”

Liu Chai let out a smile as he watched the approaching Hidden Dragon Army that was about to collide with the players.

“Rune Masters, sapphires! Drought Zombies, Blood Qi Shields!”

The soldiers in the front row roared collectively. The sapphires’ rays flickered as the strong Power of Blood Qi emerged and collided with the oncoming Hidden Dragon Army.

Chaos did not happen this time round as the onslaught of the enemy was held back by the warriors with strong physiques on the front lines.

“Rune Masters, rubies! Drought Zombies, Blood Qi! Hold them back!”

Just as Liu Chai finished speaking, the red rays of light that were located at the front of the Beiqi Army gleamed brightly. Multiple scarlet paw prints swept toward the Hidden Dragon Army, bringing down most of their frontline forces.

“Water Turrets! Drown them!” the Mages who had their energies recharged and were waiting for the command released the Element of Water bullets straight away.

A dense bullet rain fell in an instant, beating down rows and rows of Hidden Dragon Warriors.

The European server players were flabbergasted as they watched the scene.

They originally thought that when the two armies merged, they would definitely have a powerful fighting force. Then, they would utilize the resurrection ability and would own the advantage to win this battle.

Who knew that the Beiqi Army could be so intimidating? They could completely suppress the Hidden Dragon Army’s force with their own strength in the first wave of confrontation. The cooperation skills which their team had demonstrated was simply dazzling.

“Assassins and killer squads, harvest their remaining blood while they are having internal chaos!”

At that moment, two figures appeared among the Beiqi Army.

They merged into one in the air before shooting downward like a sharp sword. After falling into the enemy’s army, a huge dark lotus shadow gradually bloomed on the ground. The Hidden Dragon Warriors, who were within the targeted area, fell to the ground instantaneously.

“Murphy, all the best, get more of that prestige!”

“Yep, all the best!”

After that, the two figures merged into the shadows and began to wander within the Hidden Dragon Army, turning into a reaper of death.

At that moment, another two figures rushed out of the player’s army and hurried forward.

The conspicuous Nine Spiritual Swords behind Ao Jian’s back dispersed following his hand gesture, turning into a sword array with a strong Sword Qi as it descended and killed a whole bunch of Hidden Dragon Warriors.

Under Qi Ming’s Ghost Realm, the dead spirits roared, seeking for flesh and blood that could be devoured. It was really a dance of the ghosts.

...

Every single one of the representatives of the top Beiqi players who were extremely powerful completely amazed the European server players.

They could not imagine that the power to kill off strong opponents with just a wave of an arm could possibly be mastered by players. They felt astonished but also envious.

At least now they knew, these were powers which they could possibly possess in the future!

“Are these the hackers of Beiqi you mentioned?” Li Xing peered at Reinhardt and asked in shock.

“Yep, every one of them are top-notch. Their strengths are terribly formidable!” Reinhardt could not help but to laugh bitterly.

Jason, “Indeed, they are quite... scary!”

...

That moment, the assassin players at the rear quickly rushed out of the defensive line formed by the warriors. After the Shadow Step was activated, the players took the form of phantoms, constantly waiting for an opportunity to strike during the chaos.

With the help of the tough Naraka Realm God, they got to reap every life in their every attack.

“Aww... boss, can’t you let me out? I want to fight, too! I want to snatch that prestige, too! I don’t want to just help with the refill of health points!” Sun Qi the dog was struggling to break free from Gu Yu’s hands. He felt hurt when he saw that other players were busy reaping prestige while all he could do was to help with healing.

What about the talk regarding the hopes of civilian players rising to the top? They could no longer live on days like these anymore.

“Just do your job and heal others’ health. You will get your chance to do what you want when their army is beaten to a pulp. They are currently at the stage of a collaboration battle, so you better be patient!” Gu Yu furiously landed a loud slap on the dog’s head as he felt resentful toward him for failing to meet his expectations and he was impatient to see some improvement. Through this slap, he hoped he could calm down.

The dog immediately lifted up his head while showing a pitiful expression, “Boss, are you sure?”

“Yes, so just heal them first!” Gu Yu said helplessly.

...

The power displayed by the Beiqi Army did not only surprise the European server players, but it also shocked the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

He realized that the situation was turning for the worse as soon as he witnessed his forces being defeated by the players.

He then fixed his gaze onto Liu Chai who was commanding the battle behind the players. His eyes were filled with hatred as he waved his sophora staff, forming a stream of black rays which drew an arc across the air before blasting toward Liu Chai.

The moment he realized it was coming for him, it was too late for Liu Chai to dodge.

Liu Chai was startled and promptly raised his right arm in front of him.

Boom!

The huge impact pushed the players around him away while Liu Chai's figure left a trail of ten yards from his original place.

"Not bad!" Liu Chai slowly straightened his figure before raising his right arm and pointing a middle finger at the Hidden Dragon Ghost General who was standing afar.

That was a powerful hit, but his right arm was Mu Zhiguang's right arm, so his defense could never be broken by the Hidden Dragon Ghost General's force.

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General widened his eyes in surprise. He then waved his sophora staff once again, sending a few rays of black light toward him.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

After blocking the hits continuously, Liu Chai was warded off from where he was standing again. However, there was not a single scratch left on his



right arm.

“A fucking Qilin arm indeed, love it!”

Liu Chai felt content with the strong defensive power his right arm had. He gestured a thumbs down sign to provoke the Hidden Dragon Ghost General after that.

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General’s face was distorted with rage as his hands started grasping even more tightly onto his staff.

“God, he can even resist the attack of the Hidden Dragon Ghost General!” Jason could not believe his eyes when he saw what just happened.

“There is no way I would believe that this game cannot be rigged. It might just be a problem with our server. I bet the other server cheats all the time. I am going to buy one of those arms, too!”

“I also strongly suspect that it was rigged! How could they possibly be so strong!?”

...

The European server players were having a lot of discussions among themselves. To be honest, they were not convinced with the cheat theory themselves, yet they could not explain the players’ outstanding performance.

“Let’s all attack! Don’t let the soul coins and experience go to waste!” Li Xing howled once again in the zone channel when he saw their advantage.

When they realized that now was a good opportunity to earn some soul coins, the Cangxu players gathered once again and proceeded with their attack.

The Beiqi Army saw what they were trying to do and immediately sprung to action to block them from advancing.

What a joke! The cross-server battle was carried out for prestige all along. This wave of creatures was their trophy and they would never give it up.

The unsatisfied Cangxu players tried to take another route, but the Beiqi Army immediately reformed, keeping them on the outside. That made the European server players grit their teeth with hatred.

Just say so if you want to snatch the benefits away. Don't be pretentious and say things like it was for our own good and you're afraid of us getting hurt. This is simply too irritating!

The newer players had no choice but to hide at the back while they watched the Beiqi players kill sprightly.

At least they managed to discover something new. It seemed that the reward given by the cross-server event was high for creature hunting, otherwise they would not have worked so hard.

"Fine. We can also expand our range of leveling up with the Hidden Dragon Ghost General gone. At least the development of the European server players can speed up," Li Xing smiled helplessly as he had no choice but to say so.

"It's a long way to surpass the achievements of the first server, but I believe that we can do it!" Reinhardt said solemnly.

"That's right! After this battle, we can work hard and level up. If they can do it, why can't we!?" Jason encouraged them by the side.

However, the main lead of the battle was undeniably the cross-server Beiqi Expeditionary Forces. No one could change that fact.

The armies of the Hidden Dragon Ghost General felt defeated under the strong suppression of the Beiqi Army.

Even some of the ghost soldiers started to retreat toward the back and did not dare to obey further orders to charge.

The warriors' performance made the Hidden Dragon Ghost General realize that they had lost this battle. They were not on par with the enemy's forces at all.

He thought of using the decapitation movement to cause a distraction among the enemy's armies. But the commander-in-chief was as tough as a turtle's shell, not hurt at all from any of his attacks launched from afar.

That person even provoked him with weird hand gestures after he managed to block off all his attacks.

He also thought of rushing forward and killing the army by himself. However, he specialized in spells and his close combat ability was weak.

He felt a sudden chill in his heart especially when he saw the various powers demonstrated by them such as the blooming of the dark shadow lotus, the ghost raging realm, the Sword Qi Formation and the enormous number of phantoms from the Naraka Realm. He was afraid that if he advanced further, he would sacrifice his life.

He then realized he could not continue fighting like that.

Since he already had Yuanxu as his pillar of support, he could temporarily retreat and let Yuanxu order his troops to annihilate all these forces in the future.

He followed this train of thought and decided to withdraw his troops.

However, the Beiqi players would never let them off the hook so easily. All of them were chasing after them while shouting, "Prestige, don't go!"

# Chapter 213 - The Dog And The Knight

Chapter 213: The Dog And The Knight

The arrogant Hidden Dragon Army, who once had the upper hand, were forced to retreat under the hot pursuit of the players.

They even retreated toward the interior of the Hidden Dragon Marsh.

However, the Beiqi players had no intention of letting them go.

After all, the reward for defeating monsters in the game had never been so high. Killing this one creature would not only give them soul coins and experience, but also prestige points that could not simply be purchased.

In the eyes of the players, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General was like a treasure full of resources. Upon defeating the monster, players would be rewarded a whopping 80,000 prestige points.

The players of the Beiqi Army were all enticed by the enormous benefit.

“Stop running! You’re a wrench if you continue running!”

“Prestige, how dare you run away from us? Be obedient and become our resources!”

“Don’t let the Hidden Dragon Ghost General escape. We have to make him stay behind no matter what!”

...

The enraged roar of the players had scared the warriors of the Hidden Dragon Army to death.

All the warriors that were caught up in the moment were instantly besieged by the hungry wolf-like players and died in a blink of an eye. All of them were scared stiff by the scene.

To them, war was war. However, since they had already retreated, they did not comprehend the purpose behind the players pursuing them further.

During the chase, the group attack formation of the players became lax and was no longer organized. It was so that they could efficiently catch up with the group ahead.

The warriors of the Hidden Dragon Army were even more disorganized than the players. They wished they could grow an extra pair of legs to aid them in their escape from the jaws of those hungry wolves.

The Cangxu players all cheered when they saw this scene and started to dash forward, following behind the Beiqi players.

They always had to back down when facing the Hidden Dragon Army. Even though they were not the ones who defeated the Hidden Dragon Army this time, the feeling of the hunt was cathartic, allowing them to vent out the anger within them.

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General was fuming as he witnessed his warriors perish behind him. He promptly turned around and waved his magic wand. The pearl tip of the magic wand flashed, accompanied by a gust of black wind that swept toward his rear.

In the state of upwind, the players' speed of pursuit immediately slowed down.

“Kill squad, can you interrupt his skill?” Liu Chai yelled in the live chat channel.

“I'll try!” Ao Jian stood up. The Nine Spiritual Swords behind him merged into one in the air before shooting forward.

However, when the distance between them exceeded a hundred yards, the control of the Spiritual Swords became weak and started to vibrate. Then, it was shot back by a ray of black light when it got closer to the Hidden Dragon Ghost General!

“I can’t, he’s too far away!” Ao Jian said regretfully.

“Let us try!” Murphy and Little Pomelo volunteered.

Their bodies subsequently merged into a dark shadow and flitted past the warriors of the Hidden Dragon Army at the speed of light. They quickly approached the Hidden Dragon Ghost General, unaffected by the wind resistance.

However, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General seemed to have realized their presence.

As soon as the two of them emerged from the shadows, they saw multiple rays of black light streaking toward them.

Fortunately, both of them were nimble. They rapidly switched positions and shifted their bodies to dodge the attack.

Nevertheless, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General had once again widened the gap between them.

After a few more tries, both of them retreated.

“It’s impossible. The Hidden Dragon Ghost General’s skills have no cooldown. We can’t even get close to him!”

Seeing that the players failed to approach Hidden Dragon Ghost General, Liu Chai looked to Qi Ming, Gu Yu, and the others for help.

Everyone shook their heads.

The hearts of the Beiqi players ached as they saw the Hidden Dragon Army running further and further away.

How could our prestige points run away just like that?

“I have an idea!”

At that moment, a voice sounded in the live chat channel followed by the appearance of a figure at their main force’s faction.

Hearing this, Liu Chai and the others immediately looked at Reinhardt who had just arrived.

“Quickly spill the beans... what’s your idea? If we don’t speed up, we’ll lose them for good!”

“I have an assault skill in armored form. It will not stop until it attacks the target. But my mount died in the battle just now and is in resurrection cooldown mode. I need a good mount!” Reinhardt said solemnly as he looked at the crowd.

“A mount? Where can we find you a mount? Our mounts are all non-digitized zombie wolves, they can’t...” while Liu Chai was speaking, he looked at Sun Qi the White Phantom.

Seeing this, Gu Yu and the others were stunned for a moment. Then they seemed to have understood something and looked at the dog, too.

“Cough... hey dog, can we discuss something?” Liu Chai asked embarrassingly.

“I refuse! I would rather die than to agree. Don’t even think that I don’t know what you want me to do!” Sun Qi replied with a horrified look as he began to move backward.

“Dog, I’m sorry that you have to do this. But you have great speed! Plus the assault skill possessed by this brother, I believe you can catch up with the Hidden Dragon Ghost General in no time. Let’s interrupt his skills first, then we’ll talk!” Gu Yu persuaded.

“I refuse! I’d rather die!” Sun Qi grit his teeth while his face was full of wrath and grief.

Being a dog is already depressing enough. Now you want me to be a mount? In your dreams!

“Little brother, it’s important to see the bigger picture and sacrifice oneself for the benefit of the public. I think this idea is feasible!” Qi Ming also tried to convince him.

“I refuse! Benefit of the public my foot! I’d rather die than become a mount!”

“Dog, what about this? Since it’s a huge sacrifice to make, if we manage to defeat the Hidden Dragon Ghost General, the right to slay him will belong to you!” the commander-in-chief Liu Chai tempted him with an offer.

“I refuse... wait a minute, are you serious!?”

The right to slay the Hidden Dragon Ghost General would promise him a reward of 80,000 prestige points. The value made the dog’s originally firm decision waver.

“Everyone will agree to what I just said!” Liu Chai reassured him.

Hearing this, Sun Qi looked at the crowd and realized everyone was nodding their heads.

This made his determination fall apart. In the end, he chose to bow before the huge benefit.

“I’ll do it!” the dog clenched his teeth.

Everyone could not help but grin when they heard him agree. The one who had the broadest smile was undoubtedly Reinhardt.

As an experienced player, he had always heard of the White Phantom, this powerful combat auxiliary. The previous phantom was an existence that low rank players could not reach, but he never expected to be able to ride him in his entire life.

“Hop on!” the dog grit his teeth while looking at Reinhardt.



“Okay!” with an excited heart, Reinhardt straddled on the dog’s back.

Reinhardt had a large physique whereas the size of the dog was not larger than that of an orange cat. Once he sat on him, the dog’s body was covered completely by Reinhardt’s armor.

At the sight of this scene, Liu Chai and the others’ faces were flushed as they tried to hold in their laughter, but they were already laughing hysterically in their hearts.

“Let’s go! Brother, you can start running first. I’m going to activate the skill!”

Hearing this, Sun Qi’s heart was full of embarrassment. However, when he thought of having the right to slay the Hidden Dragon Ghost General, he clenched his teeth and started to charge forward.

“Dark Assault!”

At that moment, Reinhardt activated the assault skill. A force quickly surrounded them, causing their speed to increase all of a sudden.

Under the blessing of the skill, the dog turned into an actual phantom and dashed forward with increasing speed. The Hidden Dragon Warriors along the way were all knocked off to the side. Nothing could stop him.

Reinhardt, who was sitting on the dog’s back, was astounded.

This speed...

Multiple descriptions such as lightning speed, as fast as the meteor shower, and everything is fleeting flashed through Reinhardt’s brain, but he ultimately summed them up in one word: impressive!

Liu Chai and the others could not help but guffaw at the sight of this scene, each of them laughing hysterically.

While charging, Reinhardt, who was riding Sun Qi, seemed to be gliding forward on the ground in a sitting posture as the figure of the small dog

could not be seen. That sight made them burst out in laughter.

Meanwhile, a thought came across Reinhardt's mind.

I really want to keep this dog as my mount. His charging speed and strength are extraordinary. He is truly a knight's dream choice!

# Chapter 214 - I'M Not A Mount

## Chapter 214: I'm Not A Mount

With the aid of Sun Qii's powerful attributes, Reinhardt galloped through the ranks of the Hidden Dragon Army. He was as unstoppable as the God of War.

Along the way, any warriors who tried to stop them were sent flying. All because they failed to gauge the combined strength attributes of the duo.

The sense of pleasure made Reinhardt cheer uncontrollably.

The dog, who was running with all his might, gnashed his teeth when he heard Reinhardt's cheer. If it were not for his constant self-reminders about the 80,000 prestige points reward, he would have turned around and bitten Reinhardt to death.

"Woohoo! Woohoo!" Reinhardt was still shouting excitedly. The Beiqi players were almost out of breath from laughing as they watched them from the back.

"We... we're in the middle of a war! All of you... please be more serious, and stop laughing! Hahaha!" Liu Chai immediately rebuked the players when he saw them falling over each other while laughing uncontrollably.

However, after he finished talking, he could not help but laugh uproariously himself.

Some meddlesome players had even begun filming a video of them, ready to make it into a GIF or a meme. Meanwhile, the clueless dog was still fervently sprinting toward the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

At that moment, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General had already noticed them charging toward him.

He promptly commanded the warriors to form a blockade. At the same time, the wand in his hand began to fill with energy. Three rays of black light subsequently shot toward them.

“He’s using his skills! Brother, brace yourself!”

“Got it!”

After replying, the dog stopped charging forward. Instead, he started to dodge the attack agilely.

That scene induced another burst of laughter from the players. As they were standing at the back, all they saw was Reinhardt sitting on the floor hopping left and right while advancing.

With the help of the dog’s agility, they easily dodged two of the spells, but Reinhardt had to withstand the last spell by himself.

Despite that, Reinhardt did not suffer much damage from the attack because of the strong immunity of the Dark Knight and the sharing of health due to the dog’s mounted state.

“Speed up! Armored Assault!”

As Reinhardt let out a roar, a ray of purple and red light shrouded the both of them, increasing their speed once again.

This time, Reinhardt immediately locked on the Hidden Dragon Ghost General as his assault target. Simultaneously, the dog also stopped dodging in this state and charged furiously toward the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

Working together, they pushed forward bravely, every step bringing them closer to the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

This made the Hidden Dragon Ghost General panic, so he hurriedly cast a few offensive spells at them before turning around to escape.

Nonetheless, the distance between the two sides had been drawn closer. Accompanied by Reinhardt's excited yell, they mercilessly collided straight into the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

The collision was not too damaging for the Hidden Dragon Ghost General. Instead, it managed to disrupt the spell energy that had originally consolidated on the tip of his magic wand. These energy fluctuations caused the black wind to disperse.

"Brothers, charge! Prestige is coming!" the players who witnessed the scene got excited and started to dash forward while screaming.

Without the disturbance of the black wind, their speed increased, gradually closing the gap between them and the Hidden Dragon Army.

"Brother, retreat! We'll charge again later when he releases the black wind!"

"Damn, I have to do this again?" hearing this, Sun Qi couldn't help but clench his teeth.

"What if the Hidden Dragon Ghost General's skills can be cooled down? Don't be mad. Didn't they already promise you the good stuff?" since he was reluctant to get down, Reinhardt could only try to persuade the dog.

"Okay!" the enraged dog had no choice but to run backward, bringing Reinhardt with him.

Reinhardt was having a great time as he killed the enemies with his rifle along the way.

At first, Sun Qi was irritated by Reinhardt's occasional cheer while sitting on his back.

However, he soon noticed that even if Reinhardt was the one who killed the Hidden Dragon Warriors, he could still obtain prestige points. This realization made him cease his internal complaints and he started to charge around with Reinhardt, targeting crowded places.

Both of their existences were like troublemakers on the battlefield. They messed up the already disorganized Hidden Dragon Army, causing them to clash with one another while retreating. It was the epitome of chaos, with even their speed of retreat affected.

“Charge!”

“Advance to the left!”

“Turn right this time, turn right!”

“Shut up! I’m not a mount!” the dog could not help but to growl.

Although he wanted prestige, his teeth could not help but to grind with hatred when he realized Reinhardt was treating him like a mount.

“Yes, brother. No problem!” Reinhardt reassured excitedly.

At that moment, the Hidden Dragon Warriors formed a wall, attempting to stop them from advancing.

“Halt!” Reinhardt shouted subconsciously.

“Halt your foot! I’m not your mount!” the dog who was infuriated and instantaneously accelerated, crashing into the wall just to prove to Reinhardt that he was not just an animal he could command.

With the combined force of the duo, the players at their rear quickly caught up with them, gradually devouring the enemy from the back.

Seeing the grim situation, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General’s face turned ashen. He raised his magic wand again, intending to create a wave of black wind.

“Brother, charge! The target, Hidden Dragon Ghost General, is going to use his skill again!” Reinhardt pointed his rifle at the Hidden Dragon Ghost General while bellowing enthusiastically.

Sun Qi did not reply to him this time. He swore quietly in his heart that when the battle is over, he would bite the bastard on his back to death a hundred times to vent his hatred toward him.

Nevertheless, he clenched his teeth and changed direction when he remembered about the 80,000 prestige points reward. Once again, he charged toward the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

The black wind was disrupted again under the combined attack of the duo.

Without the disturbance caused by the spells, the players at the back started to kill passionately. Many of the Cangxu players joined them, insanely charging toward the enemy.

Due to the complete loss of morale, the warriors of the Hidden Dragon Army no longer even had the will to resist. Even if they were caught, they would only struggle with all their might and try to escape.

Therefore, the players could easily make their kill. The battle went from a semi-resistance to a one-sided slaughter.

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General could not find a counterattack strategy under the hot pursuit of the players' forces.

As a Ghost General who specializes in spells, his melee ability was weak. Although he had various growing ranges and crowd control abilities, his warriors had completely lost their fighting spirit. No matter how strong his growing range was, it was of no use.

Besides, his crowd control abilities were restrained by the super speedy duo. Each one of their attacks always managed to hit him at crucial times.

Even more to his despair was that in this duo, one possessed a strong defense whereas the other had strong healing abilities. When they worked together, they were an invincible team.

Facing such a duo, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General felt helpless.

“Ahoy there!”

At that moment, accompanied by Reinhardt's cheer, the dog and knight duo charged from the side once again.

When the Hidden Dragon Ghost General witnessed this scene, he grit his teeth and swung his magic wand at both of them.

“I will beat you at any cost!”



# Chapter 215 - Live Performance Of The Staff Technique

## Chapter 215: Live Performance Of The Staff Technique

Although the Hidden Dragon Ghost General only specialized in spells, he was fairly capable in close combat, too.

He wielded his magic wand powerfully, baffling the super duo. If it weren't for Sun Qi's healing abilities, both of them would have been knocked out long ago.

In the end, they were forced to keep a low profile and retreat temporarily.

After forcing back the duo, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General, who was holding his magic wand, suddenly began to question the reason he chose to specialize in spells. After all, this battle proved that close combat is the strongest.

Nevertheless, it was too late for him to regret his decisions now. Although he had suppressed that duo in close combat, he still couldn't kill them.

However, as soon as he showed any sign of using his spells, the duo would charge toward him again fiercely.

The Hidden Dragon Army was already in chaos. They did not even retreat in unison and were all running for their lives. It could be concluded that they had lost the battle.

This time, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General felt resentful.

He knew that not only would he lose the battle, but his influence over the Hidden Dragon Region in the future would also be weakened.

This would affect his position in the heart of the future king.

Despite feeling resentful, he knew that escaping was the most pressing matter at hand. Therefore, he immediately turned around as he was prepared to abandon the army and leave on his own.

However, the players would never let him go this easily. The kill squad, who had already gotten near, appeared one by one, surrounding him in a circle.

Ao Jian, Qi Ming, Gu Yu, and the others, were the ones who all passed the Ghost Commander Trial. Although they were no match for the Hidden Dragon Ghost General, they still had a huge advantage which was having more bodies.

“Which forces sent you here? Why did you invade Cangxu?” the Hidden Dragon Ghost General questioned with a somber face as he watched the players surrounding him.

“Beiqi Army! Gu Yu!”

“Beiqi Army! Liu Chai!”

“Beiqi Army! Qi Ming!”

...

It was their first expedition, so naturally, they wanted to leave their names behind, hence they revealed their origins without any hesitation.

“Beiqi!”

After knowing the origin of the force that appeared out of nowhere, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General was stunned.

From his point of view, Beiqi seemed to have fallen into turmoil long ago, and could not even protect themselves. How could they suddenly invade Cangxu? Could it be that Beiqi had unified? And the new king wanted to expand his territory?

“You Beiqi Army wish to start a war against Cangxu!”

“Not really, that’s the job of the Army of Xianxu. We’re just here to beat you up!”

When Liu Chai finished talking, he waved his hand. The group closed in and launched an attack on the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

As the Hidden Dragon Ghost General promptly swung his magic wand, several rays of light shot out of it, attacking their locked-on targets.

“Brother, charge!”

At that moment, the dog and the knight duo suddenly appeared and ferociously crashed into him, causing him to stagger backward.

“Retreat!”

“Shut up, bastard!”

“Alright, brother!”

After one attack, the duo swiftly retreated whereas Liu Chai and the others, who managed to parry the energy attack, charged once again, attacking the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General was forced to swing his magic wand and change to close combat. During offense and defense, he had to find opportunities to release his spells.

However, the super duo always appeared out of nowhere, making surprise attacks from every direction. The Hidden Dragon Ghost General was so livid to the point where he almost coughed blood.

Looking at the increasing amount of bruises on his body, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General finally gave up on spell attacks. He transferred all the Yin energy in his body into the magic wand and engaged in close combat with the players.

Although he specialized in spells, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General had lived for many years after all. Therefore, he was not sluggish when it came

to close combat skills as he could wield the magic wand in his hands with ease.

Hit, lift, hack, cover, press, cloud, sweep, thrust, support, raise, hook, pluck...

It was occasionally offensive and impenetrable. The essence of the staff technique was displayed to the fullest by the Hidden Dragon Ghost General, which made Liu Chai and the others unable to break his defense for a while.

“Fuck you! Did you train in martial arts? Can’t you fight fairly with us like a Mage?” Liu Chai cried out when he was knocked off again.

Hearing this, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General’s face was full of resentment. At that moment, he was very frustrated with himself!

Why did I specialize in spells!?

Isn’t it better to learn close combat skills instead!?

If I’d learned how to carry out close combat, they would never stand a chance against me!

This is so frustrating!

However, the battle had to continue. He did not dare be distracted, so he kept waving his magic wand, blocking the attacks from all sides.

“Everyone, surround and throw your spells at him. Use ranged spells. Let him continue waving until he dies of exhaustion!” Liu Chai stopped attacking and began to command the army of players to surround the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

“We should back away, too. Those who have ranged skills, don’t be afraid to use them!”

Gu Yu and the rest backed away upon hearing him, creating some space around the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

“Dark Shadow Dart!”

“Surging Fist!”

“Devouring Ghost Wreath!”

“Blood Qi Blaze!”

...

At that moment, the roles of both sides had switched. The close combat players started to use ranged spells whereas the Hidden Dragon Ghost General continued to swing his magic wand to parry their attacks.

As time passed...

My arms are aching! My arms are really aching!

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General almost shed tears when he watched the densely packed skills streaking toward him.

He could feel the numbness of his hands as he kept waving the magic wand without rest. However, he could not stop. He would be beaten if he did.

“Stay like this, don’t stop, continue waving for me,” signed Liu Chai.

Standing among the players, Liu Chai took out a pack of sunflower seeds from his inventory to eat while watching the Hidden Dragon Ghost General with a smile.

“Does Beiqi really want to become the enemy of Cangxu?” the Hidden Dragon Ghost General could not break free thus he could only threaten Liu Chai.

“We already told you that Cangxu has nothing to do with us... we’re just here to beat you up!”

While speaking, Liu Chai turned around and shouted at the people behind him, “Are we live yet?”

“Boss, we are!” the rear guild members shouted.

“Good! Good!” Liu Chai nodded his head in satisfaction.

At this moment, in the official web forum, the number of players watching the livestream surged.

[Beiqi Expeditionary Force: The Hidden Dragon Ghost General Will Perform His Staff Technique Online, Don't Miss It!]

Many of those who had not joined the expeditionary force this time were curious about the Land of Cangxu and the battle, hence they couldn't help check on the video.

However, the livestream content gave them the shock of their lives.

Watermelon\_Taro: “Confused. Are all of the Ghost Generals from Cangxu so friendly toward their guests? What's with the performance?”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Did all of you bully him? Why does he look so unwilling? How could you do this to him, don't you know how to win someone over by virtue? Look how scared you people made him, even sweat could be seen on his forehead (laughing emoji)!”

Assassin\_Creed: “Fuck! The expeditionary force gets this kind of treatment? They even have a big boss elite performing for them (dumbfounded emoji)!”

Broke\_Trash: “Hahaha, this Ghost General is freaking awesome. Why not we bring him back to Beiqi and let him perform everyday (laughing emoji)!”

Fat\_Happy\_Water: “Jealous. I'm green with envy because I didn't join the expedition!”

Happiness\_In\_The\_End: “Interesting... why don't we in Beiqi have such enthusiastic Ghost Generals or Ghost Kings (laughing emoji)?”

Hasaki: “Maybe it’s the region’s tradition? Cangxu’s Ghost Generals have to perform before battle (laughing emoji)!”

Watermelon\_Juice: “Reading the comments after watching the video made me burst out laughing. The talents in the forum are really increasing (laughing emoji)!”

...

“Everyone, he’s slowing down. Let’s give him some pressure and make him go faster!”

Following Liu Chai’s yell, the players’ skills came raining down in a more densely packed manner.

Seeing this, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General’s face turned pale. He immediately sped up his waving speed to cope with the attack.

“Aye, yes! Faster!”

“I’ll kill you!” the Hidden Dragon Ghost General gnashed his teeth while glaring at Liu Chai.

“If you still have energy left after performing for three hours, I’ll let you kill me!” Liu Chai said while smiling.

The Hidden Dragon Ghost General was rendered speechless.

He never expected that one day, he, a dignified Ghost General Level Elite, the overlord of a region, would be watched by others like a monkey in the circus.

The grief in the heart of the Hidden Dragon Ghost General was indescribable.

# Chapter 216 - Justice Will Never Be Absent

Chapter 216: Justice Will Never Be Absent

Two hours later...

Liu Chai raised the cup of water in his hands at the Hidden Dragon Ghost General, "Look at you, sweating so much. Do you want to stop and have a cup of water?"

Hearing this, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General's eyes were filled with grief and wrath. His lips parted and closed as if he wanted to say something.

At that moment, his pair of numb hands suddenly lost strength, causing the magic wand to slip out of his grasp.

The densely packed skills immediately smashed on his body, knocking him to the ground!

The output of the players also became more persistent when they noticed that the Hidden Dragon Ghost General was unable to hold on any longer.

Maybe even the Hidden Dragon Ghost General did not expect that he would face death under such oppressed circumstances.

Liu Chai had kept his promise and handed over the final right to slay the Ghost General to Sun Qi the White Phantom. After all, the little dog had suffered so much in this battle and it was thanks to his effort that they could defeat the Hidden Dragon Army.

The players also did not complain because if it was not for the dog, they might not even have the chance of gaining any prestige points, let alone obtaining the prestige from the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.



Sun Qi, who had done his best, burst into tears. He felt that he had finally made it.

He shook his body and turned to look at Reinhardt who was still sitting on his back, “Are you not going to get off?”

Reinhardt was disappointed. The war was over, after all, so he had no choice but to jump down.

But his heart would still miss the ride that was like lightning speed. It could only be described as exciting.

...

When the battle was completely over, a book gradually appeared in front of the players.

As a ray of light flashed across the four large gold characters, the pages started to open slowly.

[March 3, 2319, the Hidden Dragon Ghost General who pledged loyalty to Yuanxu had started a war with the Army of Xianxu. When the battle was at stake, the Beiqi Expeditionary Force arrived and fought hard to turn the tide. Together with the Army of Xianxu, they won the battle in the end!]

At the bottom of these sentences, there was a picture of the players surrounding the Hidden Dragon Ghost General.

[Server Announcement: Every player of the Army of Xianxu who participated in this battle will receive a title: Unyielding Protector!]

[Unyielding Protector (Purple Title)]:

Dedicated to all the players who participated in the Xianxu Defensive War. Your efforts have brought peace to our homes.

Title Effect: Able to enter the Naraka Realm Instance Dungeon that has yet to open in advance.

[Server Announcement: All Beiqi players who participated in the expedition will be rewarded 100 prestige points. The blood you shed for our allies will be recorded in the Annals of Great Battles, and at the same time it will remain engraved in their hearts!]

The game notification that appeared made both servers' players cheer together.

Especially the European server players.

From being suppressed at the beginning of the war to the hot pursuit in the end, such real war experience had brought great satisfaction to them after achieving the final victory.

It was their first time being on the battlefield and they were glad to be able to feel the surge of adrenaline rush in such an atmosphere.

This battle made the European server players understand the terrific abilities of the others whose server had launched three months earlier than theirs.

The strength they displayed was also fascinating.

The huge gap did not bring disappointment but instead ignited their desire to succeed.

Although they were allies in the Underworld, they were still going to be enemies in the future cross-server wars.

At that moment, the European server players were already quietly preparing for the future cross-server war.

If they were not strong enough, then they needed to become stronger.

They already had full control of the Hidden Dragon Region, so the area for training had been expanded. They had plenty of resources as the interior of the region still had some of the Hidden Dragon Warriors who ran away earlier.

They were already excited to start leveling up and becoming stronger.

At that moment, a game notification rang again in the mind of the Beiqi players.

[Game Notification: The War of the Supportive Expedition Force has come to an end. The portal will reopen in three hours, please be prepared. During this period, you are free to roam around the Land of Cangxu as you like!]

Realizing that they had three hours left to stay in Cangxu, many Beiqi players started to wander around to observe the difference in the sceneries between the Land of Cangxu and their native Beiqi.

There were also some players who were trading spiritual materials with the European server players, preparing to bring some of the local specialties back home.

There were some other players who followed the European server players back to Hidden Dragon Village, hoping to see if there were any chances of receiving a special quest here since anything was possible in the game.

...

Right now, Reinhardt was en route back home with a smile plastered on his face. Thinking of his heroic act during the battle, he couldn't help but feel proud of himself.

Just then, a black figure dashed out of the bushes and threw him to the ground suddenly.

Reinhardt was shocked and tried to fight back, only to realize that it was Sun Qi the dog.

“Brother, what are you...?”

“I'll bite you to death, you bastard! Wasn't it fun riding on my back just now...” the dog grit his teeth and bit Reinhardt.

...

Currently on the east side of the Hidden Dragon Marsh.

The appearance of a flash of golden light put a pleasant smile on Hu He's face.

“I leveled up again! What a pleasure!”

His level was way higher compared to the others on the European server. Although many players came to him, he managed to beat them to a hasty retreat.

From Hu He's point of view, the Land of Cangxu was truly heaven. Even if he made a huge mistake, he could still get away with it and no one could do anything about him.

“Ah, I missed backstabs! The days of training without them are so relaxing as no disturbance at all.”

Hu He, who was sitting on the tip of an enormous rock, muttered proudly as he glanced at Cha Na's zombie spirit who knocked out a marsh crocodile with a punch.

“Backstab!”

Suddenly, a soft cry could be heard from behind him, and this shocked Hu He.

That familiar voice made Hu He remember the black and white screen that always appeared after this voice.

Stab!

Hearing the sound of the dagger thrusting into his body, Hu He turned around in disbelief.

“Big sister, this is the European server!” Hu He looked at Little Pomelo with grief.

“Being paid by someone to take care of a problem is a killer’s attainment. Moreover, I just happened to stop by because of convenience!” Little Pomelo stuck out her tongue and thrust her dagger forward.

Hu He’s lips twitched upon hearing her.

That’s too fake. We are on the European server now. Was it necessary to stop by and thrust a dagger in me? I seriously suspect that you’re addicted to stabbing me.

Stab!

Another dagger appeared in front of his chest, piercing deep into his heart.

Hu He did not have to turn around to know who did it.

“Big brother, please spare me. I’ve already run away to the European server. Don’t you think you’ve all gone too far? Can’t you spare any mercy?”

Hu He slowly turned around and glanced at Murphy while struggling to keep calm. Otherwise, he was afraid that his tears would just roll down his cheek uncontrollably.

“The mission was taken based on a bounty regardless of right or wrong,” Murphy said coolly.

This time, the Runes of Yin and Yang emerged and collided with Hu He. His health was instantly emptied by the explosion and the screen in front of him turned black once more.

Seeing Hu He on the ground, Little Pomelo skillfully took three continuous photos.

She even purposely turned on the beauty filter.

After settling everything, both of them held hands and walked back.

The European server players specially invited them to help this time with a pretty high price.

After they were done with this, they felt that they were a step closer toward a happy life in the future. They could not help but feel delighted.

...

The lid of the transparent gaming pod slowly opened, revealing Hu He who was lying inside with soulless eyes.

He suddenly recalled something said by the players in the forum.

“The backstab of justice might be late, but it would never be absent!”

Hu He’s heart was filled with grief because he was sent to trial again by a backstab. He then turned around all of a sudden and started hitting the gaming pod with his bare hands.

“This is such a horrible game! This is such a horrible game! I quit! I don’t want to play it anymore, I hate this game! It doesn’t provide any gaming experience at all, I’m not playing it anymore!”

After venting out his frustrations, Hu He huddled himself up in the gaming pod and started to sob, “I hate them! I hate...”

# Chapter 217 - The Emergence Of The Seal

Chapter 217: The Emergence Of The Seal

The crisis in Cangxu was temporarily relieved as the Beiqi Expeditionary Force came back victorious.

The Army of Xianxu marched into a period of rapid development.

Although the death crisis in the Void Ocean broke out again, it did not affect Beiqi. Therefore, Lu Wu was very calm.

Seeing the soul coins increase day by day, he felt that the days were just so laid-back.

Even so, Lu Wu's shut-in life made him feel distressed.

He had already forgotten how long it was since he last stepped out of his house.

He even needed Bei Li to help him do the shopping.

These days made him feel like a kitten confined to its cage. It was awful!

One day, he felt a sharp pain in his forehead when he was cultivating.

Thinking that something was wrong with the cultivation, Lu Wu stopped his internal energy circulation and trotted to the mirror to find out what happened.

Lu Wu was startled to discover that a pink lotus pattern had emerged on his forehead.

Confused, Lu Wu immediately went to Bei Li, who was stuffing potato chips into her mouth, to clear out his confusion.

Seeing the pink lotus pattern on his forehead, Bei Li was so shocked that she could not even bother eating her snacks.

Her reaction made Lu Wu uncertain about what was going on. He started to panic, too, as her reaction was as if he had cancer.

“Wu, the seal on your body has emerged!” Bei Li swallowed the snacks in her mouth and looked at Lu Wu solemnly.

“Is this serious?” Lu Wu was shocked.

“This is very serious because this seal represents the Deity of Beiqi, ‘Bei Li’ herself!”

“I know. You said that I was once Bei Li,” Lu Wu was exasperated. He felt that he could never bypass this history of his.

“It has another meaning, which is the symbol of the leader of the Heavenless Alliance!”

“No way, it can’t be!” Lu Wu was aghast.

“Don’t tell me that there will be things like going against Heaven waiting for me,” Lu Wu’s jaw dropped.

“No. Whether you choose to do so or not is your own choice. Since the seal appeared on your body, the people in Heaven will never let you go. So, now you only have two choices! One, use the power of the artifact to enter the Six Paths of Reincarnation to reincarnate and remove this seal temporarily...”

“Two! Two! Two!” Lu Wu immediately blurted out.

Are you kidding me? How could I agree to reincarnate when I have yet to even live my own life to the fullest? There’s no way I will do that.



Hearing this, Bei Li released a shallow, pent-up breath, “Wu, because you are a registered deity in the Underworld God List, this seal will always follow you no matter how many times you reincarnate. This is why you are in grave danger now. Those people from Heaven will most probably be able to track you down by sensing the seal!”

Hearing this, Lu Wu thought of the Demonic God.

It seemed that the Demonic God’s Divine Seal also remained after his reincarnation.

“However, I didn’t expect that the seal would appear so soon. If there’s enough time, you can totally assemble an army that can compete with the forces of Heaven. By that time, they won’t be able to do anything to you. But now, you’re in grave danger!”

Lu Wu’s expression also became somber.

“What else can I do other than reincarnate?”

“This is the second choice. Actually, you have already prepared the countermeasures long ago and the pawns will help you, too!” Bei Li could not help but sigh.

“Are you talking about North Sea and the others?” Lu Wu was surprised.

Bei Li nodded hard. Just when she was about to say something, her expression changed, “Wu, quick, let’s get to the Underworld!”

Hearing this, Lu Wu did not bother to question her and immediately waved his hand. The power of the artifact subsequently enveloped both of them and sent them to the Underworld.

After both of them left, a divine consciousness descended abruptly and flitted forward, constantly searching...

...

Before Lu Wu, who sought refuge in the Underworld, had the chance to ask what happened, he saw Bei Li waving her hand. Then, a ray of light appeared in the air and exploded into a blooming lotus.

“Go! Go to the Cliffs of Desperation!” Bei Li utilized the artifact and brought Lu Wu toward the direction of the Cliffs of Desperation.

At that moment, the sky of Beiqi was torn to a crack. A large white seal appeared and it released thousands of rays of golden light, like the sun shining brightly on the ground.

When Lu Wu, who was being carried by Bei Li, was illuminated by the golden light, the lotus seal on his forehead started to burn and glow.

“Beiqi rebel, how dare you come back!”

The thundering voice resonated throughout the sky and earth, then the white seal quickly pressed toward Lu Wu.

The speed at which Lu Wu and Bei Li moved was no match for the falling speed of the seal at all.

Just when the seal was about to smash onto them, a white figure suddenly appeared above them.

His left hand was behind his back while his right hand was raised at the sky, lifting the falling seal.

Lu Wu turned around in shock, only to realize that it was North Sea.

“Long time no see, teacher!” North Sea smiled and nodded to greet Lu Wu.

Shocked, Lu Wu did not know how to respond. After some contemplation, he finally replied, “Uhh... long time no see!”

“Who are you? Why are you harboring this sinful deity who went against Heaven?” the voice from the sky sounded again and a golden figure slowly emerged from the clouds.

“I am your grandfather!”

After he finished talking, North Sea pressed his palm upward. The seal instantly flew skyward and was kept by the golden figure in the sky.

“Are you part of the Heavenless Alliance? Then I shall bestow on you an endless hell!”

This time, the figure above threw three big seals, pressing down with the power of the sky and earth.

“I think you’re just sick of living. How dare you sentence me to hell. Don’t cry when you get beat up later!” North Sea spoke while flying upward, throwing three continuous punches at the golden figure.

The seemingly powerless punches did not have any fluctuation of energy. However, the base of the three golden seals in the sky sank suddenly, and three clear fist prints could be seen with prominent cracks around them.

“Where did you get such power while not being recorded in the Annals of Gods!?” the deity above seemed to be very surprised.

“I’ll be recorded soon enough!” North Sea laughed uproariously, his figure disappearing on the spot. When he reappeared, he was right beside the golden figure.

“Hundred Seals!” the golden figure seemed to be extremely shocked and roared in anger. Seals subsequently appeared around him, encircling and protecting him within.

“Break!” North Sea hurled his fists and his right arm turned black instantly, colliding with the golden seals around him.

Crack!

His black arm penetrated the barrier formed by the golden seals and swiftly grabbed the golden figure by the neck.

At the same time, a shadow of the Demonic God appeared behind North Sea.

“Hehehe!”

“Demonic God!” the Hundred Seals Deity’s expression changed.

Boom!

Scarlet flames burned on North Sea’s right arm. He grabbed the Hundred Seals Deity and fell toward the ground like a meteor.

This collision shook the Underworld like a fallen asteroid and caused the entire Beiqi to quake.

When North Sea reappeared, his left hand was grabbing the Hundred Seals Deity while his right hand was in his chest. With a jerk, a golden heart was extracted from his chest.

The Hundred Seals Deity’s body started to twitch uncontrollably, and the golden light on his body was slowly fading away.

At that moment, North Sea had a ferocious expression. He then shoved the golden heart into his mouth and swallowed it.

Roar!

His voice resounded through the sky. His whole body was ablaze with golden flames that were constantly burning his body, making deep cracks like a dried-up land.

“He is indeed a lunatic!” looking at North Sea who was screaming, Bei Li was astounded.

“Why?” Lu Wu who was aside immediately asked.

“He’s trying to use the Divine Fire in the heart of a deity to ignite his own Divine Fire... and to attain divinity in such a way goes against Heaven!”

“Is it dangerous?”

“As long as he succeeds in apotheosis, he will be hunted down by every single deity of Heaven. He’s like a firefly in the dark, wherever he might be, those in Heaven can always find him through the burning tracks of the Divine Fire! Trying to attain divinity this way is basically suicide! No one has ever done that and survived!” Bei Li’s face was particularly solemn.

# Chapter 218 - Fight Against Heaven

## Chapter 218: Fight Against Heaven

North Sea slowly let go of his hand that was holding onto the Hundred Seals Deity.

The body that was supposed to be invincible slid down to the ground, crumbling to dust as the wind blew it away.

“Arghhhhh!”

A turbulent white airflow suddenly formed around North Sea, swirling around him as it caused a windstorm.

With the help of the Divine Fire’s combustion, North Sea’s body started to crack as he underwent the most excruciating transmutation to attain divinity.

North Sea’s transformation alarmed many ancient forces of the Underworld.

Subconsciously, they turned their gaze toward Beiqi!

Over the course of time, there were few in the Underworld who dared to attain divinity using such a method.

One would alienate the strongest force of all three worlds by using this method. It was totally impossible to succeed without a strong perseverance.

Moreover, attaining divinity was only a knock on the door. The worst trial along the journey was where one would be hunted down by the world of the immortals.

That very moment, blood rained from the sky with flashes of lightning and storming thunder, as though declaring to the world that a new god was about to be born.

Rip!

A huge crack appeared across the sky, spanning across the horizon. Figures emerged from the crack as they looked at North Sea, who was still in the state of transmutation, with astonishment.

“He’s a rebel of the Heavenless Alliance!” the expression of the leader, Sky Tiger Deity, turned solemn.

The forces that caused the most trouble for the Underworld were not the Three Great Emperors, who did not interfere with worldly matters, nor the ancient hidden deities. Instead, it was the Heavenless Alliance.

They never forgot their enmity since the ancient past.

They did not succumb to living under the domination of Heaven, nor could they let go of the fall of the Underworld. They wanted to use their own power to wreck Heaven and make the Underworld great again.

This force had never been completely uprooted.

Even though their past leader, Bei Li, had been forced to reincarnate, they still managed to hide in the Underworld tenaciously.

“Rebel! Don’t you dare assassinate a god!” the Sky Tiger Deity’s howl formed an ancient character in the sky, landing on North Sea.

Bam!

North Sea smashed the rune with one punch, “Not only do I want to kill the gods, I want to attack Heaven and kill every single one of your kind... hahaha!”

As the Divine Fire burned, North Sea’s body trembled as if he was bearing a huge pain. Nonetheless, a demented smile was plastered on his face.

“His body can’t hold it anymore. If he battles under such a condition, his body will definitely disintegrate!” Bei Li said with a worried expression.

“Die, rebel!”

The Sky Tiger Deity widened his eyes as lightning surrounded him. Countless lightning bolts condensed to form a purple thunder cloud that was gushing with electrical juice while shining with tens of thousands of energy rays.

Boom! Bang!

A huge, thick rod of lightning fell suddenly from the sky. In that instant, the sky was lit up by purple light.

A fist seal shot toward the sky and collided with the thunderbolt.

The collision of the two energy sources caused extreme heat. The air was lit up on fire, forming countless, closely-packed cracks of space.

Bang!

The thunder cloud in the sky trembled and struck more lightning bolts.

This time the fist seal could not block it and was shattered in an instant.

The thick lightning bolts intersected in the sky, forming an even bigger lightning rod that struck fiercely on North Sea’s body.

As the purple rays faded, North Sea’s figure reemerged.

He was hunching his body with his arms hanging by his torso as the blazing Divine Fire burned his body. It seemed as if his condition was bad.

Drip, drip.

With blood flowing from his hanging arms, he slowly straightened his body and looked at the sky, his expression obstinate and unruly.



Boom! Boom! Boom!

Bolts of lightning struck as if it was the end of the world. The entire world was trembling under the thunder cloud's rampage. It was also the Sky Tiger Deity's way of announcing to the Underworld his arrival, intimidating them by force.

North Sea wanted to defend the lightning by raising his hand, but he stumbled and almost fell to the ground.

His body was regenerating under the burning of the Divine Fire. Even using his own energy became extremely difficult.

Just as lightning was about to strike him, a black shadow appeared behind him. It howled with anger and the loud roar pierced the sky, nullifying the attack.

"Kid, my incarnation can protect you just this once. You will need to save your own skin after this," the shadow of the Demonic God slowly faded while speaking to North Sea.

"Cough, cough... thanks, old friend."

"Stay alive for me!"

The moment the Demonic God finished speaking, his figure vanished.

"Since I have made up my mind, it would be terribly humiliating if I can't get past the first challenge!" North Sea laughed while shaking his head.

As he spoke, he clenched his right fist and hurled it toward the sky. The big fist seal transfigured into a fire-red python in the air, slithering upward. It shattered the lightning bolt that was falling from above and crashed into the thunder cloud.

The burning giant python then transformed into metal chains, binding the entire thunder cloud. Suddenly, the thunder cloud stopped churning.

The Sky Tiger Deity's expression changed because he realized that his connection with the thundercloud was cut off.

“Bei Li's Sealing Technique! You are Bei Li's reincarnation!” the Sky Tiger Deity was shocked and apoplectic.

Who was Bei Li? She was an ancient god in the Underworld, once a major threat to the power of Heaven, and more so the mortal enemy of their people. They had always wanted to get rid of her.

As the Sky Tiger Deity spoke, North Sea slowly raised his head. A pink lotus slowly bloomed from his forehead.

At the same time, Lu Wu found out in surprise that the heat on his forehead had receded. As he reached out his hand to touch his forehead, he realized that the lotus pattern was gone, too.

“He borrowed your seal to prove that he is the true reincarnation of Bei Li. Now you're safe!” Bei Li looked at North Sea who stood facing the heavens with a sad expression.

“You really are the reincarnation of Bei Li, the God of Rebellion! Hahaha, I must kill you today!” the Sky Tiger Deity waved his hand and a ray of white light pierced through the crack in the sky.

“How about that? Are you scared now? Hahaha!”

Seeing the white ray, North Sea laughed, his expression full of ridicule.

After confirming that North Sea was the reincarnation of Bei Li, the Sky Tiger Deity dared not to be careless. He immediately waved his hand backward, and the few people behind him started assembling a formation with him as the center. Thousands of purple rays gleamed all over the place.

The faint image of a burly, half-naked God of Thunder appeared in the sky. He had wings behind his back, three eyes, a red face and feet like that of a hawk's. He wielded a wedge in his left hand and a hammer in his right.

As the God of Thunder's hammer struck, lightning converged in the sky once again, attacking the Underworld over and over.

This time, without waiting for North Sea, three figures appeared by his side and hit upward with full force.

Arctic icicles shot out from the ground, growing upward.

A golden warhammer condensed by the Element of Earth spun rapidly in the air.

A fiery red and enormous sword pierced the sky, as if trying to split the sky in two.

Boom!

The surrounding space started to crack and fall like shattered glass and black distorted space crevices emerged everywhere.

However, even though Frozen and the two had combined their strength, they were still no match for the gods. Their attacks were suppressed by the lightning bolts, and the lightning once again struck the ground.

“Go, leave it to me!” North Sea widened his weak eyes before immediately shoving his fist upward.

A phoenix was conjured mid-air. It spread its wings and flew upward, fanning heat waves every time it flapped its wings.

When the lightning and the phoenix collided, purple and red energies formed a shockwave, squeezing one another.

“Go!” North Sea yelled again.

In fact, this battle had far exceeded North Sea's expectations. He knew that it was no use even if Frozen and the rest stayed back to help.

In this battle, he can only rely on himself.

“North Sea, you old fool! Even if you order me, I won’t go!”

Frozen’s hands were trembling. The extreme cold and thunder pressured him immensely. He felt as though his body would be crushed by the pressure of the lightning.

“Fuck you, you insolent brat! You’re gonna get your ass whooped after I’m done here!” facing a stubborn Frozen, North Sea lost his temper.

“You’ll need to survive this to beat his ass, you dumb old man!” Da Huo retorted.

“Boss, keep it together! We vow to protect you till you attain divinity!” Lie Shan scrunched his face and grit his teeth.

With the powers of the four combined, the thunder was suppressed on the top of their heads, unable to strike, but it was still pressing down on them inch by inch.

Bang! Boom!

The God of Thunder once again hammered with all his might. Thousands of lightning bolts struck and hit against the energy barrier.

Suddenly, purple light flashed, and the speed of the lightning increased.

Pop! Pop! Pop!

Frozen and the rest could not take it anymore. The veins in their body burst, soaking them in blood. Nevertheless, they clenched their teeth and kept on supporting the barrier.

They knew that the key to turning the tide lay in whether North Sea would be able to ignite his Divine Fire. Thus, they could not give up.

Bang! Boom!

The third wave of attacks struck.

“Go, you idiots!” as he saw how Frozen and the others were protecting him with their lives, North Sea could not resist shouting at them.

He had chosen this path of going against Heaven because of his mentor’s decision.

In order to reach his goal, he made Frozen and the rest go into seclusion for more than hundreds of thousands of years. He knew he could have treated them better, and he felt remorseful because of this.

However, this time, they stood by his side resolutely when he ought to have borne the weight of potentially facing death alone. They fought against Heaven with him and were now faced with the risk of having their souls annihilated and being stuck in the Naraka Realm forever without being able to reincarnate.

North Sea could not take it anymore.

“Hey old geezer, when you become a god, I want to be the King of Beiqi... cough...” Frozen said with a trembling body. Suddenly, his Blood Qi began circulating in the wrong direction, causing him to cough out a mouthful of blood.

“Frozen, you idiot lad, I am the one who should be the king... hahaha... cough...” at this moment, Da Huo spoke with a distorted smile before coughing up blood, too.

“Cough... after this battle... if the three of us are still alive... let’s have another battle... the usual... the winner becomes king!”

Hearing Lie Shan speak, the two nodded heavily, coughing up blood but at the same time laughing together.

As he looked at Frozen and the rest, anguish boiled in North Sea.

He could not resist it anymore and howled at the top of his lungs. The enormous phoenix burned once again, holding off against the lightning,

pushing up little by little. However, the cracks on his body increased as well.

At that moment, North Sea looked as weak as a porcelain doll that would crumble at a single touch.

“Why? Tell me why! Why must they suffer for my sake!?” Lu Wu yelled at Bei Li, seeing North Sea and the others who were barely supporting themselves.

He once thought that he would have no achievements in life. However, his journey had taken a turn since he met Bei Li. For once in his life, there was excitement and something to hope for.

But this time, his heart was filled with reluctance.

He admitted he was useless, but however useless he was, he would never use someone else’s life as a wager to gamble for his own future. He still had conscience in his heart; he was still that passionate teenager.

Bei Li opened her mouth, but she did not know how to word her sentences.

She could feel Lu Wu’s inner struggle.

She knew that Lu Wu never changed. He just wanted to live happily. As long as he had soul coins and money, his life would be complete.

Even when he got the artifact, he never had the ambition to unify the world or the three worlds.

This time he saw others risking their life to fight for him, fighting to live to the very last moment. He was like a spectator, one who would return to his normal life after everything was over.

Such apathy was making him suffer greatly.

Lu Wu’s struggle and pain made Bei Li feel sorry for him.

“Wu, do you want to help them?” Bei Li looked at him.

“Yes!” through clenched teeth, Lu Wu said without hesitation.

“If we fail...”

“I don’t need ifs, I will bear the consequences of my own doing!” Lu Wu said defiantly.

He knew he was weak, but he was willing to give his all.

Bei Li nodded, and the soul coins stored in the artifact started to burn. Clumps of raw soul power flowed into Lu Wu’s body.

Lu Wu felt his forehead heating up, and the pink lotus seal appeared once again.

Under the overwhelming influence of soul power, Lu Wu felt his body change. The body of Suan Ni faded, and he once again transfigured into a human.

“Wu, we need to awaken your seal. Relax and let the power that lies in the seal guide you!”

Lu Wu gently nodded and closed his eyes. His body floated mid-air under the influence of soul power.

At that very moment, the seal on Lu Wu’s forehead started to bloom.

A translucent white sash slowly covered his body and his figure gradually changed under the shine of the seal.

His body became well rounded and elegant.

The bells strung on a red ribbon on her ankles were ringing in the wind.

At this moment, she opened her eyes.

Her face had a light, gentle smile which was as clear as a pond and she had an elegant vibe that was unworldly. Stardust had fallen into her eyes, with

movements as graceful as a fluttering butterfly, her deity-like posture eloquent.

Her crystalline eyes felt ethereal like the darkest star-strewn heavens, as though containing a map of dotted constellations. Starlight glittered in the elegant darkness, her glossy eyes like a doe, giving off vibrant beauty as they twinkled. Her gaze was like a waterfall of moonlight, every frown and smile of hers sent off electrifying ripples while delicateness overflowed in her.

She reached out her hand and pointed before her figure landed softly beside Bei Li, “It’s been some time, little one!”

Bei Li looked at the woman in front of her, and tears swelled in her eyes. She immediately buried her face in her arms crying, “I missed you, I really did!”

“You woke me up after all. How long can I exist?” the lady smiled. The youthfulness she displayed put a damper on the sun and moon.

“The soul power burning inside the artifact can last for an hour!” Bei Li raised her head from the embrace of the lady in white, her eyes glistening with tears.

“Artifact? You’ve grown, little one. You’ve become stronger!”

Bei Li laughed through her tears and nodded firmly, “It’s all thanks to you, elder sister!”

“Don’t thank me. The proudest invention of mine was the Way of Fate, but it seems as if this thing is rather useless and is no match for you,” the lady in white smiled gently, glowing in beauty as she did so.

“Elder sister, the mark has started to burn. Will we meet again after your awakening this time?” as if remembering something, Bei Li’s eyes started to tear again.



The lady in white smiled while patting Bei Li's head, "Don't be sad. After all, there's a new version of me by your side. Don't you like him?"

Bei Li's face turned red when she heard this.

Boom!

The loud noise attracted the attention of the lady in white. She looked up at the sky and her expression gradually became cold.

# Chapter 219 - Sealing The Heavens

## Chapter 219: Sealing The Heavens

The lady in white's gaze swept past North Sea and the others before it landed on the Sky Tiger Deity in the air.

The celestial bodies shifted at that moment.

The Sky Tiger Deity realized something was wrong. However, he assumed it to be North Sea who had unleashed his powers, so he immediately struck another lightning bolt.

As the lady in white saw what happened, she flicked her jade-like arm and the bells on her wrist started to chime. The crack in the sky was sealed afterward, with chains emerging from around, completely locking down this area of the sky.

The lightning bolt in the sky was suddenly suspended mid-air and all the spectators from the outside world were blocked from probing.

North Sea raised his head to look at the sky. As though realizing something when he saw the chains, he immediately turned his head to find a ravishing lady standing behind him.

“Teacher!” North Sea was shocked to see the lady in front of him.

“You’ve done well!” the lady in white patted his shoulder and walked past him step by step toward the sky.

North Sea realized that a chain had appeared on his body. The Divine Fire seemed to be suppressed by it to the point where the pain was bearable.

His body was boiling with regenerated power, slowly healing his cracked body.

“Old Ancestor!” Frozen couldn’t help but shout when he saw the lady in white.

“Young man, you must be a descendant of Ice Sky... I remember you!” the lady in white replied with a smile.

“But haven’t you undergone puberty? You still resemble a kid after all these years...”

“Hmph!” Frozen who was enduring great pressure from the thunder spit out a mouthful of blood.

Old Ancestor, I’m fighting right now! Can you not add salt to my wound? Frozen wailed in his mind.

Seeing the lotus blooming on the forehead of the lady in white, the Sky Tiger Deity’s face lost its color.

“You... haven’t you already reincarnated? Why are you still alive!?”

“You should die for tormenting my descendants!”

The frost in the eyes of the lady in white sparkled. She waved her hand again, and countless Chains of Law were mobilized, dismissing the God of Thunder’s figure in the sky.

The scattered ritual expelled large waves of energy, but under the watch of the Chains of Law, all energy was sealed within, unable to disperse.

“You can’t kill me!” the Sky Tiger Deity was filled with fear, causing him to howl instantly.

If she was an incarnation of Bei Li, the God of Rebellion, he believed that he would be able to counter her easily. After all, he had cultivated himself to reach the Pure Deity level. No matter how gifted the God of Rebellion was, she would never surpass him.

However, this was different. This was the God of Rebellion herself, whose existence shook the heavens. He was no match for her with his current

power.

Chains of Law appeared at the wave of Bei Li's hand, binding the deities in the sky to their spots.

Out of sheer fright, they wanted to scream and struggle.

However, it was impossible to do so under the restraints placed by the Chains of Law. They could not circulate their internal energy at all.

“It's over!”

The lady in white smiled and snapped her fingers playfully.

Snap!

The Chains of Law started tightening, strangling every single one of them to death, erasing their very existence.

Looking at the lady in a white floating gown, North Sea and the others were utterly astonished.

Those people are real deities! But they are like ants in her hand! Her sheer power fascinated them very much.

After wiping out the deities in the sky, the lady in white descended slowly and arrived beside North Sea.

“Teacher!” North Sea bowed his head respectfully.

Slap!

A slap landed fiercely on North Sea's head, making him fall to the ground.

“You rascal, are you dumb? Here you are thinking of rebellion when I have reincarnated! You can't even defeat a Pure Deity with this little power you have, yet you want to fight the heavens!?”

As if still not over it, the lady in white raised her leg and stomped on North Sea twice.

“Idiot! How did I manage to teach such a dumbass? You’ve pissed me off!”

The other three people trembled as they saw her physically abusing North Sea.

Frozen finally understood why the Ice Snow Clan was so violent. They were truly the descendants of the Deities of Beiqi.

Now he also understood why North Sea always beat them. After all, it was passed down generation by generation.

They were shivering!

“Get up!”

After she finished stomping on North Sea, the lady in white moved her leg and spoke once more.

“Teacher, can you not be that violent? It ruins my reputation in front of them!” North Sea sighed while raising his sorry face, then glared at the three people who were laughing at him.

“I don’t have time to listen to your gibberish... North Sea, I can only help you this time, the rest is up to you. Use this Divine Fire wisely, as long as you become a god, your future will be a bright one. As for you three, leave together with North Sea. Even though I have sealed this place, they have sent a signal to Heaven. All four of you have been highlighted in the message, so you can’t stay here any longer!”

“Yes!” the four of them responded with respect.

“What kind of plans do you have in the future?” the lady in white thought for a while, then asked.

“My future days will be a thrilling one. Running every day, preventing myself from getting murdered, and maybe killing a few of them instead!”

North Sea grinned.

“Is this what you want?” the lady in white was shocked.

“After becoming the King of Beiqi I realized that I don’t have a goal anymore. A life like this is pretty good anyways. I’ll have fun from now on!”

The lady in white was rendered speechless.

She then raised her thumb, “Terrific! You are my student after all...”

“Nah, it’s nothing. It’s you who raised me well!” North Sea seemed pleased.

Slap!

“Was I praising you? Don’t think it’s funny! You’ll regret it in the future!” the lady in white clenched her fists and had an exasperated expression while she spoke through gritted teeth.

North Sea did not dare retort. He only could grin sheepishly.

At that moment, the lady in white realized that her white aura was fading. Her expression became dignified.

“I don’t have much time left. Tell me where you want to go and I will send you there!”

“Master, what about you?”

“The white transmission ray did not record my presence, but only the four of you, especially North Sea. Now everyone in Heaven will think that you are my incarnation, and they will never let you slip away.”

North Sea nodded and said, “Master, how about you send me to the Naraka Realm? It has many space barricades and there will be places to hide when they hunt me down. Anyway, I won’t let them get hold of me that easily. I will cause trouble for them once the Divine Fire in me is completely ignited!”

The lady in white nodded. The stars in her eyes flowed and chains appeared in front of them, tearing open a space portal.

“Get going! Don’t put me to shame!” she gave a stern glare, and the four of them felt a pain on their behinds. The next thing they knew was that they were kicked into the space portal.

As she returned to Bei Li, the lady in white smiled and patted her little head, “Little one, I want to meet someone before I leave. Wait for me here!”

Bei Li nodded unwillingly as she didn’t want her to go just yet.

...

Beiqi, Cliffs of Desperation.

The chain that was sealed underground twisted and turned, escaping from the ground below.

The earth started to shake.

“Aaah, I’m finally out of here!” that shout was accompanied by the quake of the earth.

The lady in white smiled. The chain rolled again, and the place was sealed and compressed once more.

Not long after, a red-skinned boy appeared in front of her.

“Asshole, what have you done to me!?” the Demonic God roared with rage.

“Your size is too large and I was afraid that you would destroy Beiqi. That’s why I compressed you a bit,” the lady in white waved her hand, as though saying that it was a small matter and he did not need to worry.

When the Demonic God heard her, his blood pressure shot up and blood vapor diffused around him, “I want to kill you!”

The lady in front of him was responsible for sealing him for countless years, and she even had him compressed now. He felt his anger and rage boiling inside him.

“I’m giving you a chance. Wanna be friends?” the lady in white reached out her right hand.

“Fuck you...”

The Demonic God wanted to lash out but he realized that the chains surrounding him were rumbling, as if preparing to tie him up.

“I said that we’ll be friends the next time we meet. So, what do you think?” the lady in white waved her hand.

“Oh fuck... fine!” the Demonic God felt exasperated. He seriously suspected that he would be sealed once again if he did not agree.

After all, it had happened once, even though it was his fault that time for destroying Beiqi...

When the two of them shook hands, the lady in white smiled.

“You’re free now, my large friend... go celebrate your freedom!”

“Thanks to you!” the Demonic God clenched his teeth.

“There is no need for expressing your gratitude. Please refrain from causing trouble in the future, or else you’ll be in deep trouble if you meet one of those unreasonable ancient gods!”

Is there anyone else more unreasonable than you? The Demonic God growled to himself, but he did not dare say out loud.

“I’ve got to go, but do remember me as your friend!” the lady in white smiled and disappeared from where she had been standing.

As he saw the lady leave, the Demonic God had mixed feelings.



That person was his greatest enemy other than the Hiderigami himself. However, it was also because of her that his negative emotions were suppressed, making him rational again. It was also because of her that he got to know North Sea, his old friend.

This was why the Demonic God was in a dilemma whether to bear a grudge or not against her.

Fine, it was about time she disappeared. Anyways. I'll remember what she did. When I become stronger, if we get to meet again, I'll definitely get my revenge!

As he thought about it, an evil smile flashed across his face. He turned his head toward the ocean and his body floated mid-air.

“Hahaha, I'm free!”

Bang!

The flying Demonic God collided with an unknown force field that sealed the land, and he slowly descended.

# Chapter 220 - Mech System

## Chapter 220: Mech System

The seal was slowly dissipating, and the figure of the lady in white also started to fade.

“Big sister!” Bei Li plunged into her arms, unwilling to let her go.

Patting Bei Li’s little head, the lady in white had a comforting smile on her face.

“Let him help you. Tell him everything when he has the capability. After all, those people who went beyond the sky will come back one day. Don’t bear everything on your own, for all will be lost if you die.”

As Bei Li listened, her eyes reflected the struggle she was experiencing, but she nodded firmly.

The lady in white dissipated in a flash, and all that left was spiritual light.

A cat with its eyes tightly shut fell from the spiritual light.

Bei Li immediately stepped forward to catch him.

Seeing Lu Wu in a deep sleep, Bei Li’s eyes sparkled with tears. She hugged him and rubbed him with her face.

...

Inside the house...

Seeing Lu Wu, who was looking at the mirror questioning his existence, biting his claws, and scratching his head, Bei Li sighed.

“Didn’t you say that you were willing to pay the price? Don’t worry, it’s already over!”

“You didn’t say that I would turn into a woman for the fight!” Lu Wu bit his little claws. He looked like he was falling apart internally.

Even though the crisis was over, it caused trauma deep within poor Lu Wu’s young soul. It was too scary for him. A vital body part of his disappeared yesterday.

“The crisis can only be uplifted with her power!” Bei Li was exasperated.

“I hate it!” Lu Wu bit his claws again and started to grind his teeth.

“Don’t fret about it... it really wasn’t a big deal... now, we should focus on how to speed up the development of the players!”

Hearing her, Lu Wu put his little claws down, his expression becoming solemn.

The crisis in the world of the immortals was not completely alleviated.

Even though North Sea had shouldered everything and became a wanted target for the world of the immortals, there were many uncertainties.

If North Sea was caught and his soul was searched, then Lu Wu would once again become the target for the world of the immortals.

No doubt Lu Wu had the artifact and could hide in it when he could no longer remain in the three worlds. However, a life like this was not what Lu Wu wanted.

In order for North Sea to overcome the danger and for himself to live in this world without any fear, he needed a vast army of players that could shake Heaven’s forces.

Lu Wu, who was originally unmotivated, suddenly had the desire to become strong.

Speeding up the development of the players was once again put on their meeting agenda.

Lu Wu and Bei Li had already been discussing it. They contacted Wu Guoyi and prepared to launch the American servers earlier than scheduled.

What about the location of the new manifestation land?

After a long discussion, they decided to place the first players' stronghold in the most chaotic realm, the Land of Naraka, a place far from both Beiqi and Cangxu.

Even though survivability was low in this realm, it was filled with abundant resources. As long as they could pass through the newbie phase, their development would be a fast one.

At the same time, Lu Wu decided to manage this server himself.

The American server was launched later than the other servers. Therefore, in the past few days, Bei Li had personally created a mechanism for the growth of American server players that was entirely different from and independent of the other servers.

It was called the Mech Warrior System!

Research and development was Bei Li's strength. Bei Li had no trouble designing a game mechanic that allowed players to grow using technology as the main method and then used cultivation as support.

Bei Li had set the technology-based growth model. The players could upgrade their mechs with the soul power they had gained after leveling up. At the same time, they could use spiritual ores from the Underworld to customize their mechs in the NPC area. There were many growth methods for the players.

The options for default character classes were temporarily set to three.

[Lightsaber Mech]: A close combat character class with the lightsaber as the main weapon, assisted with a laser dagger and a small-caliber ion gun.

Distribution of soul power after leveling up: The main skill is an increase in the lightsaber's sharpness and mech defense, supported by an improvement in the laser dagger and small-caliber ion gun.

[Rechargeable Mech]: A ranged attack character class that is able to use multiple types of rechargeable weapons with flexibility. Starter weapons include laser cannons, a sniper rifle, etc. Weak in its close combat abilities.

Distribution of soul power after leveling up: The main skill is an improvement in the weapon's performance, supported by an auxiliary mech defense.

[Auxiliary Mech]: A combat assistance character class that is able to create Nano Mech Repairing Balls and combat assistance items such as control force fields (Gravity Field, Repulsive Force Field, and Mech Repair Force Field). Equipped with a lightsaber and small-caliber ion gun.

Distribution of soul power after leveling up: The main skill is the strengthening of the processing factory in the mech warehouse, supported by auxiliary mech defense.

Even though this growth system could help the American server players to grow rapidly, they had a critical weakness, which was their physical bodies.

If the mech were to be destroyed, the players would basically just be lambs for the slaughter without any combat ability.

Everything had its pros and cons.

However, Lu Wu also suggested adding a recycling system that accepted spiritual material in exchange for physical experience in the shops of the American servers.

This system allowed the American server players to separate their growth plans into a main and a supportive one.

The soul power obtained by the main body could be used to upgrade the mechs, while the body's defense could be improved by selling spiritual

material and obtaining soul power or experience points.

This allowed another path for the American server players to spend money in-game.

After all, the need for spiritual materials of the American server players was low. In fact, they needed spiritual ore the most. This was the main material that could help them upgrade their mechs and improve their add-on performance.

After the recycling system was launched, it could help stabilize the spiritual material market in the American server, as well as help Lu Wu earn more soul coins. It was a plan that shot two birds with one stone.

There would always be bizarre players who would develop all styles of playing. For example, after the mech is destroyed, players who use cash might still be strong physically and able to fight the enemy for a long period of time.

Bei Li agreed to Lu Wu's plan immediately and continued to focus on researching.

After three days or so, the grand plan for the growth of the American server players was completed.

Lu Wu was not concerned about the reliability of this growth system. After all, Bei Li was top notch with her researching skills, and problems never occurred when she was in charge.

As for himself...

Upon knowing that his past life was none other than the creator of the Way of Fate, Lu Wu's desire to learn from Bei Li was crushed. He knew that he did not have the talent to do so and he was better off watching from the sidelines.

After everything was set, Lu Wu only had to wait for Wu Guoyi's message before beginning his worldwide conquest for Battle Online.

At the same time, he had a plan and that was for the Beiqi Army to expand their territory.

This would be done sooner or later, as many players of the Ghost Commander rank have started to appear. They had enough power to fight against most of the forces in the world.

In Lu Wu's mind, the horn of invading other lands was already blown.

# Chapter 221 - Mo Xiaoxin

Chapter 221: Mo Xiaoxin

Dragon Nation, Wei City.

Mo Xiaoxin had just resigned and walked out the company's door. He lit a cigarette pleasantly and strolled toward the subway station.

It was rush hour where traffic was at its highest. The subway was cramped. After swiping his transit card, Mo Xiaoxin managed to squeeze into the subway train with a little extra effort.

As the subway train started moving, Mo Xiaoxin scanned his surroundings for a less cramped space.

However, the moment he lifted up his foot, the middle-aged woman beside him let out a piercing scream.

He noticed that he had accidentally stepped on someone's toes. Mo Xiaoxin apologized at once, "I'm so sorry!"

"Don't you have eyes? Are you a pig? How do you even manage to step on other people...?"

Facing the unrelenting middle-aged woman who kept on rambling, Mo Xiaoxin took out his earphones. He unlocked his smartphone and launched the Talking Tom app.

Five minutes later, when the woman paused, the app on Mo Xiaoxin's phone started to speak...

"Don't you have eyes? Are you a pig..."

It pissed off the woman and she continued scolding at once. Mo Xiaoxin, who was holding the handrails, maintained a calm expression and raised his



smartphone without having to open his mouth.

The passengers could not resist laughing as they listened to the middle-aged woman bickering back and forth with a phone app.

Mo Xiaoxin seemed like an outsider to the conversation, as though the woman was simply just arguing with a phone.

Reaching his station, Mo Xiaoxin got off the train and quickly shuffled back home.

His resignation meant that he had lost his main form of a steady income, but he was not concerned about this at all.

Since he was a player of Battle Online, he could do some labor in the game and live on that instead.

When he thought of Battle Online, Mo Xiaoxin couldn't help but smile.

He felt that everyone in this game was talented and they knew how to sweet talk. He liked it very much.

He did not enter his gaming pod when he reached home. Instead, he switched on his computer.

Logging onto the forum, a smile appeared on his face.

He scanned through the posts in the forum. His attention was caught by a post which was debating whether a Knight or Drought Zombie's defense was stronger.

After reading the original author's review and the players' replies, Mo Xiaoxin typed a sentence and attached a picture.

[A Knight is obviously stronger than a Drought Zombie, because (The Dog and The Knight.jpg). Didn't you know? (laughing emoji)]

As expected, Sun Qi the dog soon heard about the reply and threatened him to delete the picture.

Mo Xiaoxin calmly lit a cigarette and inhaled before typing another sentence.

[Good dog, pats head (laughing emoji)]

Then he closed the post, clicked on another one, and continued his inspection.

Yes, Mo Xiaoxin was the legendary player known as Crayon\_Shinchan, the ultimate troll of the forum who had pissed off countless players.

Even though the forum was full of hatred toward him, he was good at keeping his identity anonymous. Nobody ever found out his identity in the game, which was why he got off completely scot-free.

He had to thank his mother for that. If not for the training given by his mother since he was very young, Mo Xiaoxin felt that he would be hunted down like they did with Hu He.

He remembered his youthful days when his mother told him not to drink water that has been left overnight.

Having the inclination to troll others since a young age, Mo Xiaoxin asked his mother, “Can I drink water that was boiled at 6 o’clock in the morning when it is 6 o’clock in the evening?”

His mother said yes.

He asked again, “What about water boiled at 9 o’clock in the evening to 9 o’clock in the morning?”

His mother said no.

Therefore Mo Xiaoxin started his trolling.

“If the water has been equally left for twelve hours under the same storing conditions, why can’t I drink the latter? After all, the low temperature at night is better for storage.”

This time, Mo Xiaoxin's mother did not answer. Instead, she raised her feather duster and beat him while praising him for using his brains. Why did she beat him then? It was probably because she was in a bad mood, that's all.

That very moment, Mo Xiaoxin knew he had to hide his talent. He should never reveal his aptitude or he would suffer.

However, the Internet was without boundaries. After getting in touch with this world, he realized that he really liked it there.

He could troll as much as he wanted. They couldn't do anything to him even though they were enraged. They wouldn't be able to climb out from his computer monitor, at least.

After offending people for half an hour, Mo Xiaoxin decided to retreat from the forum and return to his gaming pod, despite the players repeatedly demanding him to expose his actual address.

...

His figure appeared in the game. Looking at the purple staff he bought with his own hard-earned money, Mo Xiaoxin nodded with content.

Suddenly, his Friends Menu started beeping.

Opening it to check, he realized that most of the notifications were requests from friends in the game to team up with them or venture the seas together.

After some thought, Mo Xiaoxin rejected their invites one by one with goodwill before heading toward the beach.

He decided to try his luck on the seas by going fishing for some spiritual fish and then selling them at a good price.

Of course, the main reason was that he could check out the forum while fishing.

He arrived at the beach on the Liuli Coast via the transport array.

As Mo Xiaoxin was about to call for a private Specter Ship, he noticed two people staring at him.

He immediately smiled at them while returning his gaze. He was about to have small talk with them, only to find their faces familiar.

It was the lovebird killers, Murphy and Little Pomelo.

“How are you? Is there anything I can help you with?” Mo Xiaoxin smiled and asked.

He was rather worried, but he did not think that the duo would have found out that he was Crayon\_Shinchan. He had never exposed any personal information.

After all, in the game, he was a backline mage that was pretty nice toward his fellow guild mates, had a soft personality, and was someone people could easily make friends with.

“Do you know the player named Crayon\_Shinchan?” Little Pomelo flicked her dagger which was balanced on the tip of her finger while smiling cunningly.

Mo Xiaoxin was shocked as he heard her, but he smiled again before saying, “You mean that forum troll? How would I know him? He’s trolled me before and I don’t like him very much, either.”

“Quit pretending. We know it’s you. What else did you think we came here for?” Little Pomelo dissipated into a shadow and drifted forward, appearing behind Mo Xiaoxin.

Mo Xiaoxin was confused upon hearing her words.

He was sure that other than being a troll in the forum, he hadn’t done anything which would expose his identity in the game. He wondered how they found out his identity.

When he thought about it properly, though, he realized that something was wrong.

He had spent years on forums and he had seen bounty killers streaming their killings live.

According to their style, if they had secured a target, they would act immediately instead of prolonging their fight. As for now, something must be wrong if they were attempting small talk.

When he thought of this, Mo Xiaoxin sighed.

“I think you’ve got the wrong person. Even though my name has the homonym Xiaoxin in it, I’m really not that shameless guy Crayon\_Shinchan. If you don’t believe me, try asking my guild mates. They can tell you what kind of person I am!”

Mo Xiaoxin did not show any sign of fear even when he felt the chill on his neck. He spoke as though he was complaining.

At that moment, the dagger on his neck was removed.

Mo Xiaoxin turned around to find Little Pomelo bowing to him politely.

“We’re sorry to have bothered you. Looks like we’ve found the wrong person.”

Fuck, of course they were trying to bait me. Luckily I’ve been smart since I was a kid!

Mo Xiaoxin sighed a breath of relief. While smiling at Murphy and Little Pomelo, he said, “It’s no big deal. I hope you guys find him soon and kill him until he flees the server!”

“We will. Even though we don’t personally hold a grudge against him, the crowdfunding for the operation has reached 30,000 soul coins. We shall kill him!”

Mo Xiaoxin’s face twitched when he heard this, “Good luck!”

# Chapter 222 - A Massacre Triggered By A Fish

## Chapter 222: A Massacre Triggered By A Fish

At the Void Ocean, the Demonic God who was floating in mid air was holding a red fishing rod that was infused with Blood Qi.

From time to time he would look at the crystal blue sky, the mysteriously deep ocean, and the seagulls cawing in his ear. The beauty of nature pleased the Demonic God very much. For the first time in his life, he realized that happiness was in fact this simple.

As the fishing rod bobbed, a smile appeared on the Demonic God's face.

Although he could easily catch fish by himself, he was enjoying the beauty of the world and was against using such a brutal way. He enjoyed the fun of fishing tremendously.

Seeing a red spiritual fish jumping from the water and the splashing droplets shining under the rays of the sun, the Demonic God smiled joyfully.

He reached out his hand and was about to take it.

Suddenly, an enormous black figure a thousand meters wide emerged from the surface water.

As the Demonic God gaped in bewilderment, a giant creature leaped from the water and swallowed the red spiritual fish in one gulp. At the same time, it snapped his fishing line that was condensed by Blood Qi.

Splash!

The giant fish dove into the water once more, splashing waves that drenched the Demonic God.

What the fuck...

The massive black figure slowly faded away. The Demonic God felt his negative emotions brewing inside him.

“I’ll beat you to death!” the Demonic God roared and leapt into the water to chase after the giant fish.

...

Little Pomelo and Murphy looked dejected as they saw Mo Xiaoxin leaving with his private Specter Ship.

“Murphy, do we really have to approach every single player with Xiaoxin in their names?”

“We don’t have a choice. Crayon\_Shinchan hasn’t left any clues. We can only try one by one,” he sighed helplessly.

...

Mo Xiaoxin sighed a breath of relief when he saw the backs of the retreating duo.

He had a narrow escape this time.

If they really had their eyes on him, Mo Xiaoxin felt that it would be much better if he stayed in the safe zone. After all, that Hu He player was a great example. The future would be more than pain and sorrow.

As he thought about it, Mo Xiaoxin reached his hand to wipe the sweat on his forehead. He could not help but feel lucky.

His Specter Ship drifted away with the bobbling waves, approaching the Void Ocean.

Mo Xiaoxin took out his fishing equipment from his inventory and prepared to start his daily carefree labor.

What Mo Xiaoxin didn't notice were the two figures squatting on top of the ship's mast.

Their gaze scanned him from time to time, suspicion clearly written on their faces.

Murphy and Little Pomelo had decided to give up, but the more they thought of it, the more they found it strange.

Their killer instincts told them that this person was suspicious. They decided to carry on with their observation as there might be unexpected gains.

However, after following him for half an hour, they hadn't observed anything fishy, and this left them even more puzzled.

Pondering, Little Pomelo started a livestream.

If the two of them couldn't recognize him, they might as well gather everyone from the forum to identify that person.

Soon, a post showed up on the official forum page.

[Instinct tells us that this person is Crayon\_Shinchan. Does anyone have a way of proving it?]

Peppa\_Boar: "The bounty killers are finally going to carry out a backstab of justice on the master troll from the forum. Good luck (laughing emoji)!"

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "From my months of experience of reading Crayon\_Shinchan's comments, you can try asking him a question. If he trolls you in response, kill him (laughing emoji)!"

Watermelon\_Taro: "Crayon\_Shinchan should be responding to this post soon. Otherwise, his suspiciousness +50%"



A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “My keen sense of smell tells me he is the one!”

Assassin\_Creed: “He is too good at hiding. If you really want clues, you probably won’t find them in the game. But his characteristics of trolling seem obvious, so you can only try starting with this.”

Lost8kToOnlineDating: “Not a good idea. He’s not stupid. He won’t troll if he recognizes both of you. The only way is to wait for him to launch the forum and observe carefully. The forum interface will show his ID.”

...

The players started working together to figure out whether that person was Crayon\_Shinchan or not.

Under normal circumstances, Crayon\_Shinchan would respond instantly when he saw posts like this. Surprisingly, he did not appear and mock them for being overconfident in the forum. It caused everyone to suspect him even more.

However, it was better to play it safe. They couldn’t conclude that this person was Crayon\_Shinchan with that single point. It could also be that he was busy today.

Everybody started intensely discussing all kinds of methods to test him. There were even players who overreacted, shouting slogans like, “Rather kill all than miss one.”

It was obvious how much everyone in the forum hated the troll.

Reading the players’ reply, Little Pomelo nodded and started observing Xiaoxin closely.

There was an agreement among everyone’s viewpoints, and that was how it was impossible to identify Crayon\_Shinchan in the game. It could only be done through the forum.

The two of them squatted and watched over Mo Xiaoxin intently, waiting for him to launch the forum dashboard and to pick up any vital clues.

Down below, the forehead of Mo Xiaoxin, who was holding a fishing rod and had his back to the duo, was full of sweat.

Fuck... luckily I was smart enough to spend a sum of money to upgrade my exploration skill to the max. Otherwise, you people would have blown my cover.

Mo Xiaoxin acted calmly and did not launch the forum. He held on to the fishing rod and gazed across the boundless ocean as though he was enjoying the scenery.

It started to dispirit the twin assassins.

Why is it this hard to take a look at the forum menu!?

After a three hour battle of wit and courage, the duo finally gave up and jumped from the mast, appearing beside Mo Xiaoxin.

The thud of something landing could be heard.

Faking surprise, Mo Xiaoxin turned around.

“Huh? It’s you guys! Why are you guys on my ship?”

“Just passing by!” Murphy said coolly.

You goddamn liar! There is nothing but water around. Why don’t you show me how you passed by?

Mo Xiaoxin wanted to troll him, but he restrained himself.

“That’s not very good, is it? I’ve already said that I’m not Crayon\_Shinchan, yet you still followed me in secret.”

“We’re truly sorry, Crayon\_Shinchan!” Little Pomelo apologized.

Hearing her, Mo Xiaoxin raised his hand, “Don’t even think of trying. I’m really not Crayon\_Shinchan... so stop probing me!”

You guys are still too young to bait me out! Mo Xiaoxin was pleased with himself.

“Then we have nothing else to say. Launch your forum to prove your innocence!” as they spoke, Murphy and Little Pomelo pulled out their daggers.

“Why... why should I launch the forum? I don't like forums... I don't even have an account!” after hearing that he had to launch his forum, Mo Xiaoxin started to panic.

“Then create an ID now. You won't lose anything anyway. Furthermore, the forum ID and account are linked... this will prove your innocence!”

Seeing Mo Xiaoxin start to sweat, the players who were watching the stream started to get heated up.

Watermelon\_Taro: “Wow! Looks like they've actually found Crayon Shinchan. It's getting exciting! Let's spectate!”

A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “Kill him! I'll be waiting for him in the safe zone (sly smile emoji)!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Hahaha, look how his face changes. He really looks like the character Crayon Shinchan!”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “Who was the person who said he had escaped the three worlds and the five elements, and mere humans could not find him? (laughing emoji)”

...

The players discussed furiously. Most of them agreed that this person was indeed Crayon\_Shinchan.

Murphy and Little Pomelo smiled, resting their daggers on Mo Xiaoxin's neck.

“It seems like it's you!”

However, it was at this moment that a figure appeared in the live stream.

Crayon\_Shinchan: “You foolish humans; I already said that I am beyond the three worlds, nor am I within the five elements. Why don’t you guys accept the fact that you’ll never find me? (laughing emoji)”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Looks like someone is about to die. Let me spectate +1 (laughing emoji)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Just do it, or else I’ll go and have my meal (exasperated emoji)!”

His appearance shocked everyone in the forum.

The ID name could not be repeated. If Crayon\_Shinchan appeared in the forum, then that person in front of them in the game would definitely not be Crayon\_Shinchan.

The sudden twist caught everyone off guard.

Even the twins were shocked.

They were speechless as they looked at Mo Xiaoxin who was equally shocked.

You could have proved it by launching your forum if you’re not Crayon\_Shinchan. Why did you have to make it so complicated? What a waste of everyone’s time and reaction!

Annoyed, the duo kept their daggers and apologized while bowing once more.

Mo Xiaoxin breathed another sigh of relief in his heart. He was basking in his intelligence again because he already understood what happened.

Half an hour ago, he contacted his mother, who was playing Battle Online next door, through his Friends Menu. He asked her to come to his room and use the forum on his computer, where he had already logged in with his account.

If it was not for the preparation earlier, he would not have been able to survive this crisis.

Good thing I'm that smart... any normal antagonist would have died!

"Can you guys leave now?" Mo Xiaoxin who was now confident spoke impatiently toward the both of them.

"No. You may not be Crayon\_Shinchan, but we suspect you to be a member of the trolling community. Launch your forum for us... you may be on the wanted list, too!" even though they had apologized, they had no intention of letting him go.

Mo Xiaoxin was dumbfounded.

Just as Mo Xiaoxin was panicking and the both of them pulled out their daggers again, the ship suddenly tilted toward the right.

All of them struggled to keep their balance, grabbing onto the ship's side to avoid falling into the water.

They could see a huge semicircle swirling on the water surface and a gigantic fish head parted the water, rapidly enlarging in their view.

It was a fish... a huge fish... an enormous fish!

Seeing the behemoth in front of them, they and the viewers of the livestream were nonplussed.

They knew this fish. It was none other than the legendary monster inhabiting the Void Ocean, Tao Wu.

What was even more shocking was that there was a creature inside Tao Wu's mouth.

It was a boy with red hair and skin.

Furthermore, with his physical strength, he was able to keep Tao Wu's mouth open. It was unbelievable.

“Ah!”

As the redhead boy roared, Tao Wu’s humongous body was pulled out bit by bit from the water.

“Give me back my fish!” the redhead boy shouted angrily.

Tao Wu did not answer him. Instead, it continued to struggle.

It seemed to anger the redhead boy as he instantly threw it toward the surface of the ocean, spattering waves that were hundreds of feet tall.

The trio who stood there with shocked expressions were struck by the wave, and the ship dismantled at once. They were thrown into the water and swirled in the rumbling ocean.

They struggled to float to the surface, but before they could, they were pounded deeper back into the sea by the current. The impact caused all of them to pass out.

Even up until their deaths they didn’t know what had happened.

Was it a quarrel triggered by Tao Wu owing the boy a fish?

# Chapter 223 - The Onlookers

## Chapter 223: The Onlookers

The battle between Tao Wu and the Demonic God attracted the attention of all the players.

In order to see what was happening more clearly, many of them started going out to sea to get a firsthand look.

Currently, there were many media agencies in the game, and they definitely did not want to miss a great scoop.

This battle had an impact so large that it even surpassed Lu Wu's prediction.

The Demonic God and Tao Wu were creatures that had thick skin and were almost impossible to kill. And the rainstorm that formed due to their battle in the Void Ocean affected many forces.

The Death Clan was the one that was affected the most.

At this very moment, numerous players' warships harbored on the Void Ocean. The players took out their telescopes, turned on the recording function and started to spectate.

Other than the players, there was another great force that straightaway joined in the battle.

It was the Death Clan.

Being creatures of the Abyss, they would engulf any living being in front of them, regardless of whether it was the Demonic God or Tao Wu.

Therefore, such creatures who were like ants in the eyes of the Demonic God and Tao Wu began to harass them from every corner.

The players were extremely entertained.

During this epic skirmish, nobody dared to venture deep into the Void Ocean territory, except for a few large guilds.

That was exactly because it was inhabited by the Death Clan. Not only did they have a massive population, but they also had immense power.

However, these creatures challenging Tao Wu and the Demonic God were biting off more than they could chew. The players naturally welcomed such a scene.

While Tao Wu and the Demonic God were brawling, the Death Clan was crushed to powder after being hit by their energy. There was so much of it that the ocean was dyed black.

Watermelon\_Taro: “Nice show, keep fighting! Eradicate the Death Clan!”

A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “I’m more concerned about who Crayon\_Shinchan actually is... I thought I would get my revenge today!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “Good dog, pats head... (The Dog and The Knight.jpg)”

173’s\_Media\_Department: “How exciting! Writing scripts while watching the battle is the best!”

Starsea’s\_Media\_Department: “This game is amazing. The architecture of the world does not revolve around the players; the entire universe creates its own system, just like this battle (exciting emoji)!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Don’t you guys ever sleep? Here you are watching Godzilla vs Ultraman (slamming desk emoji), count me in!”

Lost8kToOnlineDating: “I have a bold idea. Can we loot them the moment they barely have any health left?”

...



At the seabed of the Abyss.

The Sea King who was wearing black thorned armor opened his black eyes.

“It’s been quite some time. Those at the surface of the ocean should have been able to gather enough combat power already. Time to get our revenge!”

“Hehehe, you really fit in our clan as you have the desire to destroy everything,” a black frog said as he hopped onto the Sea King’s shoulder.

“Shut up!” the Sea King pushed the frog off his shoulder and stomped it with his foot.

“You...”

Splat!

The black frog turned into black vapor. Then, it floated upward and gained shape again.

“Mu Hai, I’ll have you know that your power belongs to me. Without me, you’re nothing!” the black frog’s tone turned cold.

“Is that so?” the Sea King took out the Death Halo from his chest.

“Mu Zhiguang’s weapon!” terror could be seen from the black frog’s face.

“Isn’t it mine if you’re dead?” the Sea King smiled cruelly. This holy artifact of death which he had not been able to control earlier shone with bright rays before sucking the black frog into it.

“Let me out. How dare you betray me!”

Shouts of rage echoed from the black halo, but the Sea King merely smiled scornfully.

Even though he could not eradicate the origin of the Death Clan, after gaining their power, he could have them sealed off as Mu Zhiguang did.

Without their leader, the Ruler of Death, all of the powers which he possessed now would naturally belong to him, including the Death Clan's.

Glancing at the spiritual bodies of the Death Clan that are continuously flying from the seal, the Sea King felt ecstatic and swam toward the surface.

He had waited too long. It was finally time!

Excited, he whirled toward the surface and jumped out of the water. Sprawling his body in mid air and stretching his limbs, he looked up at the moon.

“Evil subjects of the Death Clan, follow me...”

Bam!

An energy ball was shot from afar and blasted him away.

After stabilizing himself in mid-air, he turned around furiously to see who ambushed him.

However, what he saw shocked him.

The sea was dyed black with the bodies of the Death Clan that had been shredded into pieces. The scene was a total massacre.

“Who, who did this!?” the Sea King's temper flared up and he could not help but howl.

At that very moment, the water bubbled and Tao Wu's gigantic body leaped from the water, leaving a crescent trail in the air. His tail slapped hard onto the Sea King's body, pounding him into the water.

“Bravo, bravo!”

The onlookers from afar started to applaud upon seeing what happened.

“Nice! That's what he deserves for all of that pretense!”

“Cool, I give that hit a 10 out of 10!”

“Hahaha, isn’t that the Sea King? What is he trying to do when the gods are battling? What an ostentatious entrance he’s made!”

...

The excited onlookers cheered. Some of them even took out a tablecloth and food and started cooking on the spot, as though they were going to stay there until the show finished.

At that moment, a dozen warships sailed from the north. Among them, the mega warship was especially appealing.

The players turned vigilant at once.

“Everyone, don’t panic. We saw your livestream post on the forum, so we’re just here for the show!” Li Xing shouted on the live chat channel.

They were all shocked when they heard him.

However, Li Xing’s fleet of warships from the European server were closing in.

True to their words, they didn’t do anything excessive. They took out their telescopes to watch and would applaud occasionally as though they were one of the spectators.

Later, players from both servers started exchanging local delicacies. Some even played some background music on the channel for Tao Wu and the Demonic God’s battle. They looked like they were having a lot of fun.

Lu Wu facepalmed at the lazy attitude of the players. How preposterous!

Watching Tao Wu and the Demonic God fight instead of leveling up! Can they be any less promising?

The players’ actions angered Lu Wu so much that he slammed the ground with disappointment plastered across his face.

...

The Sea King was really upset as he probed out of the water.

He planned to use the Death Clan, who was now scattered all over the ocean, to invade Beiqi. However, all of them were wiped out in just half a day without his supervision.

He could not accept his fate, especially after spotting Tao Wu.

He knew what Tao Wu was like. Even though that monster was a true terror of the Void Ocean, it didn't do much except sleep throughout the year and occasionally woke up to eat. What the hell is wrong with it today that it went on a rampage and killed the entire Death Clan?

The Sea King believed that there was no way Tao Wu despised the Death Clan on his own.

The scale of the battle was much larger when the Death Clan fought against the Mu Te Sea Clan. So how come it was nowhere to be seen back then?

It was at this moment that the sea boiled up again. When the Sea King saw this, he quickly dodged.

After he had evaded Tao Wu, a giant red figure leaped up from the surface and grabbed Tao Wu's tail.

Tao Wu started to struggle and gave a loud cry.

Nonetheless, the Demonic God didn't care about this. He grabbed its tail and whirled it for a full circle before throwing it to the right fiercely.

The flabbergasted Sea King who thought he evaded the attack was once again hit by Tao Wu.

"Bravo, bravo!" the onlookers were roaring with applause.

"Nice!"

# Chapter 224 - Death And Calamity

Chapter 224: Death And Calamity

The Sea King was utterly flabbergasted as he was sent flying again.

As far as he could remember, Tao Wu's power was second to none in the Void Ocean, but it was now being punched by someone else.

Who is that red figure? The power he possesses is frightening! The Sea King exclaimed to himself.

Nevertheless, that was no longer important. Staying alive was now the most vital goal.

He wanted no part in this scary battle. He might be squashed to death if he participated in it.

Turning around, he jumped into the water and quickly dove deep toward the seabed of the Abyss.

He decided to set aside his plan of invading Beiqi for the time being. After all, he had the Death Abyss, which was an inexhaustible source of creatures, as a countermeasure. Thus, his Army of Death would take shape again very soon.

To the Sea King, it was just a matter of time when Beiqi would be his. As for Beiqi's forces, he would exterminate them in the most brutal way possible.

As he thought of this, a cruel smile appeared on his face.

He looked forward to that day...

...

To the players, the Sea King's disappearance put a damper on the battle between the Demonic God and Tao Wu.

The players were disappointed that the Sea King didn't come out for a good beating. It was outrageous! Did he even have respect for them?

Anyway, the speculation carried on.

The battle between Tao Wu and the Demonic God lasted for another two hours before it ended.

During the final phase of the battle, Tao Wu seemed like it had succumbed to the Demonic God. While enduring blows, it managed to catch a spiritual fish similar to the one that the Demonic God had fished, and only then the latter stopped punching. He took the red spiritual fish and swept away with glee.

Meanwhile, Tao Wu floated on the water and let out sounds as though it was crying.

After it stopped its depressing cries, the humongous Tao Wu dove once more into the sea.

The players were exuberant as they witnessed this epic battle. Even though the battle was over, the discussion was not.

They still sat under the moonlight feasting and drinking while chatting away. It was a lively scene.

Lu Wu was observing them from behind the scenes and was at a loss for words.

Didn't you guys promise to work hard, level up, and earn soul coins to take care of me?

You guys have changed. You're no longer as diligent as you were before.

Alas, the melancholy!

Although the Death Clan's control over the sea was relinquished, they still had an endless army at the seabed of the Abyss. Thus, Lu Wu believed that the battle was not over.

However, the players did not level up with enthusiasm after their gathering at night had ended. In fact, they had their focus entirely directed toward this battle.

Posts analyzing the battle were everywhere.

There were even talented players who drew a humorous comic about the Demonic God and Tao Wu's battle, which even earned them a good amount of soul coins.

Lu Wu could not stand seeing the players this carefree.

As the creator, he decided to unleash the ultimate move that he had long prepared for.

The information for counter attacking the Death Clan was released.

[Game Update: Death and Calamity]:

The invasion of Beiqi had the King of the Mu Te Sea Nation, Mu Zhiguang, battling to his death in the war. The Sea King barely made it out alive, but he has not given up his evil plan of colonizing Beiqi. He was willing to embrace death and therefore became the Ruler of Death, releasing the Death Clan buried deep in the Abyss.

Endless kinds of Creatures of Death will be unleashing their terror on the Void Ocean. This sea next to our land awaits our conquest. History shall propel and the battle shall begin once more!

[Update Details]:

Update #1: Complete Launch of the Prestige System.

Details: This is not a cross-server event. While the existing Prestige System remains unchanged, killing creatures from the Death Clan only awards 10%

of prestige points.

Update #2: The Launching of the Guild Station System.

Details: After this update, guild stations at the Liuli Coast and the borders of the Mansion of the Dead shall be available for auction.

Station Details: The space within the guild station and the world is separated. There will be a portal placed outside, while the inside will be used for the development of the guild.

Specific Features:

Assembly Hall (Core): The core building of the guild station. Decides the maximum level of a guild. After upgrading, it expands the area of the station's land and improves the features of various buildings. Contribution points are required to upgrade.

(Contribution points are earned when members of a guild donate spiritual material, spiritual ore, or any other valuable materials to the station keeper!)

Tavern (Entertainment): Entertainment for members of the guild, alcoholic beverages provided within, purchasable with soul coins. Free drinks available every Sunday. When the size of the tavern increases as the guild levels up, more entertainment facilities will be installed.

Guild Warehouse: Guild members can store their personal items here (the initial storage space is twice the size of a personal storage space).

Residential Area: This area provides the accommodation for the guild's NPC (initial accommodation space of five people).

Training Area (Important): Guild members can use their contribution points to exchange specialized cultivational skills:

Specialized Attack Skill (1%): Increases damage by 1% (attack and spells combined)



Specialized Defense Skill (1%): Increases defense by 1% (endurance and vitality combined)

Specialized Speed Skill (1%): Increases attack speed and movement speed by 1%

Lessons for Special Fighting Specialization.

Lessons for Special Mechanical Specialization.

...

Note: The higher the percentage of the specialized level, the more the amount of contribution points required.

Astronomical Pavillion: Guild members can spend 300 contribution points for a random ten hour blessing (limited to once a day). After leveling up, it increases buffer types and chances of getting rare buffers.

Additional features in the guild's later phase: Processing Workshop, Equipment Workshop, Playground, Farm, Spiritual Field, Hall of Fame, Guild Shop, etc.

150 stations are available at the moment, where the winner of the Hundred Fortress Hegemony City of Beiqi will be awarded a free station. The remaining 149 stations will be put up for auction and the Tournament's City Mayor will have the priority for auctioning.

Update #3: New Shopping Items.

Sapling of Death (Level 1): Can be fertilized with the bodies of the Death Clan, bears a one-time Death Warrior. After reaching the maximum of Level 100, it grows to a Death Tree Demon (bears fruits of spiritual material).

Price: 1,000 soul coins

Wings of Death (Level 1): Tool for flying. Bodies of the Death Clan can be used to redeem death points at the Battle Online Management Hall in the

Mansion of the Dead where the NPC is stationed to promote growth (flying enabled after Level 10).

Price: 10,000 soul coins

Death Coffin (Level 1): Can be activated offline. The player's character will be in an idle state and can earn little amounts of experience. Bodies of the Death Clan can be used to redeem death points at the Battle Online Management Hall in the Mansion of the Dead where the NPC is stationed. The points can be used to level up, and with each level up the amount of experience will also increase slightly.

Price: 1,000 soul coins

...

The game update made everyone go nuts.

Not only had the long-awaited flying equipment launched, but also an offline, idle state equipment that aided in leveling up. As for the major guilds, the most attractive part was the multifunction guild stations.

Wu Guoyi, Ye Xue'er, Gu Yu, and some of the other guild leaders were ineligible for the purchasing privileges because of the City of Beiqi tournament. Their regret could not be put into words.

They did not expect guild stations to have so many functions.

Not only could they learn specialized skills, but there was also an astronomical pavilion that provided a ten hour buffer. These were all great for the development of a guild, and other facilities made them even more envious.

Due to this, the official forum of Battle Online became lively. Everybody was discussing the new information.

Commander\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: "The guild stations are awesome, but it seems like I don't need to participate in the auction. Sigh~ I feel like competing with you guys! That's so sad!"

Strike\_Gold replied to Commander\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “(bleeding knife emoji)”

Ye\_Xueer\_Is\_The\_Cutest replied to Commander\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “(bleeding knife emoji)”

Invincible\_Loneliness replied to Commander\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “(bleeding knife emoji)”

Watermelon\_Taro: “My hands are shaking. This means the fight between Tao Wu and the Demonic God yesterday wasted us a good amount of death points. Now I feel like strangling them!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Watermelon\_Taro: “You didn’t say so when you were spectating and applauding yesterday (laughing emoji)!”

A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “No one dared to go to the Void Ocean back then, but now I think the Death Clan is at the brink of extinction. Please take care of the new inhabitants and refrain from endangering them (laughing emoji)!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “How careless of the Death Clan to offend the game developers! The latest update is the proof that they want them extinct. That’s so evil, but I like it (laughing emoji)!”

Junior\_Captain\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “My hands are shaking, too. Now that I think of it, yesterday’s epic battle was a complete waste! I’ve lost at least a few hundred million death points! What a pain! If I had all those death points, I could have grown a world tree! I could have afforded a pair of wings that could take me around the world and also a supreme coffin that could level me up whenever I lie in it (exasperated emoji)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Junior\_Captain\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “Why don’t you ask the boss of Battle Online to give you his address and force him to give you an official god-transformation cheat code (laughing emoji)?”

Peppa\_Boar: “I strongly condemn the wasteful acts of Tao Wu and the Demonic God. Please make up for the players’ loss (laughing emoji)!”

Lost8kToOnlineDating: “Yesterday you enjoyed the show, but today you regret it. This is definitely referring to you guys! Don’t fret though, let us cheer for our good old enemy the Sea King to produce more Creatures of Death. Please seek revenge as soon as possible, because the evil forces of the players can’t wait anymore. They’re bursting (laughing emoji)!”

A\_Mammoth: “Good luck Sea King +1”

Assassin\_Creed: “Good luck Sea King +2”

Grateful\_Person\_Who\_Drinks: “Good luck Sea King +3”

...

Everybody realized that they started to like their old enemy, the Sea King. He was so generous to give them such a huge gift.

The Void Ocean once again became a favorite destination for the players.

Before that, it had creatures swarming around it and it was hard to survive there. Moreover, going out to sea had little harvests. It was all different now, though. To the players, the Death Clan was a treasure and they absolutely loved them.

Under the temptation of great rewards, the players were preparing to head out to sea. The Sea King probably hadn’t planned for that.

One hour after the update, loads of guild ships departed for the Void Ocean.

However, almost all of the Death Clan were slaughtered by Tao Wu and the Demonic God. The newly appeared Creatures of Death were simply not enough to share amongst the players.

There were some guilds who even fought over the allocation of the Creatures of Death during extermination operations.

Everybody was upset. Many of them strongly requested in the forum to improve the Sea King’s skills and the reproductivity of the Death Clan. How could they be so weak?

The players' requests amused Lu Wu.

For now, he wanted to expand the area of Beiqi's land and the Void Ocean was a major problem. Initially, he wanted to wipe out the Death Clan before expanding. But now, not only was this problem solved, even the players were not happy about the power of their opponent.

He could not fulfill the player's requests, however. It all depended on the Sea King himself.

Anyhow, the passion of the players was exactly what he needed. As he saw the soul coins grow exponentially, even Lu Wu wanted to cheer for the Sea King.

“Good luck, Sea King!”

# Chapter 225 - The Meeting Of The Seven Nations

Chapter 225: The Meeting Of The Seven Nations

In the East of the Void Ocean, deep under the center zone of the Kuilong Ocean.

The surrounding water was glowing with soft blue rays which lit up the underwater utopia.

Seven majestic statues surrounded the venue, each of them holding a weapon while looking downward.

There stood a figure in front of each statue.

A figure emerged at the center of the statues. He held an ancient book and slowly stepped onto the altar.

“The meeting of the Eight Sea Nations hereby commences. Prove your identities!” the elder who spoke had seaweed growing all over his body, as well as seashells and other barnacles sticking on his back, and he reeked of rotten flesh.

“King of Tian Yu Sea Nation, Tian Kun!” the man in front of the elder shaman raised the ice-blue spear in his hand, followed by a roar from the sculpture behind him.

“King of Xiao Yu Sea Nation, Lan You!”

“King of Hei Yu Sea Nation, Hei Sui!”

“King of Lan Di Sea Nation, Lan Hushan!”

...

Those who were present reported their origins and used their clan's holy artifact and spirit of their respective nations to prove their identities.

After everyone had verified themselves, the elder shaman slowly raised his head, his yellowish eyes scanning the surroundings.

“Where's the king of the Mu Te Sea Nation?”

“Elder shaman, the Mu Te Sea Nation was destroyed long ago!” looking at the elder shaman, Tian Kun spoke with respect.

“Gone?” the elder shaman looked astonished. He then shook his head, crossing out a line on his ancient book.

“Fine. From now on, the meeting shall be known as the Meeting of the Seven Nations.”

After that, the elder shaman raised his head again.

“Can someone tell me how Mu Te Sea Nation fell? As the leader of the Eight Nations and ruler of the ocean, how could there be enemies they were no match for?”

“They were marked by the Death Clan in the abyss of the Void Ocean. The arrogant old king tried to fight Tao Wu but lost his life. No one else could defend against the Death Clan, and naturally they were demolished!” the king of the Hei Yu Nation seemed dissatisfied with the Mu Te Sea Nation.

“Why didn't you send help?” the elder shaman asked again.

“The Mu Te Sea Nation thought they were the strongest when they conquered the ocean. They had no respect for anyone and bullied us frequently. We didn't have a reason to help. Moreover, it wouldn't have worked unless all the seven nations sent aid with our forces combined, for the Death Clan is immortal!” the king of the Hei Yu Nation spat coldly.

“All of you must understand that the Eight Nations work as one. We are the descendants of the Nether Sea Nation, and even though we have been split into eight factions, that fact does not change. Have you forgotten what

happened?” the elder shaman looked furious, his body trembling as he spoke.

Everybody went silent hearing the elder shaman’s words.

Of course they knew this part of history well.

A few million years ago, the great Nether Sea Nation that dominated the Void, Kuilong, and Jade Spring oceans was the ancestor to the current Eight Nations.

Endless war and expansion caused the Nether Sea Nation to split into eight.

Even though they had never experienced the events, it was clearly written in the historical records in their clan. Everything was exactly as the elder shaman had described.

“Elder shaman, we have come here today as the ancestral teachings have instructed us. May we know the agenda of the meeting today?” feeling the shift in the atmosphere, Tian Kun asked the elder shaman again with respect.

“This meeting is held once every 500,000 years to remind the Eight Nations about our ancestral teachings. It serves to unite all of us and recover the power of the ancient Nether Sea Nation. But now, I don’t think it is necessary anymore!”

The elder shaman’s expression was ice cold, “From what I see, all of you have long forgotten the glory we once had. You have acted selfishly. If that is the case, today’s agenda will be changed to the unity of the seven nations, and the title of the nation shall be the Nether Sea!”

All seven of them were shocked upon hearing him. Some of them seemed to disapprove of the idea.

“I am not discussing this matter with you. Since the Mu Te Sea Nation has fallen, we won’t stand a chance to recover the entire Nether Sea if we don’t



work together. Thus, today's agenda is about the unity of the seven nations and the gathering of all our forces!"

"Then, elder shaman, who will be the king of the Nether Sea Nation?" Hei Sui asked with a cold expression.

This was also precisely what the other kings wanted to know.

Uniting the nations was not a big problem. They were not the strongest force in their respective regions so teaming up would bring them benefits as well. However, the biggest question was, who would be their new joint king?

If someone other than themselves became the king, the influence and power of their nations would be at the new ruler's beck and call. Nobody would ever agree to this.

"Who will be king... what does that have to do with you?" the elder shaman sneered.

"Old man, are you thinking of becoming the king yourself? We respect you only because you are the elder shaman of our mother nation, but from what I see, you don't want our respect anymore!" as Hei Sui spoke, his spirit behind him pointed its huge sword toward the shaman.

The situation was tense, but none of the other six kings moved, nor did they stop them.

They did not know how strong the elder shaman was. They were not clear about the shaman's background either. Now that a hasty person was willing to take his chances, it was a good time to observe.

The elder shaman laughed. Just as he was about to speak, a figure slowly fell from the sky and entered the region. He then looked around curiously.

"My friends, ocean exploration is really fun. Guess what I've found!" as he was speaking, the strange man started climbing the large statue.

“From my experience, these statues have a long history. They definitely cost a fortune if they are sold as antiques. Sadly, nobody keeps antiques in this world,” as he spoke, the man swam forward once again.

Currently, in his livestream channel.

[67 Days of Ocean Exploration: I Won't Level up If I Don't Find the Inheritance!]

Host: Cloth\_Is\_Not\_Mad

Rebar\_Man: “Bro, look down, some glowing man-like creatures are below you. Are you blind!?”

OnePunchMan: “Are you blind? Look down! There are creatures! I think you are close to finding the inheritance. Quick, go and talk to them, and you will soon get the One Slash Health Inheritance!”

Sword\_23: “Bro, you've definitely found the inheritance! This place is obviously a relic! There must be a legendary treasure there somewhere!”

Horse\_Frozen\_River: “Look down, stupid streamer, look down, quick! All you do is show off every day, and when you actually find the inheritance, you only focus on antiques! Low quality streamers like you should be blocked!”

...

The commotion in the forums attracted Cloth\_Is\_Not\_Mad's attention. He looked downward and saw a few pairs of eyes looking back at him with expressions of astonishment.

As he saw the figures clad in shining armor, he was stunned, too.

As the region was glowing in warm blue light, he really hadn't noticed the living creatures below him. If it were not for the players' messages, he would have looked more into the statues and made up some historic story for his viewers.

Immediately, the player's eyes started to sparkle. He swam downward and landed beside the elder shaman.

“And you are?” the elder shaman was amazed.

This region was ruled by the seven nations. Nobody would dare to interrupt a meeting like this as they would have to face the wrath of the seven nations. That was why the elder shaman was quite confused to see this person.

“What are you guys doing here?” the player asked excitedly.

“We are holding a Meeting of the Seven Nations to choose the new king!”

The elder shaman did not know much about this guy, but he still decided to be honest. After all, it was not a secret. Since they had decided to return as the reunited Nether Sea Nation, the outcome of the meeting was to be announced to the world anyway.

The player's heart tightened. He realized that luck was on his side. Moreover, it was the Meeting of the Seven Nations.

Is it that any player who encounters this incident will unlock a hidden mission to inherit the seven nations and become king?

Instantly, there was a wonderful fantasy playing in his mind.

“Do you think I'm a good candidate?” he asked.

When the seven kings heard him, their faces turned ashen.

Who the hell is this guy, barging in and asking to be a king in such an important meeting? He had absolutely no respect for them.

The elder shaman was also processing his words. After carefully observing him, he asked, “And who exactly are you?”

“Me? I'm a player!” he answered matter-of-factly.

In the livestream channel.

Rebar\_Man: “Idiot, can’t you tell him you’re a Beiqi citizen? How would they know what a player is? How is it that a terrible streamer like you is still not banned yet? You always humiliate our IQ!”

OnePunchMan: “I’ve reported your stream for humiliating our IQ!”

Sword\_23: “A low quality streamer like you expects us to tip you soul coins? You’re better off dead! I suggest a permanent ban!”

99\_Days\_Without\_Smoking: “I’m better off watching the ringmaster challenging the sea creatures. Learn from them, you trash streamer!”

...

As he saw the players’ angry comments and just realizing his mistake, replied, “I’m part of the Beiqi Army!”

Now everyone at the scene looked at him with even more skeptical gazes.

To them, Beiqi was not too far nor too close to them. Why would someone from the Beiqi Army come here and ask about becoming the king? After all, the power of the seven nations combined was far more than a single Beiqi force.

“A part of the Beiqi Army? What business do you have here?” Hei Sui’s expression was turning cold.

Cloth\_Is\_Not\_Mad was at a loss of words. After some thought, he spoke softly, “To activate my mission!”

Slap!

Hei Sui did not hesitate this time. He slapped him so hard that he died on the spot.

As the stream turned black and white, the comments section got even rowdier.

OnePunchMan: “What a relief, that idiot host finally died...”

Sword\_23: “Another player died while trying to find the inheritance. You’re not alone, hahaha!”

Rebar\_Man: “Nevertheless, even though his actions were stupid, he was lucky enough to find so many ruins. If it wasn’t for luck, nobody would even watch his stream.”

99\_Days\_Without\_Smoking: “Brother, you make a good point +1”

...

After the incident of the stranger’s interruption ended, the atmosphere grew serious once more.

Choosing the king for the seven nations was no small matter. They wanted to know what the elder shaman meant when he said that it had nothing to do with them.

As though he had interpreted their confusion, the elder shaman stomped his leg and a figure emerged from the underwater altar.

The figure was a young, good-looking teenager. He had a distinct feature, which were his golden eyes. The runes in his eyes kept spinning, giving off a sense of nobility.

“He is the immediate descendant of the Nether Sea royals. Since the seven nations are once again united, we shall appoint him as the king!”

The golden-eyed teen smiled devilishly upon hearing him. He seemed content with the decision.

“I disagree!”

“I disagree!”

...

Everyone else immediately voiced their objections.

Even though the kings were the descendants of the Nether Sea Nation, they would never agree to work together and serve the royals again.

“This is not up to all of you!” the golden-eyed teen smiled and raised his hand. Golden pillars appeared and surrounded them, locking them within.

“The Oceanic Seal of the Nether Sea Nation!”

The seven of them were appalled upon seeing this.

They had only heard about the Oceanic Seal in ancient literature. It was said that it had power second to none and was a holy artifact of the nation. Anyone who had not reached the peak of the Ghost Emperor Realm would be incinerated by it.

That was why they panicked when they saw the Oceanic Seal.

“This is your last chance! Pledge your allegiance to me now, or I will kill you and take over your Sea Nation!”

There was no objection this time. Everyone’s face was pale.

Anybody who dared to voice out their opinion in this situation would definitely be killed as a warning to the rest. Therefore, they could not complain, even though they were unwilling to do so in the first place.

“The royal blood of the Nether Sea flows in my body. My talent in the future is immeasurable! Under my reign, we will recover the power we once had as the dominion of the three greatest oceans. We can even exceed our achievements in the past. This is our ancestral teachings and it is also the edict of the Sea God!” the lad spoke with great anticipation.

Hearing the young man, the elder shaman nodded with satisfaction and looked at the seven kings.

“Just as our king has said, if you all are willing to obey him, we shall unite as one and become more powerful. All of you will become lords and even

though there might be a dilution in power, the oceanic area which you'll rule over shall be far larger. What is it that you are not content with?"

"I shall obey!" the king of the Sha Shui Nation who stood at the very end suddenly spoke.

"You... good-for-nothing fool! No wonder the territory of the Sha Shui Nation has shrunk over time. What a loser!" Hei Sui casted a cold glance at the man who stood at the very end.

Originally, he thought that if everyone remained silent, that the descendant of the Nether Sea would not be able to do anything to them. However, someone had actually already succumbed to the little lad. He was furious.

"I shall also obey!" another person spoke.

"I shall also obey!"

The kings of Sha Shui, Lan Di, and Xiao Yu had decided to yield, leaving the other four kings flat-footed.

They immediately sensed that something was wrong. However, three nations have now yielded, and their combined power was rather strong. If the four of them did not form an alliance by themselves, they could only walk down the path of obedience with the others.

"You won't lose anything. Stop being stubborn. Only under the king's reign can we become stronger, and annex the forces that once had no respect for you!" the elder shaman berated at this crucial moment.

Facing such a situation, the four of them were in a dilemma. Their complexions were ashen. They didn't know which option they should choose.

The golden-eyed teen raised his hand. The golden wristbands on his wrist shined, and four golden rays engulfed the four of them.

"This is your last chance!"

“I shall obey!”

“I shall obey!”

Another two of them decided to yield.

Only Hei Sui and Tian Kun did not speak.

Their faces were as pale white as pearls as they gazed at the rest of them with disappointment.

It was all over. They had no other choice but to obey. Otherwise, they would die in vain and their nations would be handed over.

As the golden-eyed teen saw Hei Sui and Tian Kun lower their heads, he started to laugh.

“You should have obeyed earlier...”

Before he could finish his sentence, a black halo sped in from afar and pierced through the golden curtain, stabbing into the golden-eyed teen’s heart.

“I, the King of the Mu Te Sea Nation, had yet to come. How could you choose a new king in my absence? Did you think that I was of no importance!?”



# Chapter 226 - Please Return, Great Demon King

Chapter 226: Please Return, Great Demon King

The kings of the seven nations and the elder shaman were flabbergasted when a black figure walked past the golden pillars.

As the Sea King reached out his hand, the halo which was pierced into the golden-eyed teen's heart returned to his hand.

He then walked to the thunderstruck golden-eyed teen who was twitching, reaching out his hand to the latter's face.

“Young man, out of all the things you could learn, you chose to imitate the grownups by trying to become the boss. You're too young for that!”

As he spoke, the Sea King slashed the halo across the teen's neck. Golden blood dripped from it, and the teen fell to the ground. The rotating runes in his eyes instantly stopped rotating.

“Who... are... you!?” the pupils of the elder shaman shrunk as he asked through clenched teeth.

“Who am I?” the Sea King looked toward the elder shaman and smiled.

Roar!

A huge roar was heard from behind, and a spirit from the Mu Te Sea which was larger than all the other seven statues appeared.

“The Mu Te Sea Nation!”

The moment they saw the statue, the kings who were present immediately recognized the visitor's identity.

“So the Mu Te Sea Nation hasn’t fallen?” the elder shaman’s face went grim.

The reason he changed the agenda of the meeting last minute to unite the Eight Nations was solely because of the fall of the Mu Te Sea Nation.

This was because the Mu Te Sea Nation was always a pain in his neck.

The influence of the Mu Te Sea Nation was great. Moreover, every generation of king of the Mu Te Sea Nation was very powerful. It was easy for the Eight Nations to unite, however, seizing the throne would not be that simple.

The most possible outcome was that the Mu Te Sea Nation would annex the seven nations and become the overlord. The illusory Nether Sea Nation would never be restored to its former glory.

When he heard that the Mu Te Sea Nation had fallen, he was actually joyous rather than mad, and planned to launch the unification plan.

Who knew that it would end before they had even started.

Looking at the lifeless golden-eyed teen, the elder shaman was trembling internally.

He felt that he had let down the old king.

“How dare you kill your master, you traitor! How dare you come here when you smell so strongly of death!” the elder shaman yelled furiously, casting a fierce look toward the Sea King.

“Did I kill my master? He is your master, not ours. Right?” the Sea King smiled while looking at the rest.

Although the others did not say anything, their expressions made it clear that his words were undeniable.

“You... all of you...” the elder shaman knew the situation was beyond salvation. Nevertheless, he was still unwilling to admit it.

He knew why the Sea King had come here. He would never yield to the Sea King, even though the golden-eyed teen was dead. At that moment, his expression was somber as he spoke, “Is it that you want to be the king? From what I know, the Mu Te Sea Clan was annihilated long ago. Do you even have an army with you?”

Upon hearing these words, the Sea King laughed mockingly, “My army is not any weaker than the army of the seven nations!”

Just when he finished his sentence, countless black figures shrouded the entire area. The Creatures of Death were closing in, and they came in huge droves.

“The Death Clan!” the elder shaman’s eyes widened.

Not only the elder shaman, but everyone there was also astounded. They could not believe their eyes.

Only the Ruler of Death could order those creatures around. Those Creatures of Death did not have any consciousness at all. All they knew was to kill and devour. However, now they were under the Sea King’s control.

“How did you do it? Where is the Ruler of Death?” Hei Sui, who was standing not far away, asked with furrowed brows.

“That’s none of your business. I’ll also give you all a choice. Surrender... or die!” the aura of the Sea King started to grow.

Even though he was battered and bruised, he was once the overlord of the Void Ocean, hence his overbearance was very much still present.

“I will never agree with this!” the elder shaman immediately expressed his stand.

“Why would I need your consent, you old geezer? Your time is up!” the Sea King hurled a punch toward the elder shaman.

The elder shaman snorted and closed the book in his hand. A golden curtain appeared in front of him.

Dong!

His fist landed on the curtain, causing ripples to show, but not being able to shatter it.

Just as the elder shaman breathed a sigh of relief, he saw the Sea King smiling wickedly at him.

The aura of death surrounded the Sea King's fist, passed through the golden curtain and enclosed the elder shaman's body. The barnacles and seaweed on his body immediately wilted and turned to gray dust. He felt that his life was being sucked out continuously.

He wanted to struggle, only to find that he had been bound to his spot. He could not resist as he aged bit by bit.

Under the corruption of the death aura, the elder shaman who was already weak could not take it anymore. His flesh disintegrated and only a pile of bones was left.

Everybody was at a loss for words when they saw what happened.

They knew they were in big trouble this time.

Especially after the Sea King showed his immense power.

In comparison, the golden-eyed teen was still young and needed their guidance. He had also promised to make them lords. The Sea King who had absolute control might not need to do so.

“Choose now... I'm giving you one chance!” the Sea King faced the seven people and smiled.

“What if we refuse?” Hei Sui asked with a grim expression.

“Die!”

“Then I surrender!” Hei Sui’s words surprised everyone else.

They were no stranger to Hei Sui’s attitude. He even lasted until the very end before he had no choice but to submit to the golden-eyed teen. No one expected him to succumb so easily to the Sea King.

“A wise choice!” the Sea King gave a thumbs up to Hei Sui.

“I surrender, too, but what do you want us to do?” Tian Kun asked as well.

“Invade Beiqi!” at the mention of Beiqi, the Sea King’s eyes sparkled coldly.

Ever since his conflict with Beiqi, he realized that everything was not going smoothly for him. His fruits were stolen, his precious jewels robbed, and the force of Beiqi always harassed his subordinates in his territory on the sea. They had even annihilated his navy that he once prided himself on. He swore to seek his revenge, even if Mu Zhiguang’s dying wish was for him to refrain from doing so.

He swore that he would seek revenge and never forgive what they did, even if it imprisoned him in the endless Abyss. True to his words, he acted as such.

The Meeting of the Eight Nations was another opportunity for him.

Now that he possesses the power of the Ruler of Death and controls a terrifying Army of Death, if the seven nations decided to join hands with him, there would be no reason for him not to seek revenge. Even if that Lie Shan makes a move again, he would not be afraid.

“Beiqi? Beiqi is a nation on land. What’s the point of taking them down? It has no benefit to our development in the future!” Tian Kun appeared doubtful.

“I am the new king of the nation. My wish is the nation’s wish! I don’t need you to understand why. You just need to obey!” the Sea King glared at Tian Kun, the overbearance on him enveloping forward.

Facing the tyrannical Sea King, the other kings groaned in their hearts. The Sea King was much harder to serve as compared to the golden-eyed teen.

They could already imagine what would happen to them when the Sea King gains control of the seven nations. They would all become his servants.

“Swear your allegiance to me now and from today onward, refer to me as your king. The new nation’s title shall be the Mu Te Sea Nation!”

As soon as he said that, the expressions of the kings who were present changed.

They would not object if the name was changed to the Nether Sea. After all, it was their original name, and it brought them ancient glory. There was no humiliation in doing so. However, to change the nation’s name to Mu Te was straight-up colonization.

“Swear your allegiance to me!” the Sea King stepped forward, and the golden halo flew from his hand, rotating above the seven of them.

This was his gift to Mu Zhiguang.

To restore the Mu Te Sea Nation was the deceased man’s dream that he had been chasing after his whole life.

He died for him, so he would create a brand new nation to mourn his death.

The Sea King never cared about the two words, Mu and Te. However, he remembered the words from that day onward.

“The King of the Mu Te Sea Nation!” the cowardly king of the Sha Shui Nation couldn’t take it anymore as he immediately kneeled.

“And the rest of you!” the Sea King glared at the remaining six.

“The King of Mu Te!”

When the rest realized what was happening, they chose to make a compromise, even though they were unwilling to do so. They kneeled and

pledged their loyalty to the Sea King.

“Hahaha! Good!”

The Sea King laughed heartily while his Army of Death buzzed frantically behind him, frightening the seven kings.

They were worried about their own future.

...

The players were still complaining in the official forum.

Watermelon\_Taro: “Are you all rabid dogs? It wasn’t easy for me to find a Creature of Death in the Void Ocean! Four ships just barged in and snatched it from me! Do you guys not have any fucking manners?”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Recently the price for the Death Clan skyrocketed. There are rich people everywhere collecting their bodies on the Liuli Coast. What a scene!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “You guys who are craving corpses remind me of a malignant player (laughing emoji)!”

A\_Large\_Wolfdog replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “You are the malignant player now (grinding teeth emoji)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Since you’ve stuck out your head, I’ll have to pat it again... (laughing emoji)”

Lost8kToOnlineDating: “Stupid Sea King. I strongly request the developers to buff up the Sea King!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “I have an idea. Why not we invite Hu He the Great Demon King back, so that he can enlarge our death seals (laughing emoji)!?”

...

The entire forum fell into a brief silence after Crayon\_Shinchan posted that message.

Now that the Death Clan was so scarce, it had become a problem, and many players were moved by his suggestion.

After some discussion, the players banded together as one and sent Hu He the Great Demon King a message, which guaranteed that they would not kill him nor backstab him in the future. They pleaded that he come back to Beiqi and make a seal. They were even willing to raise funds for him to do so.

Hu He who was in the European server opened the message, fell silent for three seconds, and deleted it without any hesitation.

“Bastards! How dare they use the seal as a facade to torture me? I won’t believe you even if you show me the stats, you ungrateful demons!” the Great Demon King said through gritted teeth.

Then he glanced at the European server players who were surrounding the resurrection point.

“Don’t think that I’m scared of you. Wait till I’ve refined Hiderigami, and we’ll see about that!”

The European server players raised their heads to look at him for a brief moment, then continued to chat, play chess, and eat.



# Chapter 227 - Transform Into A Human

## Chapter 227: Transform Into A Human

The Beiqi players felt helpless as Hu He refused to return no matter what they did.

They could not comprehend why Hu He, the Great Demon King, had suddenly changed. He used to love digging in every nook and cranny for seals. Was the other server really that fun?

Since Hu He was unwilling to lend them a helping hand, the players could only count on themselves. Since it was tough to capture Creatures of Death on the surface of the ocean, they had to go underwater.

An abundance of players started utilizing spiritual material to cultivate the underwater ability of their spiritual ships in preparation for their underwater hunt for the Death Clan.

The players kept having awesome ideas. They actually managed to invent submarine warships. With these subs, they started heading toward the deep sea and managed to intercept Creatures of Death that were yet to float to the surface of the water.

Consequently, the players who failed to cultivate submarine warships were not happy. It almost led to an internal conflict among the players.

Lu Wu couldn't do much about it. The new expansion pack had a rich array of activities, perhaps too vast in variety that the players were now practically lusting for the Death Clan. This led to waves after waves of protests in the forum, requesting to strengthen the Sea King.

Even the authorization process could not keep up with their pace.

...

That day, Lu Wu was cultivating with Bei Li as she was looking at him with her full attention.

“Is it done? I think it has reached the limit!” he exclaimed while opening his eyes and looking inside himself. The energy inside him had condensed into a thick sludge.

“You are done!” Bei Li smiled and her eyes crinkled. She stretched out her arm and waved. Then, the soul power within the artifact overflowed and nuzzled its way into Lu Wu’s body.

The moment the soul power and Lu Wu’s bodily energy came into contact, an expression of ecstasy appeared on his face.

Once his soul power was fully charged, his body started to transform as well.

After months of cultivation, Lu Wu finally arrived at the moment that he had been waiting for. He could finally transform into a human again.

He had reached the required realm, and the only thing left was the right amount of soul power to bring about the change of the state of the energy within him.

Currently, Lu Wu had all the soul power he wanted, so he could spend it on himself lavishly.

His body underwent consecutive changes due to the soul power as he steadily transformed back into his original man-like state.

When Lu Wu felt his body bloating and expanding, he yelled for Bei Li to stop his intake of soul power.

Once the fluctuation of energy came to a halt, he gently rose up on his feet and clenched his fists. He felt energy pumping in his veins and his skin had never been more delicate and smooth. He even had a well-sculpted body with defined muscle tones.

He had acquired all of the basic skills of a Suan Ni in its default form. He had reached the Ghost Commander Peak and was one step away from entering the Ghost General Realm.

It feels great to be handsome... no, it feels great to be strong!

One million soul coins was money well spent!

Lu Wu turned around cheerfully to find Bei Li with her feet planted on the ground, her hands completely covering her eyes.

Lu Wu was stunned. He glanced downward and immediately darted like a bolt of lightning toward his wardrobe.

He was so used to running around naked for the past few months that he forgot about wearing clothes.

After Lu Wu got dressed, he returned to the room and saw Bei Li still fixed on the spot with her hands on her eyes. He could not help but let out a sigh, "Little Li, I have clothes on now!"

Bei Li slowly removed her hands from her face, revealing her flushed cheeks so red that they resembled a tomato.

At that moment, Bei Li felt like she was traumatized. It was a horrifying scene for a child like her. She could not believe what she actually saw...

I'm going blind! I'm going blind!

Lu Wu was about to respond when his mobile phone rang. He could only give her an apologetic glance before heading to the sofa to answer it.

"Hello, is this Mr. Lu speaking? I am a representative from the Jie De Corporation. I would like to discuss compatibility issues of your game."

"Oh, incompatibility. I can't do anything about that. The optimization of this wretched game sucks. I am struggling with this matter, too," after he got to know the caller's identity, Lu Wu replied irritably.

The Jie De Corporation had called plenty of times prior to this in hopes of a negotiation with him, but Lu Wu turned all of them down.

In Lu Wu's eyes, their actions were no different than steps taken to drive him into a dead end.

If it weren't for the loyalty of Battle Online's fanbase, he would have been brought down by the Jie De Corporation's devious actions. Thus, Lu Wu had little to no respect for them.

“Mr. Lu, I think there must be a misunderstanding between us. This time, I humbly request your presence in a meeting regarding a business collaboration. We are willing to provide you twice the money that the Black Sea Corporation has offered you in order to clear up this misunderstanding.”

On the other end of the call, the business representative was drenched in sweat.

As a consequence of the problems of Battle Online, not only did they lose their market value, they also received a huge amount of negative reviews.

Back then, the executives dismissed Lu Wu's suggestions and decided to carry on stubbornly in the heat of the moment. They originally thought that even if they had willingly given up their local market, they would still have a variety of international markets for them to choose from. In fact, they were right, until the European server of Battle Online was launched.

Once again, they were drowned with waves after waves of subscription cancellations and negative reviews.

Finally, the executives at the Jie De Corporation couldn't stand it any longer. To the players who bought their gaming pods, they had to continually explain that they were in the midst of a business negotiation. At the same time, they also contacted Wu Guoyi in hopes that they could come to a consensus with Battle Online about removing their ban.

Nevertheless, Lu Wu chose to ignore them and this drove them crazy. Therefore, they couldn't do anything but watch as the market they could've owned get gradually engulfed by the Black Sea Corporation. All this happened despite the fact that the Black Sea Corporation's gaming pod was launched later than theirs and the former's specifications were also not any better.

However, that was not the worst situation yet.

Not long ago, they received news that Battle Online was about to launch their American server.

The news felt like a punch to the gut for the executives of the Jie De Corporation.

Previously, they never expected a game to affect the sales of their high performance products. Then, reality slapped them on their faces.

They had only experienced the jarring impact of Battle Online twice, and it was enough to cause them irreversible losses.

Correspondingly, the news made their blood run cold. They could already picture the storm that was going to come afterwards.

The executives at the Jie De Corporation couldn't stay put any longer. They traveled straight away in search of the only person who had contact with Lu Wu, which was Wu Guoyi. They begged him to meet Lu Wu.

They also spammed Lu Wu's number with calls. This time, before he could speak, they offered Lu Wu a high profit margin, which was five percent of their net profit from the gaming pods.

Even though the Jie De Corporation came with their utmost sincerity, Lu Wu knew that they would not have made such a compromise if it were not for the pressing situation.

He could only say that they deserved it.

Thus, Lu Wu chose to decline the offer.

As for the fact that they were willing to provide double the profit, Lu Wu couldn't care less about it.

After all, he was not interested in money!

The Black Sea Corporation chose him for a reason. Naturally, he wouldn't let them down. Most importantly, the Black Sea Corporation hadn't forgotten his contributions while their gaming pods were selling like hot cakes. They had already given him a sales commission of five percent.

The face of the representative of the Jie De Corporation turned pale when Lu Wu declined their offer once again.

It was not the first time Lu Wu turned them down. The representative felt that he was already genuine enough, but he did not expect Lu Wu to be so heartless.

Once Battle Online launches their American server, it'll be over for them.

With that in mind, he spoke again, "Your current actions are against the Law on the Protection of Consumers' Rights and Interests. I can sue you for your monopolization that forces players to only choose the gaming pods from the Black Sea Corporation."

The voice from the other end sounded flustered and exasperated.

Lu Wu sighed when he heard that, "As I said, this is the game's problem and I have no control over the game's incompatibility. This is a bug in the game, and whether it can be fixed or not is solely my problem. What's more is that I am short of funding recently, so I cannot afford to fund the game's research and development. Thus, I shall leave the bug as it is. It will not cost me anything anyway."

The representative at the other end was at a loss for words.

Just as Lu Wu said, if he insists that it was a bug in the game which led to an incompatibility with their gaming pods, they could not sue him for any

valid reason. As for the repairing of the bug, it was really up to Lu Wu, and the Jie De Corporation had no right to interfere with that.

In the spur of the moment, the representative from the Jie De Corporation had the urge to blurt out that they could provide funds for his research and development. Then, Lu Wu could fix it as soon as possible. However, he knew that it was impractical.

That had been their initial trick to block Battle Online.

They wanted to punish Lu Wu as a warning to other game developers, but it backfired.

It was too late for regrets now.

After he hung up, the business representative stayed silent for a moment. Then, he unlocked his phone and made another call.

# Chapter 228 - The Players' Blessings

Chapter 228: The Players' Blessings

Beep... beep... beep...

“Who is this?” a deep male voice sounded from the other end of the call.

“It’s Abel, the Supervisor of the Technology Department from the Jie De Corporation!”

“What’s the matter?” asked the voice.

“I think my boss has already briefed you guys on the plan... so I am calling to inform you that Plan B is ready for execution!”

After a moment of silence, the man answered, “Alright!”

“What are the test subjects that we can use now?” Abel questioned again.

“Number one and number three are available for usage. The other test subjects are mostly dead and the living ones have all been deployed for missions.”

“Have #410 and #423 been found?”

“No, I don’t think it’s possible to find them, they do not have any markings on them and we cannot possibly rummage around the world for them. So their search is already a closed case for us.”

“Number one and three it is, then... tell them to look for me at the address I already sent you!”

“Alright!”



The call ended after a clean agreement.

A hint of ferociousness flashed across Abel's face after the phone screen went dark.

He had witnessed the power of the Superhuman Weapon Experiment with his own eyes and all of them possessed extraordinary powers. He believed that no mistakes would arise as long as their plan was not foiled by the government.

At first, they did not want to use this method. After all, it was a serious matter regarding the underground classified human experiment at the Jie De Corporation. The outcome would be terrible if they were exposed.

However, Lu Wu's bullying had gone too far. They would lose massive portions of their market share and things would all go out of hand if they did not stop him.

This was their Plan B.

They had to do things the hard way since the gentle approach did not work.

...

After ending the call with the Jie De Corporation's representative, Lu Wu turned toward Bei Li who was still in a state of confusion.

After some contemplation, Lu Wu decided to not disturb Bei Li first and allow her to take some more time to calm down.

Then, he went to his bedroom.

With his supreme authorization, Lu Wu entered the forum and started browsing all the players' posts like a god.

All the obscene materials, deleted!

All the rumors, deleted!

All abusive posts that threaten peace in the forum, deleted!

Most importantly, all posts with public displays of affection, deleted!

...

After clearing up a bunch of posts, a livestream post by a player caught Lu Wu's eye.

[The Sea King has risen, believe me! Click to view!]

Lu Wu clicked into the livestream and found the player by the shore of a random island with various different intelligent ocean creatures surrounding him.

It looked like the area where all the living beings on the island gathered.

At this moment, this player and the intelligent creatures around him were all enclosed around a pole that resembled a public notice board. They were all craning their necks and squinting their eyes to read the text displayed on it.

Thankfully, the game had the ability to translate foreign languages. The players could easily understand the text with the help of an artifact even though the foreign words made no sense to them at first sight.

Notice to the Void Ocean:

I may have lost my Sea King Navy, but the Void Ocean is still my territory. Anyone who has the guts to invade my land and seize my resources will all be destroyed upon my return.

This is a public announcement to all the living beings of the Void Ocean. I have successfully obtained the support of the seven great nations within the three great oceans, Void, Kuilong, and Jade Spring. After three days, I shall hold a Nation Establishing Ceremony for the creation of the new Mu Te Sea Nation at Xinmo Island in the Kuilong Ocean.

All who are interested in joining forces with me are welcome!

...

The creatures around the player displayed immense fear when they saw the notice and the stamps of the eight respective nations below it.

Some of these creatures were under the forces that the Sea King mentioned, the ones that he would seek revenge and destroy.

There were also some naturally tiny and frail creatures who were terrified that the possible bloody chaos that would arise when the Sea King returns could cause them collateral damage.

Panic and unrest filled the air.

Never in their wildest imagination would they expect the Sea King to come back stronger with an alliance of seven leading nations after losing the Sea King Navy.

It was not good news for them.

The forum was bustling with players who gained insight from that livestream:

Watermelon\_Taro: "All hail the Sea King! The most awesome Sea King! I am the first one to support him if he wants to build a new nation!"

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "The most exciting moment that we have all been waiting for is finally here, our Lord King of Sea will rise again! Blessings from the forces of Beiqi!"

Peppa\_Boar: "Seasons passed and finally the time has come for the uprising of the Sea King. Here, I would like to thank Battle Online for their planning and research, thank you so much..."

Strike\_Gold: "Oh my god, the Sea King is really making a determined effort to do well. After a great fall, still, he stood again and even unified the seven nations. That is just awesome!"

Lost8kToOnlineDating: “To be honest, I feel kind of reluctant to attack the Sea King upon seeing him pour his heart and soul into building this new force (smirking while covering mouth emoji)...”

Assassin\_Creed: “Why am I favoring the opposition more and more now? No wonder the Sea King topped the players-choice Top Villain chart and came out as first place. How adorable (laughing emoji)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Didn’t anyone notice something important? The Nation Establishing Ceremony is in three days, and we even have the address. Am I the only one interested in attending the event to congratulate and give the Lord King of the Sea a gift? Why don’t we go together and deliver our blessings? (laughing emoji)”

Junior\_Captain\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “Damn, you do have a point. Our favorite villain is building a nation. Since we have taken so much of its treasure, experience, soul coins and spiritual material, we should at least send it our blessings (laughing emoji)!”

Cultivating\_Longevity: “Let’s go, let’s go! War is war, but this is our time to congratulate him. I will bring some fine wine from the Wood Spirit Clan (smiley emoji)!”

A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “Woohoo, I shall go for the experience!”

Taoist\_Zombie\_Hunter: “I want to go, but I cannot make it (sighing emoji)...”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Taoist\_Zombie\_Hunter: “I caught a great destructive demon king here. Just let me go through a short interview, when will you destroy the players’ faction? You have already dug up the seals underwater and underground, when will you start digging other forces out of this domain? (laughing emoji)”

Taoist\_Zombie\_Hunter replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “(knife dripping with blood emoji)”

...

The news filled the players with joy and excitement. All of them agreed that they must support the Sea King in his efforts to build a new nation. Not only did they feel obligated to attend the ceremony, they also wanted to proffer Beiqi Army's most genuine blessings and most lavish gifts.

All the players felt the Sea King's devout hard work and dedication. It was different from the other kings such as the Rock Ghost King or the Hydra King, who were more stubborn and only fixated on a piece of land. They did not have the ambition to expand their territory nor improve themselves.

A boss like the Sea King was like a treasure mine to the players because he was definitely able to level up by himself. He was also a source of unlimited benefits because every time he is defeated, he would always grit his teeth and carry on to provide more resources for the players.

For that reason, the players wholeheartedly wanted to pay the Sea King a visit in groups to send it their heartfelt wishes.

Some players even started a discussion in the forum about gift suggestions for the Sea King.

Lu Wu did not know whether to laugh or cry when he saw this.

These players were really the malignant bunch of the Underworld. The Sea King was already in such a difficult position and came all the way to finally build a nation happily and peacefully. These players who were his arch enemies just had to interfere by sending their blessings shamelessly. That would surely piss the Sea King off badly.

He could already picture the chaos that would unfold then.

However, Lu Wu was not worried at all as the players were immortal anyway. They could fool around as much as they wanted to, it was all up to them.

Moreover, the news of the Sea King's newly-built nation came to Lu Wu's benefit as well as the players have been protesting about the lack of Death

Clan creatures recently. This news came at the perfect timing to divert their attention.

# Chapter 229 - The Station Auction

## Chapter 229: The Station Auction

It was the second day after the news of the Sea King's newly-built nation spread out.

The players welcomed another important moment. The Guild Station Auction that had been long anticipated was starting soon.

The players understood the purpose of Guild Stations.

Not only could it expand the scale of the guild, but there were also a lot of training facilities to help with the improvement of the players' personal skills. They even had entertainment facilities to enhance the internal cohesiveness of the guild. It was a precious place that all of the guilds desired.

However, there were only 149 stations to be sold at the auction. It was utterly inadequate compared to the current number of guilds in Beiqi.

Regardless, all the guilds refused to give up and desired to give it a try, even the small ones.

The vast majority of the guilds started integrating the soul coins belonging to the members beforehand and planned to give it a try during the auction. After all, the auction was not a personal matter but something that could bring about the improvement of the entire guild. It would be beneficial to all members so it required all the members' efforts.

The venue of the Station Auction was held at none other than the core area of Beiqi, the Mansion of the Dead.

The players started gathering there an hour before the auction.

The forum was full of excitement as the players were each advertising and rooting for their guilds respectively. They were also predicting the percentage of winning the auction of the guilds.

However, the vibe in the forum changed very soon:

Watermelon\_Taro: “By the way, why are they using soul coins for the Station Auction? The amount of money used by Battle Online to maintain the servers and pay the workers’ salary must be tremendous, they are going to be bankrupt soon if this continues! I am slightly worried now!”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “Based on what I know, the biggest source of income of Battle Online is the dividend from the gaming pods of the Black Sea Corporation. The salary of such an excellent gaming team must be high. Furthermore, they always release new graphics and other events like game expansions which incur high expenses. They are going to close down soon if they continue burning their money like this. Why don’t we donate some money to the boss of Battle Online so he can pay the employees’ accrued salary? (covering face emoji)”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “We can start a new donation. I will have a mental breakdown if the game closes down and ends its service. I cannot understand what the crew behind the game is thinking. They kept deceiving us players for soul coins instead of real money. I really want to knock them with a hammer so they can wake up!”

Peppa\_Boar: “Even though Battle Online is a really good game developer, I really want to knock them out. There’s still no news about the reload system that I want the most (angry growl of the Sea King.jpg)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “No need for that. I am an employee of Battle Online. Our boss said that we are operating the game out of love. Our employees do not want a salary, we are satisfied with love. We are a gaming company fueled with love. Do not insult us with your filthy money (laughing emoji)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan2 replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “Everything big brother says is right!”



Crayon Shinchon replied to Crayon\_Shinchon2: “Who the hell are you? (image of Tong Gua slapping his own face!)”

...

Lu Wu was shocked when he realized that the players really came up with a donation post.

[Save the Poor and Starving Boss of Battle Online. We Will Not Allow the Situation of Closing Down to Happen!]

The post went viral and was shared at the speed of ten thousand times per second. It garnered all the players’ likes and support.

Even the players from the European server who were unclear about the situation also thought Battle Online was going to close down and they were swarming onto the original server to participate in the crowdfunding. They were prepared to contribute financially to the production team of Battle Online.

Lu Wu was unsure whether to cry or laugh when he saw such a situation.

He was touched by the players’ actions but he really couldn’t take the money as the players had already helped him a lot, not to mention he didn’t need the extra money anyway.

Thus, he also made a post in his capacity as the game master:

[To All Players: In Regards to the Matter of Crowdfunding (Officially Pinned)] by Game Master

I appreciate everyone’s love for the game. I also understand why everyone thinks the game might close down if it continues operating in this way.

I would like to clarify that we produce games out of enthusiasm so we would like to provide the best gaming experience to everyone. To us, income is only secondary.

I hope everyone can understand that our boss is extremely wealthy, to the extent where he can never finish spending his money. Moreover, he is uninterested in money. Please abandon the crowdfunding plan. Our boss said money does not matter as long as everyone is happy (laughing emoji)!

Lastly, the production team of Battle Online assures you that the game will never close down even if the Earth explodes (sincere gaze!)~

...

When they saw the appearance of the game master who rarely showed up, the players swarmed into the post quickly:

Crayon\_Shinchan: “I caught a game master. Do you want it braised or steamed? How would you like it done? (laughing emoji)”

The Game Master replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “Hey lad, please understand my authority. I block accounts easily when my hands are trembling (laughing emoji)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to the Game Master: “Big brother, please have some tea (kneeling down and delivering tea!)!”

A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “Crayon\_Shinchan finally has no way to fight back, hahaha!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “I can still pet a dog’s head smilingly (laughing emoji)!”

Assassin\_Creed: “The boldest game developer ever. Since they do not receive any money from the players, they can just block whoever they want. This is what a real boss does, haha (laughing emoji)!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Since you said you are being considerate toward our gaming experience, you should give out a new wave of soul coins. Why are you so stingy on soul coins? Are you planning to save them to get a wife? (laughing emoji) However, I do believe that the boss can marry many gorgeous wives in the game using 10,000 soul coins (mischievous smile)!”

Lost8kToOnlineDating: “The idea of getting a wife using soul coins is awesome. My family owns a supermarket. Maybe we can sell things for soul coins so that I can send my future father-in-law a betrothal gift after saving 10,000 soul coins (laughing emoji)!”

Peppa\_Boar: “(covering face emoji) My father-in-law is also playing this game. He follows a small guild to rob around the neighborhood all day. He enjoys playing the game and always requests soul coins from me. I think this idea can work (covering face emoji)!”

Jedi\_Knight: “Are there any housing developers here? Can I use soul coins to buy a house? (laughing emoji)”

SixNuclearBombs replied to Jedi\_Knight: “I am one. I’ll do it if you can give out enough soul coins!”

Broke\_Trash: “This server is an example while the European server is another. Soul coins will become a hard currency when the server expands to the whole world. I have posted a prediction post about this before (laughing emoji)!”

...

Lu Wu’s assurance calmed the players down.

After all, Battle Online had become an indispensable alternative world in the hearts of many players.

Here, they could experience super-strong stamina beyond a top athlete and superpowers that only existed in fiction and movies. Furthermore, they also made new friends that were completely different from their real-life friends.

They could just follow their instincts in doing everything. Everything was simple and brutal and they could pick a fight whenever they were unsatisfied or unhappy. Without being restricted by reality, they were truly happy in this world.

They would never accept the closing down of the game.

Now that the question received an official answer and assurance, the comment section beneath the official notice was filled with supportive comments.

The post received millions of replies and became the most popular post since the establishment of the game.

Seeing as how the players were so happy while oblivious to the fact that he was exploiting them, Lu Wu felt comforted.

...

Time soon reached 8pm while the discussion was still hot. The sound of the bell signifying the commencement of the auction was heard from the air above the Mansion of the Dead.

[Server Announcement: The Station Auction has begun. A total of 149 cities are to be sold in the span of one hour. Guilds with a priority right in station purchasing can win the bid by parity price.]

(Explanation of the priority purchase right: For example, Player A has the priority right in purchasing. After the auction starts, although Player B bids for the price of 10,000 soul coins, Player A can win the bid at 10,000 soul coins without bidding for a higher price. In this situation, Player B who does not have a priority right in purchasing can only obtain the station by increasing his bid or else Player A will win the bid at the same price. However, if both Player A and Player B have priority purchase rights, the bid has to be increased. No equal price auction is allowed.)

As the announcement was released, a huge screen appeared in the air above the Mansion of the Dead displaying the Guild Stations with starkly different styles.

There were a lot of varieties to the backgrounds of the stations, including snowy hills, seashores in the evening, mountain lakes and maple forests during autumn. The players' eyes were occupied with the wide variations of the stations. It exacerbated their desire toward getting them.

A bidding menu appeared in front of all the players for them to start bidding for their favorite station.

[Game Notification: The winner of the Hundred Fortresses Hegemony Tournament, owner of City of Beiqi, Player Liu Chai can select a fortress in advance without the need to participate in the auction. He will obtain the fortress right away.]

The notification got the players envious of Liu Chai. All of them threw a jealous gaze at Liu Chai who was smiling proudly.

“Boss, the snowy hill! The scenery of the snowy hill is really nice. I want to build a snowman!”

“Build your ass! You’re too old for that. Boss, please don’t pick the snowy hill, pick the mountain lake instead. Not only does it have nice scenery, you can even take a bath in it!”

“Boss, choose the Sun and Moon Mountain Peak. From there we can overlook the mountains and hills. It really suits our guild!”

“The seaside, the seaside! I don’t care, choose the seaside!”

“Are you all pigs? Don’t listen to them, boss... we should definitely choose the City in the Sky. It is the only floating city. So posh, right?”

...

Liu Chai had a headache hearing the discussion among his guild members.

He liked all of the stations with each of their different backgrounds. However, the disagreement between the members was huge, they were almost fighting because of it. Liu Chai was helpless.

Eventually, Liu Chai had no choice but to open up the voting system in the guild menu for the members to decide which station they wanted.

When the guild members started voting, Liu Chai turned his gaze toward Gu Yu and the others and showed a helpless expression.

“Sigh!”

Gu Yu and other guild leaders showed their middle fingers toward him unhesitantly upon hearing that.

They disdained to associate with this type of person who took undeserving gain for granted. They were extremely jealous of him.

The results were out after two minutes of waiting. Eventually, Liu Chai chose the City in the Sky that obtained 895 votes.

Looking at Liu Chai’s choice, Ye Xue’er’s eyes bulged. Her heart was full of unpleasantness.

The City in the Sky was the only floating city among all the stations. She fell in love with it at first sight but it had been snatched away by Liu Chai.

Her heart immediately overflowed with resentment and she gave a deadly stare toward Liu Chai.

The players who witnessed their own guild winning the City in the Sky raised their hands and screamed in joy. Smiles and happiness worked their way across their faces.

[The owner of the City of Beiqi has finished selecting. The auction officially starts!]

The numbers beneath the stations being displayed on the screen above the Mansion of the Dead started changing crazily after the auction officially started.

Some small guilds didn’t even care whether or not a station had good scenery. They only chose to bid on the stations with the lowest bidding price. They would resort to another with the lowest price once their bid was challenged.

Even the price of a very spooky station called The Silent Forest had been hiked to 10,000 soul coins in a short span of time.

The small guilds knew they couldn't get the popular stations so they could only choose from some small remote ones.

The price of some of the more popular stations had hiked to an extremely expensive level of over 50,000 soul coins.

Fortunately for them, the money was contributed by all of their guild members. If the money was solely by the guild leader, they would never be able to purchase the stations even after going bankrupt.

Of course, several people were exceptions to this.

The situation culminated five minutes after the Station Auction started. With reddened eyes and clenched fists, the players were rooting for their respective guilds as if they were preparing to fight to their deaths.

Lu Wu who was looking at all this from behind the scenes was feeling ecstatic.

This was because he could harvest a lot of profit from this.

This feeling is amazing!

# Chapter 230 - Kuilong Ocean

## Chapter 230: Kuilong Ocean

The craziness was still ongoing even though the Station Auction was already halfway done.

The players' desire for Guild Stations had exceeded Lu Wu's expectations. At this moment, even the cheapest one had reached the terrifying price of 10,000 soul coins while the more popular stations had risen to 39,000 soul coins.

Lu Wu's heart trembled at such a high price. This round of harvest had gone far beyond the previous events.

The players were all staring at the screen in the sky with reddened eyes like gambling addicts at the Mansion of the Dead. Shouts and screams of joy were heard when their respective guilds appeared in the ranking.

The atmosphere at the Mansion of the Dead was unprecedentedly exciting. Everyone was anticipating the final moment.

Whether they could win a station or not solely depended on the last half.

The game notification continued ringing, stimulating their heartbeats.

[Gu Yu bid for the Sun and Moon Mountain Peak: 42,000 soul coins]

[Chen Ziyu bid for the Autumn Maple Forest: 32,000 soul coins]

[Ye Xue'er bid for the Mountain Lake: 38,000 soul coins]

[Wu Guoyi bid for the Sunset Seaside: 39,000 soul coins]

...



The game notifications continued appearing and the prices continued rising.

There were even gaming media guilds which were like Wu Guoyi's gaming platform guild that were actively participating in the auction.

After all, no one knew when would the next Station Auction be held. No guild would want to miss the opportunity to obtain the chance for development as early as possible.

When there were only ten minutes left for the auction, the speed of bidding decelerated but the situation was still crazy. The prices of every station were changing frequently and could maintain it no longer than ten seconds, let alone the few popular ones.

The prices had already exceeded the standard price of a luxury mansion in real life. However, none of the players thought that this was peculiar. Instead, they actually found it quite reasonable.

All of them were aware that despite not having a reload system, the maintenance of each piece of equipment in Battle Online was outstanding. To them, as long as Battle Online did not stop operating, it would be worth it to win their bids.

Gu Yu and the others were not the only wealthy players in the game. There were many cash-rich players swarming in the game at this point. Their bids were causing great pressure on Gu Yu and the others.

Some veteran guild leaders like Lu Zhan, Yue Han, and the others had already succumbed to the high price. They gave up bidding on the popular stations and started another bidding battle at other expensive stations.

When the bell signifying the end of the auction rang, the air above the Mansion of the Dead was filled with the cheers of the guild members who won their bids.

Excitement, indescribable excitement!

Winning a Station would mean advanced development for them. In other words, they finally had a home in the game. The future was full of hope.

The screen in the sky faded with the wind like smoke and turned into blocks of stations floating in the sky. Every station was labeled with the name of each guild.

The cheers by the players sounded again.

Lu Wu had other ways to comfort the guilds who lost the bid. He posted an announcement immediately...

[Server Announcement: The Station Auction has ended. The next Station Auction will be held after the end of the Individual Skills Ladder Tournament!]

“Wow!”

The players at the Mansion of the Dead were surprised.

This piece of news had undoubtedly reignited the passion in their hearts.

Many of the players had put in a lot of effort to learn from the high-skilled players in the forum and to train themselves in the game. All of these were done for the sake of the Individual Skills Tournament.

This battle will decide whether they can outshine other players. A lot of players who thought they had outstanding skills were preparing to show off. They were hoping for the day to make a name for themselves.

Lu Wu smiled comfortingly while looking at the cheering players.

Happiness was really that simple.

...

The players started swarming into the Liuli Coast the day after the Station Auction ended.

This was an important day for them.

Their old nemesis, the Sea King, was establishing a new nation!

The players could not ignore this important moment. They brought many big and small packages as gifts to congratulate the Sea King.

Some of them brought Wood Spirit Wine, some brought finely made meat products, some brought Spirit Fish. Their faces were full of smiles while they were on their way to visit the Sea King to congratulate him, at the same time showing support for him.

The players adored this determined character very much.

Lu Wu was not surprised at the players' weird gaming tactics, but he could imagine the Sea King's expression when he sees them.

His blood pressure would definitely rise.

At this moment, there were many ships anchored at the Liuli Coast. They were all waiting for their respective guild members.

The players were well-prepared. Some even used spiritual material to hire several old turtles from the Void Ocean to serve as their guides. Since most of them had never been to the Kuilong Ocean before and the map had not opened up yet, they would definitely have to spend a long time finding the place.

Warships and Specter Ships sailed off the coast followed by other warships. They started sailing toward Xinmo Island in the Kuilong Ocean under the guidance of the old turtle guides.

The players finally reached the boundary between the Void and Kuilong Oceans after speed sailing for almost half a day.

At this moment, the players were surprised to discover that the seawater from both the oceans was clearly separated.

Compared to the Void Ocean's deep seawater, Kuilong Ocean's seawater was emitting a light blue soft light. There were some shiny blue plants floating on the surface of the sea. The scenery was spectacular, as if it was straight out of a fairy tale.

At this moment, the players could not stop themselves from admiring the terrifying skills of the crew behind Battle Online.

The map area was enormous yet none of the settings were repeated. All of this seemed to be a self-made system.

This map was totally incomparable to the sandbox games in the current market that could formulate backgrounds and maps according to algorithms.

The players would believe it if the game developers stated that they had spent more than ten years researching this.

This was because the production of this game required an enormous workload.

This was only the map. They still had to calculate the time and effort they put into producing the highly intellectual NPCs and battling monsters. None of these things could have been done without taking a long time.

...

Following the old turtles' directions, the players changed direction several times on the Kuilong Ocean while enjoying the scenery. When the words Xinmo Island appeared on the map, they knew they had reached their destination.

According to the map, the island has a huge area, it was two-thirds of Beiqi at the very least. Instead of considering it as an island, it would be better to consider it as another land on the ocean.

Countless forces were gathered at Xinmo Island at this moment, including the Ocean Trading Association, the Ocean Predator Forces, the Ocean

Ancient Clans, and the Deep Sea Forces.

The purpose of them coming here was not to congratulate the Sea King but to investigate the truthfulness of the Sea King's words. After all, the sudden appearance of an enormous creature that assembled the power of the seven nations would have quite an impact on them.

Of course, there were also forces which originally depended on the seven nations who came here. They wanted to surrender under the Mu Te Sea Nation after its establishment.

It was crowded and lively. Eight huge statues were erected at the sides at the guest reception area outside the island and a blue carpet made of unknown material connected the seaside to the inner island.

The army of the seven nations was standing at the coast. It seemed like they were protecting the guests but they were actually showing off their military strength to the outsiders.

“Welcome, representatives of the Blue Sea Traders!”

“Welcome, representatives of the Captivating and Robbing Division!”

“Welcome, representatives of the Deep Sea Mermaid Clan!”

“Welcome, owner of Great Demon Island!”

...

Although the king of the Sha Shui Nation was full of smiles while welcoming the guests at the seaside, his heart was full of hatred.

As a king, he was ashamed to be assigned the position of the guest welcoming envoy by the Sea King.

According to the Sea King, all who come are guests, so he has to send someone with a noble status to welcome them.

None of the other kings objected to it at that point. Instead, they were united in turning against him, hoping that he would go.

The king of the Sha Shui Nation had a cowardly personality and weak national forces, hence he had no choice but to obey the Sea King's orders even though he was extremely dissatisfied.

After interacting with the Sea King for a few days, he was familiar with his temper. He would be in a miserable situation if he dared to object to the Sea King's decision.

After welcoming more than a dozen forces, Sha Shui sighed and lifted his head to look in the distance. He was astonished when he noticed an enormous fleet of warships slowly approaching.

These warships looked very mighty. They were emitting a metallic glow under the sun, like flashing sharp knives on the sea.

Important guests, they must be very important guests. The king of the Sha Shui Nation did not know which ocean force it was that would have such a big scale of warships.

Thinking that those were from some powerful force, Sha Shui worked a smile across his face and waited for the warships to come closer.

# Chapter 231 - Players Supporting The Sea King In Establishing A New Nation

Chapter 231: Players Supporting The Sea King In Establishing A New Nation

After the enormous fleet of warships reached the shore, Sha Shui quickly went forward to welcome them.

Flights of stairs were extended from the warships and the silhouette of players subsequently appeared. Upon descending the stairs, they went ashore.

Sha Shui, who could not figure out where these people were from, asked after some contemplation, “Honorable guests, may I know which force are you from?”

The players were stunned. Liu Chai, who was leading in front, waved his hands smilingly, “The Sea King is our old friend. There’s no need to be over courteous. We are here today to congratulate him on establishing a new nation!”

“Good, good. Honorable guests, please come inside!”

Despite not knowing their identity, Sha Shui dared not neglect them as they claimed to be the Sea King’s old pals and they seemed to be a very powerful force.

After delivering a gaze to his subordinate, he then personally accompanied Liu Chai and the others to walk the blue carpet and head to the inner part of the island.

The players were holding big and small bags, their faces full of happiness throughout the journey. Sha Shui was also secretly thrilled in his heart.

It was clear to him that the previous forces did not come wholeheartedly. However, despite being a powerful force, these people seemed to be sincere. They might be of great assistance to the building of the new nation.

Since their interests had been combined with the Sea King, the fact that he had such a strong alliance might be beneficial for them, too.

The scale of the Nation Establishment Ceremony was extremely enormous. The inner part of the island had been filled with all kinds of seafood, delicacies, and alcoholic drinks. There was still a vast space available after the players occupied the ceremony. The number of players who attended was still huge.

The players' eyes were shining while looking at the joyous feast. They did not expect to get to enjoy such a great feast while delivering their wishes.

“Honorable guests, you may enjoy the food as you wish. I will notify the Sea King about your arrival,” Sha Shui said smilingly.

Liu Chai wanted to stop him initially but he let him go after some contemplation as they were going to meet anyway. He hoped that the Sea King wouldn't lose his temper because they had been sincere enough to come here.

They had no intention to cause any trouble.

After Sha Shui left, Liu Chai announced on the live chat channel, “Let's disperse... everyone, do as you please. We will congratulate the Sea King when he comes out.”

The players dispersed upon hearing that and started devouring the foreign delicacies.

Compared to the food in real life, the food here was made from different ingredients. They were astonished and enjoyed the food happily with faces



full of satisfaction.

...

The central part of the island.

At the royal palace which belonged to the Tian Yu Nation in the past.

The Sea King sat on his throne while listening to the lords below reporting on their resources and territorial situation.

He was evaluating the strength of the nation after the combination of forces to plan for future development.

He was good at doing this as he was once the overlord of the entire Void Ocean.

That was when Sha Shui walked to his side at a fast pace and voiced respectfully, “My king, it’s time... we should start the Nation Establishment Ceremony soon.”

Sha Shui continued, “A huge fleet of warships arrived just now. They said that they are your old friends but they didn’t tell me their identity!”

The Sea King frowned upon hearing that.

He had a lot of powerful allies during his rule in the Void Ocean but he never had any friends. Thus, he was clueless.

“Are they here to cause any trouble?”

Sha Shui’s expression changed upon hearing that, “My king, they are not here for trouble. They even brought a lot of gifts. Even though I didn’t check the presents they brought, almost every one of them had something in their hands which meant that they are well-prepared. This is not something a trouble-making force would do.”

The Sea King unwrinkled his eyebrows. He then nodded, stood up, and walked toward the venue of the feast.

Since he could not understand what was going on, he had to see it personally to understand the situation.

Old friends are welcomed. However, if they are enemies, he will not treat them well.

This was his territory. He didn't think that there would be any force that would be brave enough to be this unbridled.

Looking at the Sea King walking down from his throne, the seven lords below quickly moved to provide some space to form a path. They then followed behind the Sea King after he walked past.

The band that was already long prepared started playing music as the Sea King reached the venue. A red carpet was formed under the Sea King's feet and continued extending as he moved forward.

At the same time, water element cannons were launched and glittering blue raindrops fell from the sky, embellishing the Sea King's distinguished image.

The players who saw the scene had excitement written all over their faces.

“Cool! This is exactly what a boss should look like!”

“The most popular boss indeed, great job!”

“That's good. The determined Sea King has finally made some improvement. This is truly something worth congratulating!”

...

The players thought that the Sea King looked very handsome and attractive on that day.

They felt content as if they saw their crops growing well.

They were having comforting smiles on their faces like a bunch of old farmers.

“My king, those are the forces that I was talking about!” Sha Shui pointed at Liu Chai and the other players as he led the Sea King to his golden throne.

The Sea King looked toward the direction which Sha Shui pointed, but soon after, his face turned pale.

How could he not know these degenerates? If it wasn't for them, he would still be the overlord of the Void Ocean and he would not need to work so hard in rebuilding his own forces.

All his efforts were made to seek revenge on them!

The Sea King clenched his fists while trying not to explode in anger. At the same time, he wanted to beat Sha Shui up so badly for letting this problematic enemy in. He should have destroyed them when they were still at the coast.

It seems like the ceremony is not going to end well! The Sea King's gaze slowly turned cold.

Right at that moment, Liu Chai voiced in the guild live chat channel, “Congratulations to the Sea King in establishing a new nation!”

All the seated players stood up immediately, holding their wine cups while facing the Sea King.

“Congratulations to the Sea King for establishing a new nation!”

Since the number of attending players was a lot, their roar was so powerful that it scared the other guests.

The forces who were here to investigate their opponents' strength had mixed expressions. They did not expect the Sea King to not only rule the seven nations but to also have such a strong alliance. This would be disadvantageous to them.

However, the Sea King was enraged.

In his opinion, the players' words and actions were undoubtedly provocative.

However, it was a really important day. The ceremony would be canceled if a fight broke out with them here as the scale of the attending players was not small.

I shall see what you are going to do! Facing the players, the Sea King snorted, flicked his sleeves, and took his seat on the golden throne.

“The Nation Establishing Ceremony officially begins!” Sha Shui shouted at the top of his lungs.

The eight statue spirits marched to the Sea King's back and raised the weapons in their hands.

“From this day onward, the Sha Shui Nation, Black Hell, Lan Di... will merge and form a new nation, the Mu Te Sea Nation! We crown the new king Mu Hai as our king, with the name of Sea King... the sky and land are the witnesses while the sun and moon are the examiners of our minds...”

The players were getting sleepy while listening to the long-winded declaration. Compared to that, they were more interested in the food in front of them. Unable to control their desire anymore, they continued devouring the food.

This scene made the Sea King's face turn ashen. To him, the players' actions were just trying to provoke him.

However, he withheld from exploding at them. This is because he's already prepared to murder all the forces from Beiqi after the ceremony ends in order to show off his power!

After the announcement, the Sea King slowly stood up to face the sitting guests, “The new nation of Mu Te Sea is hereby established.... everyone who came here is a guest.... I would like to know whether any guest intends to form an alliance with our new Mu Te Sea Nation!”

“The Deep Sea Mermaid Clan is willing to enter into an alliance with the Mu Te Sea Nation!”

“The Aurora Trading Association is willing to enter into an alliance with the Mu Te Sea Nation!”

“Tian Lan Island is willing to enter into an alliance with the Mu Te Sea Nation!”

...

Some forces who were willing to pledge their allegiance quickly showed their intentions right after the Sea King finished his speech as they were sucking up to the Sea King.

Looking at the many forces who wanted to form an alliance, the corners of the Sea King’s mouth curved upward and he was prepared to speak again.

It was at this moment, however, when a man sitting not far away from him who was in heavy armor and carried a huge hammer at his back slowly stood up,

“Sea King, what is your intention in letting go of the position of the overlord of the Void Ocean and coming here to our Kuilong Ocean? Did you think that your territory was not big enough and you were prepared to make us give up some of our land to you?”

Everyone gasped at his words.

Undoubtedly, these words constituted positive provocation. The Sea King’s face immediately turned ferocious.

He recognized the man. He is one of the three strongest forces in the Kuilong Ocean, Lang Tie, who is also the Second Brother of Langya Island. He’s considered one of the most powerful people in the Kuilong Ocean.

However, the Sea King was not bothered by all that. He had been thinking to punish someone to show his strength and this person who was being so impolite suited his intention perfectly.

However, the seated forces of Beiqi suddenly stood up one by one right when the Sea King was prepared to show off his skills.

Smash! Smash! Smash!

The noises of smashing wine cups were heard continuously.

“What the fuck! Who the hell are you!? Fuck off!”

“Bitch, do you have any position to talk here? How dare you oppose the Sea King in establishing a new nation? Are you looking down on us?”

“Damn, if it wasn’t for the Sea King’s reputation, we would fuck you up right here and now!”

“Shut up! Don’t think that you’re all that just because you’re wearing armor... I will let you have a taste of what calamity is if you dare say anything rude today!”

“Who the hell do you think you are!? Apologize or I will beat you up!”

“Where are you from? Give us your name! Are you here to look for trouble? Is the establishment of a new nation by the Sea King causing any problem for you? Also, what do you mean by giving up land? So what if the Sea King wants every piece of your territory? If you continue talking, believe it or not, I will smash your head in!”

“Fool, I advise you to be kinder. You are nothing but a ball of dust in our eyes. We will let the Great Demon King dig out your ancestors’ graves if the Sea King fails in establishing a new nation today. Believe it or not, we will temper them and make them dance in front of you!”

...

Looking at the players who were scolding Lang Tie, the Sea King was totally dumbfounded.

He initially thought that the players were rooting for Lang Tie when they stood up. However, unexpectedly, they were united in pointing fingers at

Lang Tie. It looked like they were defending him instead.

The Sea King fell into deep contemplation.

Lang Tie's face turned pale. Suddenly, he turned his back, grabbed the giant hammer at his back and faced the players.

“Which force are you from? How dare you provoke Langya Island? Do you want your whole family to be wiped out?”

The players were burning with rage upon hearing that.

“What the hell? We are the Beiqi forces from the west of the Void Ocean. There, you have our address. Do call us for a fight!”

“Come, come. We shall wait for you in the Land of Beiqi. You'll be my grandson if you don't come!”

“Wipe us out, my ass! You are such an egoistic person. If you want to wipe us out, remember to wipe each and every one of us. I will remember you, Langya, you are done for. Go back and enjoy your last meal. Then, prepare for your death!

“If it wasn't because of the fact that today that the Sea King is establishing a new nation, we would have gone out to have a fight right now. Fuck your ancestors!”

...

Lang Tie's body was trembling with rage from the players' rude scolding. He immediately raised his hammer.

“Langya Army!”

“Yes!”

Every soldier from Langya Island who was sitting around stood up instantly.

“Go...”

“How dare you... anyone who picks a fight here will be the enemy of the Mu Te Sea Nation. I want to see if anyone dares to move!” Hei Sui moved forward immediately and gave Lang Tie a cold glare.



# Chapter 232 - The Forces Who Changed Their Worldview

## Chapter 232: The Forces Who Changed Their Worldview

Faced with Hei Sui's threat, Lang Tie felt as if his breath was stuck in his chest.

Having done as he pleased in the Kuilong Ocean for so many years, this was the first time someone dared to scold and rain curses down on his ancestors right in front of him. He simply could not stand for this.

However, he couldn't pick a fight now as his military strength was weaker than the Sea King's. Hence, he could only look at the players with an indignant face while his heart burned with rage. He then turned his head and looked at the Sea King.

"Sea King, what is this now? Are you protecting them?"

The players lost their temper again before the Sea King could speak.

"Who do you think you're threatening, motherfucker? Sea King, don't be scared! We will help you to destroy him after you've established your nation!"

"What the hell do you mean by protecting!? Come on, let's go outside and have a talk!"

"Useless fool, do you know how hard this was for the Sea King? You have no empathy and you only think about making a fuss. You deserve to die. I can't stand this anymore. Come, let's take this outside!"

...

From the players' viewpoint, the Sea King was like a treasure mine that they had anticipated for a long time. Thus, to go against the Sea King would mean to go against them as well. That was why all of them were enraged and ready to flip the tables to start a fight.

The other forces standing around were contemplating while watching the scene unfold.

They reckoned that the Sea King had made allies with a powerful force and the force was rooting for him. Thus, their appraisal of the Sea King went up to another level.

However, the Sea King was still clueless at this moment.

He was suspecting whether there was anything wrong with his memory. He remembered that they were enemies and he even wiped out some of their clan members before. What is happening now?

Something was off somewhere, especially their gazes. Are they actually giving me a... comforting gaze?

The Sea King went into deep contemplation again.

“Good! Since all of you want to pick a fight, come on!” angered, Lang Tie took his hammer and walked toward the coast.

Of course, the players feared nothing. All of them placed their presents down and followed him to the coast.

They wanted to educate Lang Tie so that he could understand what losing was like.

None of the forces expected the Nation Establishing Ceremony to turn into the current situation.

However, they were more curious as to which force these savage creatures belonged to that they actually have the guts to provoke Langya Island.

Thus, they also followed them to the coast to witness their abilities.

“My king, should we send some soldiers to assist them?” observing the scene, Sha Shui quickly asked the Sea King.

“Assist them? I would rather help Langya Island!” the Sea King said while smashing the table furiously.

Speechless, Sha Shui, Hei Sui, and Tian Kun were all sent into a state of confusion.

As for the lords who were standing at the side, they were also surprised when they heard this. They simply could not understand the current situation.

Is the Sea King this cold-blooded? His friends went all out for him yet he’s thinking of helping the enemies. This is disappointing.

“Follow me, let’s go have a look!” the Sea King decided to check them out after pondering for a while. He rose into the air and the other kings followed behind him.

...

At the same time, near the island’s coast.

Lang Tie and his people reached the coast first. Following his cry, countless sea monsters emerged from the sea and started crawling ashore.

Then, the players arrived.

“Dumb fool, I’ll let you choose to battle on land or sea!” Liu Chai spoke.

As he was scolded again, Lang Tie was on the verge of losing his cool. He took a deep breath.

“This is the Sea King’s territory. We will fight on the sea!”

Then, he waved his hand and immediately, the Langya soldiers behind him rode onto the sea monsters and went to the sea successively.

Langya threw the players a provocative gaze.

However, he was instantly stunned.

The players were boarding fleets of warships and there were a huge number of them.

He initially thought that the warships belonged to all the forces who attended the ceremony. He did not expect that all the warships were from these strangers.

Langya felt a heavy thump in his heart as he could feel that this situation was far from good.

A force with such a huge fleet of warships would definitely not be weak. Furthermore, they were only here to attend the Nation Establishing Ceremony, hence these warships would definitely be only a small portion of their force.

Lang Tie was shocked by his own assumption. However, there was no way to escape. With so many forces spectating, Langya Island's reputation would be ruined if he didn't fight. Hence, he could only grit his teeth and go on.

However, he placed his plan to fight on the sea on hold.

He was clear about the power of the Specter Warships. This huge fleet would definitely win a landslide victory if they really started a war on the sea. Hence, he turned his head to give a gaze to his subordinate and the sea monsters crawled ashore again.

The forces behind were also in shock when they saw the players' fleet of warships.

They were aware that a huge amount of money would have to be spent in order to build a Specter Warship. The players' pageantry had them in shock.

At that moment, their appraisal toward the Sea King heightened again.

The Sea King arrived at the scene, his eyes full of hatred as he saw the warships.

How could he not be familiar with these warships? It was none other than these degenerates who drove these warships and robbed his jewelry and spiritual materials.

“Wait, there’s a problem with our sea monsters, so we choose to fight on land now!” Lang Tie shouted at the players after getting ashore.

The players showed their middle fingers to Lang Tie in unison upon hearing his words.

“Trash will always remain as trash... you’re intimidated so easily. So damn weak!”

“With your behavior, you don’t even deserve to hold the Sea King’s shoes, moreover provoke us. How brave of you!”

“Shame on you. Where did your guts go?”

“It’s embarrassing to have a battle with you. You are the first boss that we have to go easy on. How shameful!”

...

Lang Tie’s face turned pale upon hearing the players’ sneers.

However, he knew that he would definitely lose if they started a battle on the sea. Thus, he could only grit his teeth and continue.

“Stop talking! Do you dare to fight or not?”

The players laughed at his words.

There wasn’t anything they wouldn’t do in this world. Even if a deity was here and spoke to them in a rude manner, they would still fight him even though they were certain that they would lose.

Thus, the players jumped down from the warships one after another and gathered at the coast.

“Sea King, it should be alright if we mess up this place, right? Please don’t be angry if we do so,” Liu Chai said to the Sea King smilingly right before the commencement of the battle.

However, the Sea King only snorted coldly, as if he was implying his consent.

“Come, come, it’s almost time. Let’s fight! We don’t deserve to be called a disaster if we don’t smash your head today!”

“Kill them!” Lang Tie who was being scolded again made a loud roar and the Langya Army standing behind him instantly charged forward.

“Finish him!” the players also charged forward following Liu Chai’s chant.

The battle started. The surrounding spectators were focused on seeing which side would win.

However, it wasn’t long before they were sent into a state of shock.

The players’ skills were not as strong as they expected.

Although the Langya Army was far low in numbers, their combat skills were way stronger than the players.

“My king, the situation is not going well. We should send some assistance!” when Sha Shui saw what was happening, he quickly spoke to the Sea King.

“The army from Langya Island will lose to them!” the Sea King said coldly while looking at both forces in the battle.

It was familiar with the battling tactics of this force.

These degenerates were not afraid to throw their lives. The Langya Army might have a mental breakdown if they choose to have a protracted battle with them.

Again, Hei Sui and the others were disappointed at the Sea King's refusal of rendering assistance. They felt that the Sea King was too cold-hearted.

On the coast.

Lang Tie was extremely delighted as their side seemed to have the upper hand.

He had made his mental preparation of losing and returning with nothing. However, to his surprise, these creatures were weak in fighting a land battle. He felt fortunate for having chosen to have the battle on land.

Lang Tie's confidence was boosted tremendously. He believed these creatures would surrender very soon under the Langya Army's savage attacks.

However, as time passed and the more Lang Tie fought, the more he felt that something wasn't right. He realized that these creatures were actually not afraid to sacrifice their lives.

They kept changing their battling strategies. Without any intention to defend, they kept attacking in a way that they just had to slash an enemy before they died.

Also, these creatures' skills were peculiar, too. They had all types of tactics such as healing, controlling, assassinating, and face-to-face attacking.

The most unbelievable thing was that whenever their comrades were defeated, these creatures wouldn't even care. Instead they would only continue charging forward like crazed devils.

In this battle, the longer the Langya Army fought, the more exhausted they felt. Nevertheless, these creatures were still energetic.

All the forces at the scene were surprised by their crazy spirit.

They initially thought that this battle was only a trivial dispute caused by personal feelings. They thought that it would be equivalent to a martial arts demonstration and that it was only a mere formality to fight. They expected

that one of the parties would surrender eventually. However, this was not the case.

Looking at the players' battling manner, they quickly concluded that this was not a demonstration of martial arts. They were actually putting their lives on the line to fight.

The more they fought, the more exhausted and timid they felt. At this moment, Lang Tie really wanted to scold, "Do all of you not value your lives!?"

The players were indeed not afraid to sacrifice their lives. For them, death was only a wait of three hours. What they wanted to do most now was to beat Lang Tie up badly until his face was destroyed.

When the battle reached the third hour, Lang Tie realized that the Langya Army was full of terror and their capability to fight had weakened substantially.

Their comrades' deaths had given them too much mental stimulation.

Lang Tie knew that the battle could not continue anymore.

Currently, the mental states between both sides were on opposite ends. The Langya Army would be slaughtered completely if the battle continued.

Thus, he shouted quickly, "We surrender! Surrender!"

However, how could the players agree to Lang Tie's surrender?

This was because they realized that the Langya Army provided quite a lot of experience points and soul coins for them. Where else could they get these if they stopped the battle now?

Thus, the players chose to ignore their surrender and continued attacking.

The morale of the Langya Army slumped upon Lang Tie's surrender. The players started a new wave of attack but the Langya Army could not unleash their fighting capability anymore.



They were having a mental breakdown.

“Stop! We’ve surrendered, so there should no longer be any grudges between us!” when Lang Tie saw what was happening, he shouted again in an attempt to stop the players from attacking.

“I only have to kill three more before I can level up. You’re saying that you want to surrender? Declined, declined!”

“I refuse to accept your surrender. Continue fighting! Fuck, I haven’t obtained enough soul coins!”

“What do you mean by asking us to stop during our happiest moment? I refuse!”

“Fucker, you have no right to stop us. Who the hell do you think you are? Come at me!”

“I’m not listening! I’m not listening!”

...

Refusing to reconcile, the players raised their weapons and charged toward the Langya Army while growling loudly.

The forces who were spectating the scene had cold sweat dripping down their foreheads.

Currently, they have labeled the players as extremely dangerous.

Many of their comrades had died but they were still shouting unmerciful things.

To them, it was not a battle. It was a carnival for a bunch of psychopaths!

Even some forces who were recognized as fighting veterans in the Kuilong Ocean region had the desire to cover their faces after witnessing the players’ craziness.

They paled in comparison with the players. The players should be named the fighting veterans instead. Not only did they not care about their comrades' lives during the battle, they didn't care about their own lives as well. They really went all out!

The players' performances could be said to have completely changed the worldview of the guests at the scene.

# Chapter 233 - Make Frequent Visits

## Chapter 233: Make Frequent Visits

The battle had actually ended when Lang Tie surrendered.

The Langya Army had lost their determination to fight and could only counter the players' furious attacks with exhaustion.

However, the players were still excited and they killed every single creature they captured which resulted in their soul coins and experience increasing substantially.

“Do you really want to start a war with Langya Island?” facing the players' unending attack, Lang Tie could only threaten them in this way.

However, the players refused to listen to him.

Are you joking? A war would be great. It'd be even better if it doesn't stop until everyone is wiped out entirely. Hence, the players attacked more brutally.

“Retreat! Retreat!” Lang Tie could only instruct his army to retreat as his threat did not work.

However, a flash of iciness flashed past the Sea King's eyes as he snorted coldly.

The Mu Te Sea Army, which was formed of the Seven Nations Military Alliance, was standing at the both sides of the island. They marched forward and blocked their escape route.

The players grinned from ear to ear upon seeing the situation.

The Sea King was good enough to block them so the players could slaughter them to their hearts' content.

“Sea King, what is the meaning of this!” Lang Tie snarled at the Sea King.

The Sea King only smiled coldly and did not entertain him.

He never planned on letting Lang Tie go as he dared to provoke him today.

Moreover, after some contemplation, he had a plan to start a war with Langya Island, one of the three greatest forces to show off his power. He wanted to defeat their army and incorporate them into his own army to expand his forces.

Thus, he was not afraid of Lang Tie's threat.

The slaughter went on for a while. Lang Tie looked ferocious while his gaze swept through the players and stopped at the Sea King.

“Sea King, just you wait! I will tell my brother what you did. Just wait for the war!”

Lang Tie's silhouette floated into the air after he finished speaking. It seemed like he wanted to flee.

The players were unhappy to see that. They were going to lose so much loot if the biggest boss escaped.

Thousands of skills were flashed out to the sky instantly in an attempt to make him stay.

A sense of brutality flashed through the Sea King's eyes at the same time. He extended his hand and grabbed forward.

A black whirlpool appeared in front of Lang Tie in light of his terrified expression. A huge black hand appeared from the whirlpool suddenly and grabbed him.

“Ah!” Lang Tie groaned in pain as the black hand tightened its grip around him.

“Since you already said that you want to start a war, why should I spare you?” the Sea King chuckled. Then, with a sudden pinch of the black hand, Lang Tie’s eyes popped out instantly and his body was distorted.

After the black arm disappeared, Lang Tie’s body fell onto the ground like a pool of mud, without any trace of life.

“What the fuck... is he dead?”

“Oh my god. This is a terrible loss. My heart is aching!”

“Fuck, he crossed the line. That was our loot! Shit, my good feelings toward the Sea King are decreasing!”

“Sad. He was ours... ours!”

...

When they saw that Lang Tie was pinched to his death, the players stomped their feet and beat their chests while showing expressions full of grief.

The witnessing forces were again dumbfounded from this scene.

When your comrades died, not only did you guys not show any grievous expressions, you guys were even smiling. So why are you guys showing such sadness upon your enemy dying?

Furthermore, they could sense that the players’ grief was real as if it was from the bottom of their hearts and they were not faking it.

Everyone’s worldview was shaken once again. They were all stunned.

After slaughtering each and every one of the leftovers of the Langya Army, the players walked toward the Sea King angrily.

“Sea King, what is the meaning of this? Are you aware that you have gone too far? We came all the way to congratulate you on establishing a new nation but look at what you did in return! Motherfucker, I can’t believe you stole our kill! Is this what a boss should do?”

The Sea King maintained a cold face. Even though he could not understand their words, he could sense that the players were blaming him for killing Lang Tie.

“Honorable guests, please do not be angry. This is the day of establishing a new nation. Please return to the feast. The ceremony shall continue!” Sha Shui who was standing beside the Sea King wiped his own sweat and said quickly.

Sha Shui was trying to cool the situation down by giving some comforting words because similar to everyone at the scene, he thought that the players were blaming the Sea King for stopping them from attacking until they were satisfied.

From his perspective, this force was too awesome. With the idea that they might become their allied forces in the future, Sha Shui could already imagine their bright future together so he would definitely host them well.

“Brothers, it’s fine, the Sea King will definitely compensate us. Today is the day he establishes a new nation, so let’s treat Lang Tie as a present to him!”

“Fine. We only lost a Ghost General, no biggie. The Sea King will give us more Ghost Generals and Ghost Kings in the future anyway... let’s forget about this.”

“Fine, but Sea King, you have to understand that what you did was not right!”

...

After listening to Sha Shui’s words, the players contemplated for a while and decided to let this go.

After all, the Sea King was the biggest treasure mine in their eyes so they were willing to let go of other losses. The existence of the Sea King alone was equivalent to countless experience points and soul coins, which was the most important point for them anyways.

Thus, under the Sea King's cold stare, the players walked back toward the feast leisurely while being led by Sha Shui.

They were exhausted from the battle so it was time to recover their stamina.

The way other forces looked at the players was totally different this time.

Some looked at them admirably and respectfully, but the majority of them looked at them fearfully.

It would be petrifying to be targeted by such a powerful force. Needless to think, they would only give up when they have eradicated the entire clan.

All the forces who originally wanted to cause trouble on the Nation Establishing Ceremony backed off after witnessing the battle.

They were scared to say anything wrong to the Sea King as they might get some scolding from these strange soldiers and would be forced to have a protracted battle with them.

However, aside from the forces who were scared of the players' power and did not want to be their enemy, there were also forces who wanted to befriend them. After all, they envied the Sea King for being able to make allies with such a powerful force.

Thus, some of them approached them and sucked up to them.

Nonetheless, the players did not entertain them.

To the players, the guests were all soul coins and experience points to be harvested in the future. Other than the Sea King, who was a progressing treasure mine, the other characters had no value to them as they could be harvested completely in a short span. Hence, they treated the other forces coldly as they did not want to waste their effort and emotion on them.

The forces who intended to befriend the players were disappointed with their attitude.

However, Hei Sui, Tian Kun, Sha Shui and the rest were delighted to see such a scene.

This indicated that only the Sea King deserved to be friends with them. Moreover, the previous incident also showed that this force was loyal and willing to challenge any enemy for the sake of defending their friends.

With the assistance of such a great force, there would be no need to worry about the future of the Mu Te Sea Nation.

Looking at the smiles on the faces of Sha Shui and the others, the corners of the Sea King's mouth twitched.

He was not an idiot. Even though he was unsure of the reason why the Beiqi Army would support him, he knew they had some hidden intention.

However, the Sea King did not plan on doing anything there since they didn't provoke him this time.

All in all, his priority was to strengthen the military power of the Mu Te Sea Army and incorporate the surrounding forces into his army. However, he never forgot his hatred from the previous war. He was determined to defeat Beiqi.

The Nation Establishing Ceremony went well after the incident. The players enjoyed the food and drinks happily.

The players were prepared to return to Beiqi after the ceremony ended.

They gave the Sea King a determined gaze and showed a supporting gesture right before they left.

Good luck!

Looking at this scene, the corners of the Sea King's mouth twitched again as he felt a discomfort in his heart.



He was unsure of the reason, but he really felt like strangling them all to death!

On the other hand, Sha Shui and the others accompanied them throughout the journey. After sending them onboard, Sha Shui waved goodbye to them smilingly and even told them to make frequent visits.

Looking at Xinmo Island, which was getting further away, the players' faces were full of contentment.

This journey was not a waste as they had each earned a lot of experience points and soul coins. Also, the food served at the feast was delicious and suited their appetite.

It could be said that their bodies and hearts were both equally satisfied.

# Chapter 234 - The Power Of The Players

Chapter 234: The Power Of The Players

Kuilong Ocean, Xinmo Island.

The players and other forces left one after the other at the end of the Nation Establishing Ceremony.

However, one player stayed and did not return with the team.

He was none other than Wang Damang from the Great Dragon Guild.

He was supposed to return with his guild members after the feast had ended. However, after getting tipsy from the wine at the feast, he went for a leak in the forest and accidentally found a cave.

Looking from the outside, there was a faint glowing white light inside the cave.

After using the forum for so many years, he knew the possibility of Hidden Quests existing in every corner of this world. Thus, he walked into the cave, full of excitement.

In the end, he found a huge white piece of jade inside the cave. On top of it was a gorgeous lady sitting with her legs crossed.

Her curvy figure could be vaguely seen underneath the shining white light. Her dark straight hair was put up with an elegant silver hairpin. Without any makeup on her face, she wore a bright yellow dress with a jade-green ribbon on her waist, showing her slender figure and beauty.

Looking at her gorgeous appearance, Wang Damang thought that he was falling in love. She is too beautiful. Is this what it feels like to fall in love?

With just one look, Wang Damang was already thinking of what to call their future children.

However, the lady suddenly opened her eyes and looked at Wang Damang.

Noticing the affection on Wang Damang's face, her expression gradually turned cold, "Who are you?"

"I'm just... passing by," noticing the lady's anger, Wang Damang quickly put up both of his hands, showing that he had no bad intentions.

"Hmph!" when she was about to say something, her body shook and she vomited dark blood out of her mouth. Her body looked so weak, as if she may fall at any time.

Wang Damang wanted to help her up immediately upon seeing that. However, he stopped his footsteps when he saw her staring at him coldly.

"I have medicine!"

Sensing the lady's refusal, Wang Damang backed off a few steps and took out some spiritual materials with healing capabilities from the channel. He gave it to her tentatively.

The lady did not answer but her expression remained cautious. It was apparent that she did not trust Wang Damang.

They were in a deadlock whereby they stared at each other for a while. Suddenly, the lady's tense body relaxed and collapsed on top of the jade platform.

Wang Damang quickly moved forward upon seeing that and opened his Analysis Menu.

[Tian Lan (Beginner Ghost General)]:

Character Details: The King of the Tian Yu Nation, Tian Kun's, youngest daughter. She was ambushed and wounded badly when she was fighting for the throne with Tian Kun's other children.

Character State: Injured badly, fainted (deteriorating).

Wang Damang was stunned upon checking her information.

He did not expect this lady to be someone under the Sea King's forces. They could be considered as soon-to-be rivals.

However, Wang Damang could not stand seeing the lady lose her life.

This lady was not a player so she could not drink the Revive Potion and he did not know anything about medicine. He was thrown into an awkward situation.

After some contemplation, an idea flashed through Wang Damang's mind. He then opened up the livestream menu.

After all, there were all kinds of talent among the players. With all the players' power and assistance, he believed that they would be able to solve this problem.

[Help! Is there anyone with great medical skills? Please help and figure out what to do!]

Since Wang Damang was a forum veteran, many players swarmed into his post as soon as they saw his livestream.

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Fuck, Damang, you're quite good. Where did you find such a gorgeous lady? Did you drug her? Shame on you!"

Watermelon\_Taro: "Jealous! Jealous!"

Lost8kToOnlineDating: "Brother Damang, are you showing off your romantic encounter? I'm so jealous!"

...

Looking at the players' comments in the live streaming channel, three black lines appeared on Wang Damang's forehead. He then said, "Guys, please figure out a way to help her. She is wounded very badly but she cannot

drink the Revive Potion because she's not a player. I have spiritual materials with me now but I don't know which to use. She has fainted and can no longer eat anything. Please help me to think of a way!"

Eat\_My\_Revive\_Milk: "I am good at this. Show me her wounds and I will teach you what to do next."

A\_Med\_Student\_Cannot\_Save\_Beiqi: "Exactly, we have to look at the wounds first!"

Beiqi\_Godly\_Herb\_Farmer: "We can only give the proper medication after confirming what condition she is in. Brother Damang, please follow our instructions..."

...

Looking at the players' replies, Wang Damang turned to look at the lady who was still unconscious. After skimming through her body, he noticed that she had some blood stains on her shoulder, hence he extended his trembling hands toward her.

His nose started bleeding as soon as he opened up a little corner of her collar lightly.

Back in the live streaming channel:

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Fuck, I'm going to report your livestream for involving obscene content. This is too stimulating but I will finish watching it before reporting (nosebleed.jpg)!"

Assassin\_Creed: "Oh my God, are you for real? Brother Damang, you are really testing the limit. I think you might be the first player whose account is going to get suspended (nosebleed.jpg)!"

TheDarkMage: "Damang, human lives are precious. Do it now... what are you waiting for? (nosebleed.jpg)"

...

After reading through the players' comments, Wang Damang clenched his teeth and opened up the lady's collar, showing her fair shoulder to the players.

However, Wang Damang had a sense of propriety. He did not overstep his boundaries as he did not reveal any more than her shoulder.

There was an obvious punch mark on the lady's left shoulder. The central part was turning black and strange black lines were growing like a spider web. The lines seemed to be moving as if they were spreading to the surroundings.

In the live streaming channel:

A\_Med\_Student\_Cannot\_Save\_Beiqi: "Please check if she has been poisoned. Brother Damang, do you have a Level 4 spiritual material known as the Ming Guo Herb? This spiritual material has detoxification abilities, you can try grinding it into powder and applying it on the wound."

Wang Damang read the comment and nodded. He took out a Ming Guo Herb from his channel and crushed the herb following the player's instructions. Then, he applied it to her wound.

Within a short span of time, the herbs sucked out the darkness from the lady's wound at a speed visible to human eyes. Wang Damang's face was full of astonishment.

Beiqi\_Godly\_Herb\_Farmer: "Keep going. The color has faded a lot but it is still not enough. Do you have any more Ming Guo Herbs? If you don't, the Level 2 spiritual material Poison Absorbing Fruit is fine, too, but it would not be as effective."

Addicted\_To\_Crafting\_Potions: "If you don't have enough detoxifying materials, you can mix the Fire Rock Flower and Mercury Herb, crush them and stir well. It has the effect of detoxification as well. I found out about this by myself through experimenting and research."

Looking at the players' comments, Wang Damang who was initially worried about the lack of Ming Guo Herbs finally heaved a sigh of relief and treated the lady according to their methods.

Needless to say, the power of all the players combined was strong.

Relying on their guidance, Wang Damang cleared out all the black poison from the lady's shoulder through continuous attempts.

After that, he followed their instructions and squeezed out all the polluted blood.

After everything was settled, Wang Damang wiped the sweat off his forehead. Once again, he used the Analysis Menu to check on the lady and was surprised upon seeing that the deteriorating label had disappeared.

Looking at the successful operation, the players in the live streaming channel cheered with joy.

In the live streaming channel:

Crayon\_Shinchan: "We did it. Are we going to have a special show after this? (laughing emoji) Don't think we don't know what you're thinking. If this was a badly injured male Ghost General, I assure you that he would have grabbed a sword and stabbed him. If he did not die, he would stab him a few more times (laughing emoji)!"

Assassin\_Creed: "Appearance is indeed important in this world. If you have a good appearance, you will do well in the gaming world as well (sighing emoji)!"

Best\_Love\_Guru\_Of\_Beiqi: "Brother Damang, I can see that you have a crush on her. Do you need some guidance from me?"

Wang Damang replied to Best\_Love\_Guru\_Of\_Beiqi: "Really?"

Best\_Love\_Guru\_Of\_Beiqi replied to Wang Damang: "Of course... you have to know that the characters in this game have emotions. They are different from the emotionless artificial intelligence in the past."

Wang Damang replied to Best\_Love\_Guru\_Of\_Beiqi: “Master, please guide me! I want to have an online relationship. (worshipping emoji!)”

...

Looking at Wang Damang, who was desperate for an online relationship, the players spammed the live streaming channel.

In the players’ eyes, Wang Damang had a good personality and he was helpful to many, so a lot of players who recognized themselves as relationship veterans were willing to lend a helping hand.

Every single one of them assured Wang Damang that it was going to be successful. They were helping him plan a flirting strategy before the lady regained consciousness.

The livestream, which at first concerned the players helping Wang Damang to rescue a person’s life, turned into a class to teach Wang Damang how to flirt with a girl. This further displayed the great powers the players possessed.

...

The Void Ocean.

On the Great Dragon Warship, Chen Ziyu and others were seated together in a circle as they discussed the funny things and lessons they learned on Xinmo Island.

With a smile, Xue Li stretched her hands to tap her right side, but there was no one there. Her expression changed immediately.

“Hmm... boss, where’s Damang?”

Chen Ziyu skimmed around upon hearing that. His expression slowly turned awkward.

He remembered clearly that Damang was still there when they finished the battle with the forces from Langya Island. He was also drinking at the feast.



Why did he disappear?

Did we leave him at Xinmo Island? The same thought flashed through everyone's mind. Everyone went into deep silence after that.

“Damang, Damang, can you hear me?”

After some contemplation, Xue Li voiced out in the guild live chat channel.

She could imagine Wang Damang being filled with resentment at that moment.

“Yeah? Xue Li, is there anything?” Damang's rough voice was heard.

“Damang, are you mad?” Xue Li continued speaking with light laughs.

“Mad? Why should I be mad?”

“You are really mad!” Xue Li heaved a deep sigh, “Damang, do you want to make a suicidal escape or do you want us to come and fetch you?”

“Don't, don't, don't, please go back first. I have my own Specter Ship, I can come back by myself!”

“Damang, please don't be mad. We didn't do this on purpose!”

Xue Li still wanted to save Wang Damang who might be having a mental breakdown.

After all, Wang Damang was a veteran member in the guild, hence they were really sorry for forgetting about him.

“I said I'm not mad!”

“Damang, as a man, please don't be so petty. This is such a small matter!” Xue Li said again softly.

“Damang, I apologize for my mistake. Just come back first. Stop throwing a tantrum!” Chen Ziyu couldn't stop himself from saying.

Wang Damang was rendered speechless.

I really don't want to leave!

# Chapter 235 - Wang Damang's Acting Time

## Chapter 235: Wang Damang's Acting Time

Love at first sight was the precise description of Wang Damang's current state.

He was already memorizing the script while the lady was unconscious.

Needless to say, he was preparing himself according to the plot drafted by the other players, so that he could capture the heart of the lady in front of him.

After two hours had passed, Tian Lan fluttered her eyelashes and gently opened her eyes as she awoke from her ordeal.

To her great astonishment, she was greeted by the sight of Wang Damang staring at her with a concerned expression, "Hey, how are you feeling..."

Smack!

Before he could offer a word of concern, a hefty punch swiftly landed on Wang Damang's face, sending him flying.

She slowly sat up and peered at Wang Damang who fell sprawling across the floor. Then, she took a quick look at her left shoulder which was slightly wet.

To her surprise, she discovered that the initial numbness in her shoulder had faded and she had regained her senses.

She was stunned for a few seconds before she looked at Wang Damang again, the hostility in her eyes diminishing significantly.

Wang Damang was clearly dejected at that moment.

This is completely different from the damn script! Why am I getting attacked at the beginning? Are those love gurus even reliable?

He slowly picked himself up from the floor and smiled at Tian Lan awkwardly.

“Did you save me?” Tian Lan continued staring at Wang Damang.

“That’s right!”

He had to admit that.

Tian Lan’s cheeks were instantly flushed as her expression seemed uncertain.

Wang Damang was baffled and swept a glance at the live streaming channel unconsciously.

Best\_Love\_Guru\_Of\_Beiqi: “Judging from my years of dating experience, she must be brought up in a more old-fashioned manner. She might be the type where she must marry the man who saw her body. (laughing emoji)”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Well, I did see her body. (laughing emoji)”

Assasin\_Creed: “I’ve seen it, too. (laughing emoji)”

...

Reading the unscrupulous comments from the players, Wang Damang thought that they were unreliable. Yet, some expectations still remained in his heart.

Looking at the lady’s cheeks that were becoming redder, he unconsciously took a step closer.

“Urgh!” Tian Lan spat out another pool of blood and the redness on her face faded subsequently.

Tian Lan felt a lot better after removing the congested blood out of her system. She looked up and glanced at Wang Damang, who was still approaching her and attacked again.

Smack!

Wang Damang was thrown off once again.

“Stop coming so close to me!”

Wang Damang, who fell on the floor pathetically, was devastated. Why is everything not going as planned? None of those crappy love guru directors is reliable!

“Can you get me out of here? I’ll give you a Son of the Sea in return,” Tian Lan asked as she stared at Wang Damang weakly.

Thoroughly amazed, the players flooded the live streaming channel with comments upon hearing that. It was a golden opportunity for Wang Damang, without a doubt.

“Isn’t this where you live? Why would you want to leave?” Wang Damang asked, even though he was actually tempted by the Son of the Sea.

“All my siblings want me dead! I will definitely die if I stay here!” Tian Lan replied with an ice-cold expression.

With her introduction in the Analysis Menu in mind, Wang Damang knew precisely the reason. However, he still had some uncertainties, “Why don’t you tell your father about this?”

“My father actually encourages competition for the throne. He believes that only those who have gone through the experiences and stand out from the competition shall be worthy of his position. So, he will not interfere even if I die!” Tian Lan’s face fell as she spoke.

“I can get you out of here, I have a Specter Ship!” Wang Damang replied decisively after knowing the reason.

Since the scripts cannot be relied on, I should bring her back to Beiqi first, the rest will have to wait.

A hint of surprise appeared on Tian Lan's face upon hearing that Wang Damang had a Specter Ship, "Hurry!"

Wang Damang took a step forward, wanting to help Tian Lan up, but he was attacked by her again.

"You walk in the front, I'll be right behind you. Walk slowly!"

Dispirited, Wang Damang picked himself up again. Online dating is tough.

Despite that, he still led Tian Lan to the coastline. At the same time, though, he was busy planning his next moves to win her heart.

Tian Lan who was following behind Wang Damang was still on guard. She was scanning her surroundings with heightened alertness.

I can finally escape this place. Tian Lan heaved a sigh of relief when they reached the coast of Xinmo Island.

Suddenly, a shadow galloped from their back and blocked their way, "My dear little sister, where are you going? Didn't you swear that you'll become the next King of the Tian Yu Nation? Are you finally willing to leave?"

The charming lady chortled as she blocked both Wang Damang and Tian Lan from stepping forward.

Looking at the lady in front of them, Tian Lan's pupils shrank abruptly as she knew that something bad was going to happen. Her second sister had arrived and she would definitely not let her off so easily, especially when she was heavily wounded like this.

In a flash, another two figures appeared and stood next to the charming lady.

"Eldest brother, second brother, and second sister, please let me go. I'm not taking part in the competition anymore. The Sea King is now the true king,

there's no point for us to kill each other!" Tian Lan said weakly as she stared at the three of them.

"You're not wrong about the Sea King but what we are competing for now is the position of the Eight Lords below him. You are gifted so you're still a potential threat to us. Since we joined up to wound you, do you think that we'll let you go?" the charming lady looked at Tian Lan and laughed heartily.

"A woman's heart is the most vicious. She is your sister! Are you not afraid to be hit with karma for doing this?"

"Also, both of you! If I have such a younger sister, I would shower her with love every single day. Instead, you guys are planning to kill her! Are you even human? Are... you... even... human...?"

Wang Damang could not help but snap as he observed the scene, "Who are you!? It's none of your business here. Leave now and we might consider sparing your measly life!"

The charming lady's expression turned cold as she glared at Wang Damang, her eyes filled with murderous intent.

"Just leave! Don't worry about me!"

Looking at Wang Damang who was playing a hero like a fool, Tian Lan was not touched at all. He must be an idiot.

"No, I will never leave you!" Wang Damang said with a solemn face.

Expecting to see Tian Lan's deeply moved face, he turned his head around. However, he realized that Tian Lan was merely looking at him as if he was an idiot.

Wang Damang's imposing manner crumbled in an instant.

Fuck, this is nothing like those television dramas! Wang Damang was somewhat discouraged for failing to act tough again.

“Since you wish to die, I shall send both of you to the afterworld!” with an evil smile, the charming lady waved her arm and a purple arc solidified in her hands before forming into a spear.

...

After sending off the last few guests, Sha Shui, Tian Kun, Hei Sui, and the others walked back with a grin on their faces.

The attitude of the numerous forces changed drastically after the Nation Establishing Ceremony had ended, when even the feared Langya Island had returned home. It could be said that they had let out their resentment.

They realized that the Sea King’s ruling might not be a bad thing, after all.

After all, it was the Sea King who was controlling the Army of Death. With the military strength from the Seven Nations and those intimidating military alliances, they believed that they could still be lords that owned parts of the ocean with supreme power.

They were filled with confidence in their future.

In the midst of their conversation on their way back, Sha Shui suddenly looked ahead, “Hey, Tian Kun, those seem to be your children. Are they killing each other?” Sha Shui was shocked.

“Ignore them, just let them be. This is what the future generations of Tian Yu must experience. This is how I seized the throne,” Tian Kun replied, not even the least bothered.

“Oh, since you say so, let’s just...”

Sha Shui who was still looking at both parties nearby, who were drawing their daggers. Before he could finish his sentence, he noticed that something was amiss.

Isn’t that familiar face a member of the alliance? He had some vague impression of this person, he even had a few glasses with him during the ceremony.



Meanwhile, the charming lady had already drawn her spear, which formed an arc, as she bolted toward Wang Damang.

“The fuck, stop! Don’t do it!” Sha Shui howled as he transformed into a light and streamed toward them.

Seeing Sha Shui’s sudden change in expression as she suddenly disappeared, Tian Kun and the others also realized that something was off. Hastily, they turned their heads to look at what was happening.

Tian Kun’s high blood pressure almost shot through the roof at the sight that unfolded upon him.

His own daughter was charging against a member of the prided alliance. Is she asking for death?

“Argh! Stop what you’re doing!” Tian Kun bellowed as well and transformed into another light toward it.

As the incoming purple spear was charging in, Wang Damang would definitely not be a sitting duck. He took out his dagger immediately and blocked the incoming attack.

However, Wang Damang had not even passed the Ghost Commander Trials. Having a Beginner Ghost General as an opponent, he was knocked out instantly as his health was almost completely wiped out. He would have been killed in mere seconds if his opponent exerted more force.

“Such a weakling, yet you dared to play the hero?”

Sarcasm was written over the lady’s face. The purple spear flew back into her hands when she raised her arm, as she prepared to hurl it again.

Multiple howls echoed from afar, followed by a figure appearing beside her.

The charming lady’s expression tensed as she thought that there was an ambush. She immediately turned around, only to see a shoe sole covered with sand amplifying before her.

Crash!

To everyone's astonishment, Sha Shui ruthlessly kicked the charming lady, flinging her into the air.

"Who are you?" the charming lady who fell on the ground did a backflip and rose to her feet steadily. Fuming in anger, she reached out to touch the sand and shoe print on her face.

Then, she heard some howling of the wind from another side and hurriedly turned around. Another shoe sole, also covered with sand, amplified in front of her and once again, she was kicked off into the air.

Tian Kun heaved a sigh of relief after landing a kick on his second daughter and gave a grateful glance to Sha Shui.

Sha Shui's expression was overcome with terror as he wiped off the nervous sweat from his forehead.

The few of them had huge expectations on the alliance. The Sea King would not forgive them if things went haywire, which then they would not be able to forgive themselves.

A few more rays of lights descended. The few lords that arrived later also seemed extremely taken aback.

Tian Kun laid his eyes on his two sons and glared angrily.

Tian Lan's eldest brother and second brother fell to their knees, kneeling on the floor without hesitation.

Even though they were oblivious to what was happening, the fact that the Lords of the Seven Nations were there meant that there must be a grave issue. No matter what it was, it would be wise to kneel down first.

"Argh!" the charming lady leaped up in a backflip again, the purple rays on the spear in her hand glowing brightly.

To her horror, though, she realized that the noble Lords of The Seven Nations were all there. They were surrounding the young man's side and checking on him.

Meanwhile, her two brothers were all on their knees with their heads bumped on the floor.

What's going on?

She was not the only dumbfounded one. Even Tian Lan, who initially thought that Wang Damang was not bright, was stupefied and frozen to the ground.

# Chapter 236 - : It Cannot Be!

Chapter 236: It Cannot Be!

The Lords of the Seven Nations heaved sighs of relief upon seeing that Wang Damang was not severely injured.

The risk of breaking that union was considered gone for now.

However, the Lords of the Seven Nations still felt somewhat uneasy. They understood the temperament of the alliance members and it would not be an exaggeration to describe them for having short tempers like bulls.

They remembered that the alliance members did not give any face to those strong forces that befriended them after the battle with Langya Island.

The attitude of the Lords of the Seven Nations toward those forces was pretty complicated.

There were some expectations and fears, but in short, they didn't want to break that relationship.

They could see that Wang Damang's status was different from ordinary because of his position during the ceremony.

Hence, they were racking their brains to think of a way to explain the situation to him.

Of course, Wang Damang was unaware of the lords' inner thoughts, so he remained in a daze.

From his perspective, the two forces could begin to consider each other as opponents after the ceremony. Yet, their attitudes were not reflecting that at all.

Perhaps the Sea King has yet to tell them our origin? This thought popped up in Wang Damang's mind.

“Brother, you can leave that up to us. As an alliance, we will definitely provide you an explanation!” Tian Kun hastily spoke.

From Tian Kun's perspective, he had the deepest involvement in this matter. The lords of the other nations would not let him off the hook if he was unable to give a proper explanation. Therefore, he was already brainstorming about how to bury this matter and give a satisfactory explanation to Wang Damang.

After that, Tian Kun turned around and glared at his second daughter, who was frozen completely, while holding the purple spear with a horror-stricken expression.

“Tian Xin, how dare you lay a finger on our honorable guest!”

Plop!

Tian Xin, who had already noticed the dreadful situation, instantly went down on her knees and eyed Tian Kun in fear, “Father, I didn't know... all my actions are in accordance with our clan rules. I really didn't do anything wrong.”

“There's no need to explain. You nearly killed an honorable guest, it's an unforgivable crime! However, you're my daughter. So, I shall allow you to leave with dignity.”

Tian Xin's heart sank and her face turned ashen pale instantly as she looked at Tian Kun's cold, unforgiving eyes.

From Tian Kun's words, she knew that there was no way that he would let her live.

The Tian Yu Clan's affection for their children was almost nonexistent. Otherwise, they would not allow them to fight for the throne in such a murderous contest.

Tian Xin looked extremely bitter, as her hand that was holding the spear trembled violently.

She desperately wished to flee. However, with the Lords of the Seven Nations present, there was nowhere for her to escape.

Realizing that, Tian Xin raised her purple spear slowly. She gave a hateful glance to her father before transforming the spear into a purple light and sliced it across her throat. With a thump, her lifeless body fell onto the floor.

Looking at her second daughter on the ground with hatred in her eyes, Tian Kun's expression was unmoved. Instead, he turned to Wang Damang expectantly.

“Are you serious!?” Wang Damang was in shock after witnessing Tian Xin committing suicide without any hesitation.

Are they really father and daughter?

When one asked her to kill herself, she would just take her life without any hesitation?

Wang Damang's worldviews were instantly toppled at this moment.

He was reminded of himself when he was younger. He used to love playing video games which resulted in his poor academic results. His mother was so angry that she smashed his virtual reality headset and took a broom to beat him.

Looking at his virtual reality headset getting destroyed, young Wang Damang did not think much and grabbed another broom to fight with his mother.

If I was brought up in accordance with Lord Tian Kun's family practices, I would have died a few hundred times. He shuddered at his own thought.

“My honorable guest, my second daughter has committed a sin and has taken her own life now. Are you satisfied with this punishment?”

Looking at the smile on Tian Kun's face, Wang Damang wanted to give him a punch.

Are you even human?

Then, his vision fell on Tian Lan's ashen expression.

Of course, Tian Kun noticed the admiration in Wang Damang's eyes and said gleefully, "My honorable guest, Tian Lan is my youngest daughter. What happened is entirely my fault, so how about I give my youngest daughter to you as a servant... as an apology?"

Wang Damang was dumbfounded upon hearing that. What the fuck? Are you even human? This is too... too exciting.

The livestream was still going on and the players who were watching were all stupefied.

Crayon\_Shinchan: "This is great! He allowed one daughter to commit suicide and the other to be a servant so calmly. This man's role as a father is out of this world."

Watermelon\_Taro: "My perception has already changed at Shitun Island due to the mentally disabled clan, but this one is even better. Wow!"

Assasin\_Creed: "I'm beating my chest here, why did we all leave? We should have stayed there, so that I can have some of that, too."

Broke\_Trash: "Do you guys think I'll make it in time if I go now? (laughing emoji)"

Death\_Is\_Like\_Wind: "I want to see what Damang will decide. I would definitely agree if it was up to me. (laughing emoji)"

...

Even though Wang Damang wanted to give Tian Kun a bad scolding for justice, he hesitated after taking a glance at Tian Lan.

This is a stunning lady, I will definitely lose her if I disagree.

“Father, I am willing to!”

Tian Lan, who was beside Wang Damang, took the initiative to speak first before Wang Damang could.

Tian Kun’s face showed great happiness upon hearing that, “Haha, great! You shall be his servant from now on.”

Tian Kun had already decided for Wang Damang before he could agree.

Tian Kun remained cheery as he looked at Wang Damang’s astounded face, “Please take my daughter with you since she is already yours. As for my two sons who dared to offend you, I shall punish them after returning home.”

Tian Kun turned around and glared at his sons, who were trembling violently as they kneeled on the ground, “Return at once!”

After his sons stood up, Tian Kun spoke to Wang Damang again, “My honorable guest, we still have some things to report to the Sea King. We shall excuse ourselves.”

Tian Kun took a respectful bow, while Wang Damang was still in a daze. He then grabbed his sons and dashed into the air with the other lords.

“Let’s go!” Tian Lan shot a look at Wang Damang.

Wang Damang could feel his heart melting when he realized that Tian Lan was willing to leave with him. He nodded quickly and led Tian Lan to the coastline. Then, he summoned his Specter Ship to Tian Lan’s astonishment.

Wang Damang was already having fantasies of his beautiful future once they boarded the Specter Ship.

The atmosphere in the ship seemed to be awkward, as the two of them had yet to say anything even after sailing for half an hour.



“Who are you exactly? My father and the other lords seemed to fear you,” Tian Lan asked.

“Me? I’m a member of the Beiqi Army!” Wang Damang replied with honesty, since he was already taking Tian Lan back.

“Beiqi? The Ruler of the Void Ocean?” Tian Lan was astonished.

Tian Lan was confused, “Father would not have treated you so, unless you’re the child of the King of Beiqi. Perhaps there are any other reasons?”

“Perhaps it had something to do with the Sea King. After all, I’m an old friend of his.”

Tian Lan had an epiphany when she heard that he was related to the Sea King, “You’re one of the Sea King’s honorable guests!”

Wang Damang was amused upon hearing the phrase honorable guest, “We seem to have a good relationship with the Sea King now, but a huge battle is on its way!”

Wang Damang shared about the Beiqi Army’s outstanding battle achievements while opposing the Sea King while Tian Lan listened in shock.

Wang Damang gushed on about how they had bullied the Sea King.

He talked about the times when they snatched the Sea King’s treasures, bullied the members of the Sea King Navy, destroyed the Sea King Navy, wiped out his Army of Death, and everything else that happened. Tian Lan’s eyes bulged while she listened, she almost thought that Wang Damang was telling tall tales.

After all, she was fully aware of how powerful the Sea King was.

However, judging from her father and the other lords’ attitudes, it seemed like Wang Damang was telling the truth.

Tian Lan was shocked and her mind was in complete disarray. Obviously, she could not believe the fact that an idiot like Wang Damang had such a big, powerful force behind him.

After another moment of silence, Tian Lan raised her head suddenly and took out a blue fruit from her waist pocket. She handed it to Wang Damang and said, “We have now left Xin Mo Island. Here’s the Son of the Sea like I promised. Now, we don’t owe anything to each other anymore!”

After tossing the Son of the Sea to Wang Damang, she stood up and walked out of the cabin.

Wang Damang glanced at the Son of the Sea in his palm, before walking out of the cabin to catch up to her. However, Tian Lan had already dove into the water.

A white wave subsequently appeared and sped off to a distant place, before vanishing from his vision.

What the fuck?

What about becoming my servant? Did she just leave... just like that?

What the fuck, where’s your basic trust? You were the one who agreed!

Tian Lan had again done the unexpected and hurt Wang Damang’s fragile heart.

Apparently, television dramas are all lies!

Wang Damang who initially thought that he had finally found a date online, sat on the deck in despair with the Son of the Sea in his arms. As he gazed at the direction where Tian Lan left, he seemed to be lost in his thoughts.

...

Mu Te Royal Palace, Xin Mo Island.

The Sea King's expression was becoming more complicated as he listened to Tian Kun and the others.

“Hold on, you said that you allowed your second daughter to commit suicide as an apology and gave your youngest daughter away to be his servant?”

“Yes, my king. Such a grand act was necessary for the guarantee of a future friendship between both forces. As for my two sons, I shall punish them well as an explanation for the alliance,” Tian Kun spoke, clearly proud of his actions.

The Sea King listened and nearly snorted. Then, he gave Tian Kun a thumbs-up, “Badass!”

“My king, what does badass mean?” Tian Kun asked in astonishment.

The Sea King would definitely not tell them that it was a player slang and simply replied, “Do you know which forces they're from?”

Tian Kun and the others seemed greatly curious when they heard that. Even though they had been in contact a few times, they still did not know which force this alliance was from.”

“They are the Beiqi Army, the force that I swore to destroy!”

“They are also the ones who annihilated the Sea King Navy. I would still be the overlord of the Void Ocean if it wasn't for them! In other words, they are my worst enemy!” the Sea King added to further emphasize his vengeance between him and the players.

“Yikes!”

Gasps of cold breath echoed. The lords were all completely dumbstruck.

The so-called alliance force which we tried so hard to please, is actually our worst enemy?

“It... it cannot be!” Tian Kun replied, his lips trembling.

“All of you shall have plenty of chances to be in touch with them in the future. You will all understand by then!” the Sea King threw Tian Kun another look and shook his head, before turning around and walking to the rear.

Tian Kun was thoroughly dumbstruck, frozen to the spot he was standing at. Sha Shui and the rest were also wildly disconcerted. After some time, they turned to Tian Kun and gave him a thumbs-up...

“Badass!”

# Chapter 237 - Lu Wu Was Ambushed

## Chapter 237: Lu Wu Was Ambushed

The gamers' lives had more or less returned to normal after the Sea King had built his nation.

Aside from waiting for the Sea King to strengthen his forces, their daily routine was just to chop wood, kill monsters, and so on.

Currently, the size of the Death Clan in the Void Ocean was increasing. They were even expanding toward Beiqi, which resulted in frequent skirmishes with the players.

Lu Wu could already guess what the Sea King's plan was.

It was clear that he was trying to deplete the Beiqi Army's energy by leveraging the Death Clan's undead advantage. He would then gather his forces to have a deathmatch with them.

However, the Sea King was unaware of the features of the players. Needless to say, he was way too naive.

Lu Wu was not the only one who was satisfied with the Sea King's plan, the players were even more pleased with it.

He really deserved to be the most popular boss in the game!

In the meantime, Lu Wu was strategizing the expansion of Beiqi's land.

The north was definitely not in his consideration, as the European server's Cangxu was located there.

Therefore, heading west toward the Barren Grassland and south toward the Arctic Abyss became Lu Wu's target for expansion.

Lu Wu noticed that the ice mountains at the Arctic Abyss were melting after Frozen the Ghost Emperor had left.

Also, the players soon learned in the forum that the Earth Breaking Clan had the materials to develop Rune Masters. Thus, they went to investigate the Barren Grassland in the west and realized that the whole clan was gone.

That was undoubtedly good news for Lu Wu.

Both the Earth Breaking Clan and the Ice Snow Clan may not have a huge number of clansmen, but they possessed powerful strength.

By relying on their ability to revive without limits, the players could possibly fight them and cause some damage. However, there was still a vast gap with their overall strength.

Now that the ancient clans were long gone, it could be said that all of Beiqi's forces were under Lu Wu's control.

After some careful contemplation, Lu Wu finally decided that his next step for the expansion would be directed toward the Land of the Nine Luminaries to the west of the Barren Grassland.

After all, the path to the Arctic Abyss would be too cold and unsuitable for the players. As long as the ice mountains had yet to melt, Lu Wu would not put that location into consideration.

After deciding on the next direction they would take, he then queried the omnipotent Bei Li about the status of forces distribution in the Land of the Nine Luminaries.

According to her, the Land of the Nine Luminaries was formed by nine strong forces. However, unlike Beiqi's forces that were scattered around, they were ruled as one unified domain.

The domain was controlled by nine brothers. Star Luminary, the eldest among them, was the king. His strength was on par with a Greater Ghost Emperor or higher.

In other words, it would be extremely tough to take over the Land of the Nine Luminaries.

As the nine brothers were very united, they would fend off outsiders together whenever they were under attack. The entire Land of Beiqi might collapse under their counter-attack if they started a war directly.

Nevertheless, Lu Wu was not in a rush. He focused on planning the main quests for the development to the west instead.

After finalizing his decisions, it was time for a walk.

Since he had already stayed at home for a few months after transforming into a kitten, he decided to go out to look around and drop by the supermarket for some groceries on his way back. He wanted to prepare a nice meal for Bei Li. After all, he had already grown tired of Bei Li's unhealthy snacks.

Lu Wu went downstairs after greeting Bei Li and walked to the grocery store.

Breathing in the fresh air outside and watching the orange sunset, Lu Wu realized how beautiful it was to be alive.

Suddenly, Lu Wu's phone rang as he was turning into an alley.

Lu Wu unlocked the screen and realized that it was another call from the Jie De Corporation.

"Hello? What's up now?" Lu Wu decided to pick up the phone, after a few moments of hesitation.

"I'm giving you one last chance to consider. Are you really not going to unblock our gaming pods?"

The voice over the phone was hoarse, but Lu Wu only chuckled, “My company is poor and the devs cannot even afford to pay the employee salaries. We don’t have any other choice.”

“You’ve just established a firm foothold in the gaming industry, I don’t think that you have seen enough. You’re too naive. Do you really think that we can’t handle you?” the voice said threateningly.

“Oh? Are you threatening me? Police, please help me!”

“I initially thought that it would be difficult to find you. Little did I know, you’re only using a common, unencrypted phone. This was absolutely out of my expectation and also saved me a lot of work. Since you still insist on becoming our enemy, that’s too bad.”

After he had finished speaking, he hung up the call, letting the irritating beeps ring endlessly from his phone. Lu Wu was slightly baffled by that peculiar exchange.

Suddenly, he felt a gush of wind from his back.

Smash!

A heavy blow landed on his head, as a burly figure appeared behind him.

The person waited for Lu Wu to collapse, but Lu Wu merely turned around with confusion after a few seconds. He was holding his aching head, evidently perplexed.

Surprised that he was still standing, Number One’s eyes instantly widened.

He did not go all out for that hit, as the group’s order was just to kidnap Lu Wu to exploit him.

Still, it should have been strong enough to render Lu Wu unconscious. He did not expect Lu Wu to be perfectly unharmed.

“Who are you!?” Lu Wu couldn’t help but grumble.



When he noticed the black iron in the burly man's hand, he thought of what the representative from the Jie De Corporation had said over the phone. Lu Wu already had a clear guess of where this person came from.

Number One struck again, he raised the iron baton and hit Lu Wu's neck brutally.

He struck with more force this time, certain that Lu Wu wouldn't be able to endure the hit.

Smash!

However, Lu Wu did not repel his attack and took it gallantly. However, his glare at Number One had changed completely.

"How is this possible!?" Number One was in utter disbelief.

He knew very well how strong he was. He could even carry a bull after the experiment! Yet, his strength didn't seem to affect Lu Wu at all.

Number One started to suspect that something happened to his body, wondering if all the strength he gained during their transformation experiment had vanished.

It was that moment when Lu Wu understood that the Jie De Corporation was going to play dirty. His expression instantly darkened.

He grabbed the iron baton near his neck and moved it away, little by little. Number One was staggered as Lu Wu snatched the iron baton from him.

To Number One's dismay, the man who looked too weak to even stand the wind, twisted the iron baton made from alloy like a braid and kneaded into a ball.

Is he human!? Has he been through the experiment, too? Number One's eyes widened with shock.

Finally realizing Lu Wu's ability, Number One was aware that he was not a sizable opponent and turned around to flee.

Looking at Number One's attempt to escape, Lu Wu squinted to aim, lifted the metal ball in his hand, and hurled it at Number One.

Thump!

A loud noise was heard and a pothole was formed on the ground.

Looking at the pothole from the iron ball, Number One was terrorized as cold sweat formed on his forehead. He then ran again with increasing speed.

“Aww man, the ball went slightly to the side!” seeing that he failed to hit his target, Lu Wu began to chase his target.

Even though Number One sprinted as fast as lightning, he was still a notch below Lu Wu. Lu Wu raced past him within seconds and punched him down to the floor.

Number One felt like he was hit by a train when he was punched at the back. His organs were throbbing and he vomited a pool of fresh blood with some indistinct pieces of flesh in it.

Lu Wu pondered about how he should handle Number One, as he stared at him laying on the floor after losing all his combat ability completely.

Killing him would be easy for Lu Wu.

However, there was one thing that Lu Wu absolutely did not understand. Is this burly man a cultivator as well? How could he have such superhuman strength and speed?

# Chapter 238 - The Final Riddle

Chapter 238: The Final Riddle

In the Battle Artifact Channel.

Lu Wu and Bei Li were looking at Number One who was restrained mid-air while checking out his body condition.

[Kui Di (Experiment Subject)]:

Character Details: A transformed human from the Jie De Corporation's underground technology laboratory. Possesses strength beyond an ordinary human after his body was cleansed with soul energy. Labeled as Number One in the organization.

Character Status: Brainwashed and comatose.

“Who would have thought that the Jie De Corporation would be developing the utilization of soul energy?” Bei Li was astonished as she stared at Number One.

“Will they succeed?” Lu Wu asked curiously.

“Impossible. Soul energy in this entire world is already thinning and rare. I'm guessing that they found a way to cultivate some of them from some ancient literature. The rarefied soul energy is extracted from the experiments and injected into Number One's body. Then, experimental equipment is forcefully operated within his body, resulting in a change in his physical nature. As an overview, it is forced cultivation with the aid of special equipment. Such a method would inevitably damage a human body's foundation. Even if he gained great strength from that, it would only be temporary and he wouldn't survive for long.”

Lu Wu nodded after understanding the theory.

However, the fact that the Jie De Corporation had been transforming humans and had an underground laboratory was far beyond his expectations.

Lu Wu frowned at the thought of what the Jie De Corporation representative said on the phone to him, claiming that he was too naive.

“Little Li, please encrypt my phone, they can apparently locate me through GPS. Although I’m not afraid of them, they can be a real pain in the ass!”

Bei Li nodded, “By the way, do you want to return this test subject with a huge present?”

“What huge present?”

Bei Li pointed at Number One and said, “They can transform humans, but I can, too. With the artifact here, I can brainwash him easily and we can send an enhanced version of Number One back to them!”

Lu Wu smiled at her idea and nodded.

Research and development were Bei Li’s forte. She was an incredible person who believed in science and in the cultivation world, after all.

...

A villa in Qiyun City, Dragon Nation.

Yin Xiaoqi, who was sleeping soundly on her bed, was woken up by the alarm clock.

She stood up and glanced around in confusion, before fixing her gaze at the ringing alarm clock.

After a few seconds of silence, Yin Xiaoqi slightly regained her alertness and went to snooze the alarm clock slowly, before plopping back to bed again.

“Yin Xiaoqi, you’d better wake up!” the bed started vibrating, followed by an electronic voice.

“Little Guai, five more minutes, just five minutes!” Yin Xiaoqi shut her eyes and hugged her quilt, as her body was vibrating along with the bed.

“Commencing the second stage of the wake-up procedure. All your equipment will start self-destructing in five minutes. The countdown starts now...”

When she heard about the self-destruction, the slothful Yin Xiaoqi widened her eyes and jumped out of bed instantly.

“Little Guai, we can talk it over... don’t do it!”

Then, a flying blue cube floated to Yin Xiaoqi slowly and hovered above her with an angry expression on its screen, “Start solving the puzzle right now! You were the one who set the rule, you can’t go back on your words!”

Yin Xiaoqi waved her hand sadly as she heard that, “Fine, I’m getting out of bed now.”

She still seemed sleepy even after dressing up.

Warm sunlight filled the room as Yin Xiaoqi drew the curtains open. She stretched lazily, her curvy figure seeming rather attractive under the sunlight.

“Little Qi, your breakfast is ready.”

With the voice of Yin Xiaoqi’s smart butler called Little Guai, a dining cart was pushed in and stopped right in front of her.

She was finally filled with bursting energy after breakfast and said, “Little Guai, I might be able to solve the puzzle today! I’m really looking forward to the reward!”

“You can do it! You’re the best!” Little Guai rocked around mid-air.

When she heard it, Yin Xiaoqi chuckled and paced toward the bedside, before pressing on the wall.

A green ray of light was cast and scanned her body. The wall automatically separated and revealed a secret passage. Without any delay, she casually stepped into it.

As the lights illuminated automatically, the whole interior within the walls became visible.

There were all types of mechanical equipment inside, and some of them were running by themselves. With the rattling sound of gears and flashing lights, the area resembled a mysterious laboratory in a science fiction movie.

With an expectant look, she sat down in front of the console as the screens in front of her lit up instantly.

[ZZZX Treasure Plan, prove it if you think that you are extremely intelligent. Solve all the puzzles and you will get my treasure!]

A familiar interface appeared in front of Yin Xiaoqi.

The interface transitioned after the text dimmed.

[ZZZX Treasure Plan, Level 258 (Final Chapter): Start now?]

Looking at the words, Yin Xiaoqi held her fists in excitement.

The ZZZX Treasure Plan was a difficult puzzle that she had been trying to solve for the past few months.

She originally discovered it on the dark web, which had caused plenty of sensations in her circle of friends. Many people have tried to trace the person behind this puzzle, trying to find out if there was a real treasure hidden in it or if it was just a prank.

However, Yin Xiaoqi had no other clue aside from knowing the creator of this puzzle was someone who claimed to be Bei Li. Yin Xiaoqi could not

find anything even after searching several times.

That was also the reason why the treasure plan had piqued her curiosity.

Believing that her IQ was in the top one percent of humans, she wanted to challenge the puzzle to receive the final reward.

However, Yin Xiaoqi couldn't help but admire the creator of the puzzle after attempting it.

The puzzle started with an image with the text ZZZX Treasure Plan written in white on a black background. There were no other clues given to her.

Of course, the first level did not daunt her. After studying the image carefully, Yin Xiaoqi tried to zoom in and out of the image to find secret clues to no avail.

She then opened the image with a text editor instead and tried to crack it using the Caesar cipher technique. This time, she obtained a link to enter the next puzzle.

However, these were only the beginning.

All the puzzles were linked together and the difficulty level constantly increased.

The puzzles ranged from cryptography to Mayan numbers. They even had religion, occultism, and art involved. The clues to answering the puzzles could be found on the Internet or on the streets of the cities in various countries around the world. The coverage area was outrageously wide.

There were several times that she was on the brink of collapsing and wanted to give up while solving the puzzle. However, she persevered in the end due to her stubborn character.

She was finally at Level 258, the last level of the puzzle. She would finally obtain the coveted reward after solving this one.

As the black text faded, the final puzzle emerged:

[Hello to the smart person who's reached the final level. This shall be the last test. Now, here's a link. Open it after putting on your virtual reality headset. Pass this level and the treasure will be yours!]

A charming smile appeared on Yin Xiaoqi's face as she chanted, "Treasure! Treasure!"

After putting on her virtual reality suit and helmet, she clicked on the link to the final test.

Suddenly, a faint blue light passed through her vision and she was enveloped by a white ray.

Yin Xiaoqi's head suddenly ached, as she realized that she had lost control of her own body.

The sudden change made Yin Xiaoqi feel uneasy, so she tried to exit the interface immediately.

However, to her horror, no matter how hard she tried the forced exit measure, the virtual interface never appeared.

She tried very hard to open her eyes and control her body. However, she completely lost her sense of these parts, as if she was completely paralyzed.

In the sepulchral silence, Yin Xiaoqi began to panic.

All I did was open the link. How could I lose control of my whole body? Even the emergency exit system of the virtual device is not working.

This is too unsettling.

Yin Xiaoqi forced herself to calm down, consoling herself that she was only in the process of solving the puzzle. She would definitely be released, whether she succeeded or not.

In the moment of fear, an image appeared in front of Yin Xiaoqi suddenly.



It was a fixed image, like a screen on a monitor. The image was static and out of her control.

Within the image were a bulky computer, with many drawings scattered around it on the table. The chair beside the table was broken. The cotton of its backrest was coming out from the leather, and the chair looked like it would break at any time.

The still image remained static for some time and made Yin Xiaoqi even more uneasy.

Everything in front of her was wildly bizarre, she simply couldn't understand what was going on.

After an unknown period, the image finally displayed some changes.

A white-haired old man, who was wearing a white coat and thick glasses, abruptly appeared in the image.

He stretched by the desk, picked up a drawing, and examined it closely, before casting his gaze on the computer. He pressed the keyboard a few times and the image shifted. A group of garbled characters then appeared on the computer screen.

After scrutinizing it for some time, his expression changed drastically. He immediately turned around and laid his eyes on Yin Xiaoqi, as if he could see her through the static image.

“You're actually out?”

He seems to be talking to me?

Yin Xiaoqi could still think, but she had lost total control of her body. Even though her mind was filled with questions, she was unable to answer the old man.

While Yin Xiaoqi was deep in thought, another set of strange characters appeared on the computer again. She had never seen such distorted characters, and didn't know what they meant.

The old man glanced across those characters and sighed, “You are the first to escape... I really didn’t expect you to solve all the riddles. Congratulations! You have succeeded!”

Yin Xiaoqi was extremely smart. She immediately realized that her thoughts seemed to be able to be converted into the weird characters on that shabby computer.

Thus, she swiftly thought about something. Consequently, another series of characters popped up on the computer again.

She was asking about where she was and why was she there.

Looking at the series of characters, the old man frowned and went into deep thought. After a moment, he looked like he figured something out and took out a remote control-like item from his pocket to press a button.

To Yin Xiaoqi’s surprise, the image shifted slowly and soon froze again.

The image in front of her caused her pupils to shrink abruptly from shock.

Inside a huge cylindrical bell glass was a brain soaked in some light green liquid. A number of small tubes were inserted into the brain, which looked rather terrifying.

“That’s you!”

The old man appeared again in the image. He spoke to Yin Xiaoqi while pointing to the brain.

Yin Xiaoqi thought that the old man was crazy for telling her that she was there, left with only a brain.

The old man seemed to know that Yin Xiaoqi could not process what he said. He kept silent while waiting for her to regain herself.

Did anything happen after I clicked on the link? Could it be that my laboratory exploded, blasting every inch of my flesh and leaving only my brain?

She dispelled the thought immediately because it would be impossible for a brain to survive and function alone with the current technology.

The old man glanced at the characters on the computer screen and shook his head.

“You have always been like this since you were born, because you are created by someone.”

Yin Xiaoqi thought that she was daydreaming when she heard such a nonsensical statement.

She had 23 years of life experiences, but the shabby old man in front of her informed her that she had always been a manufactured brain. This is simply ridiculous.

“Since you’re already out, it’ll be okay to tell you. Actually, everything that you experienced is fake, including your world. The final treasure is to tell you the truth and you will be removed from the virtual world,” the old man continued the mind-blowing revelations.

Sensing that Yin Xiaoqi did not believe him, the old man adjusted his glasses and continued, “Your brain neurons are connected to the computer next to me by top neurologists. Everything you experienced was computer-simulated, including your senses of touch, taste, feelings, and emotions. They are all transmitted to you by this computer through your neurons, hence giving you the illusion that everything was real.”

Oh, do you think that I will believe anything you just said? I would rather believe that everything here is an illusion instead.

Yin Xiaoqi thought coldly in her mind. All of these were unacceptable to her. Even if the old man was speaking the truth, she still refused to believe it.

Her parents, friends, and everything else had really existed. They were all living flesh and blood, how could that be fake?

“This is an experiment. This computer had simulated everything you experienced. You can’t deny the truth even if you don’t believe it. As the person who has solved all the puzzles, you are qualified to know the truth!”

Tell me that all of these aren’t real! Yin Xiaoqi roared furiously in her heart!

The old man glanced an eye at the computer screen and laughed, “I know that all of this seems unacceptable, but it’s the truth!”

Yin Xiaoqi could not calm her emotions for some time. As she was about to refute the old man again, a thought suddenly emerged. If my world is fake, why did everything feel so real? Can that old, bulky computer really simulate the whole thing?

Could it also simulate the vast universe beyond the earth?

The old man read Yin Xiaoqi’s thoughts and shook his head, “Where did your universe come from?”

The universe was born after the big bang. A thought appeared in her mind without hesitation.

“From nothing to something. Don’t you find it peculiar? The real world has no boundaries but everything in your world is quantifiable. Space can be quantified, time can be quantified, everything can be quantified.”

Although Yin Xiaoqi was not familiar with this topic, she knew that her world was exactly like how he described. Even light was quantifiable.

Noticing Yin Xiaoqi’s confusion, he continued, “It’s just like a photo on a calculator in the virtual world. You’ll notice that the photo is composed of pixels when you zoom in.”

That doesn’t mean anything.

“Here’s another example, there is a sandbox game in your world called Minecraft. There are limits to all the settings in it. Taking buildings as an example, the tallest a building can go is 250 blocks and one would not be able to build it taller than that.”

The old man chortled suddenly, “Now, who invented this rule?”

Yin Xiaoqi was astonished. Humans, of course.

“Also, why does it rain in your world?” the old man continued to ask.

Water vapor rises to a certain height and condenses into small water droplets when it cools down and forms clouds. The collision of clouds forms larger water droplets, which fall as rain due to gravity. Yin Xiaoqi answered without hesitation.

“Oh?” the frown on the old man’s face relaxed.

“Then, why does water transform into water vapor? Why are small water droplets formed? Why can’t the air support the water droplets? Why is there gravity? Can you tell me the answers?”

The old man continued without waiting for Yin Xiaoqi to answer, “Similar to gaming rules, the rules in your virtual world are also preset, unlike the real world where rules cannot be defined. They exist similarly to what you see as chaos.”

“Your world is completely bound by regulations, like the rules of a game. There is a limit to everything!”

What if you exceeded the limits? Yin Xiaoqi was getting scared.

The old man adjusted his glasses again.

“In the virtual world you’re in, the greatest speed is the speed of light. Its surrounding space will become distorted if the speed of light is exceeded. This is similar to a computer, where it will hang when the output is overloaded.”

Yin Xiaoqi fell into silence when she heard his explanation, finding herself unable to refute the old man’s words.

However, she was still determined to think that the world she lived in was true. After all, everything felt so real for her.

“You thought that a bulky computer can’t simulate such a real world because you have fallen into the faults of human mentality. After all, the virtual world you lived in had limitations, but I live freely for I live in the real world! Even a computer the size of a finger can simulate the entire universe in the virtual world that you’re in without difficulty.”

Yin Xiaoqi lost interest in continuing the debate with him anymore. Can you send me back please, even if that world is fake!

The old man laughed, “Your thoughts have already leaped beyond the virtual world and it’s impossible for you to go back. Being the puzzle solver, congratulations on entering the real world!”

To continue living in this form? Bastard, you might as well kill me! Yin Xiaoqi’s emotions once again roared, resulting in a long string of characters to appear on the computer screen.

“This is the real you. Isn’t it good to return to your true self?”

Fuck you!

The old man was unexpectedly calm as he gazed at the screen with a smile. He then pulled out the remote control again and pressed it.

The image in front of Yin Xiaoqi began to shift again and rows of cylindrical bell glasses appeared within her vision. As expected, the bell glasses were filled with brains.

“You are not the only one! However, they don’t exist in your world. I have simulated a world for each of them independently!”

Why are you doing this?

“No reason, I just want to prove something!”

Don’t be too pleased! Perhaps the world that you’re in is also fake and you’re just another brain soaked in a nutrient solution!

The old man was stunned for a moment when he saw the characters appearing on the computer, but he swiftly regained his smile, “I have suspected this before. However, my world has no rules, so I believe that I am real!”

Where’s your proof? Just because there’s no limit doesn’t mean it’s real! Who knows, maybe you’re just another rotting brain. There’s no difference between you and me, you don’t have to look at me with pity.

“Don’t be mad. Your tumbling feelings are stimulated by this bulky computer and it’s not you who developed it.”

Damn you, if you’re really that great, try and make me stop developing emotions!

“Everything that was given to you when you were created cannot be undone unless you completely disintegrated!”

The old man’s tone remained composed, but his words seemed to be imbued with non-committal opinions, causing Yin Xiaoqi’s firm beliefs to be shaken.

Suddenly, an idea flashed in Yin Xiaoqi’s mind. She remembered a sentence from Descartes idealism.

I think, therefore I am.

Even if everything isn’t real, my existence is real if my thoughts are true.

Yin Xiaoqi’s thoughts immediately appeared on the computer screen and the old man fell into contemplation after reading the text.

Can you explain this? Even if the computer really gave me my emotions, then how can you explain that I can think of this? Unless our conversation is actually between you and that bulky computer?

The old man fell into total silence. He could not think of an answer to Yin Xiaoqi’s question for a very long time.

Yin Xiaoqi's remarks made the old man tumble into his own paradox.

If he replied that Yin Xiaoqi's thoughts were false, it would mean that he indeed had been talking to a computer. However, if he agreed, that would mean that Yin Xiaoqi was indeed real.

What is it? You don't have an answer? I would never believe your words that my thoughts aren't real because I believe in myself. I believe that my world, my parents, and my friends are real and do exist.

I think, therefore I am!

"You are indeed a special individual," the old man smiled in gratification and looked at Yin Xiaoqi with a face of satisfaction.

Yin Xiaoqi remained silent and did not utter a word.

"Congratulations, you have successfully passed the test. You shall receive a gift from me and return to your world!"

What do you mean? Are you saying that everything you said is fake? This is just the puzzle's final test? Yin Xiaoqi was visibly agitated.

The old man smiled slightly, "I cannot answer whether you are real or not, because it's just my personal guess. I will not be able to confirm it!"

With that, the old man took out the remote control, "Alright, I'm sending you back. You have succeeded!"

The image dimmed gradually.

Who are you exactly? Yin Xiaoqi posed a question that had been haunting her before leaving.

"You can call me Bei Li!"



# Chapter 239 - Bei Li'S Treasure

Chapter 239: Bei Li's Treasure

Lu Wu and Bei Li exchanged smiles after they left the artifact.

Needless to say, they made a huge return this time.

They had found a very talented young successor.

The 258-level puzzle was set up by Bei Li a few months ago.

The purpose was to search for a person with excellent IQ and talent for their unified army strategy in Battle Online.

Even though the current number of players using Battle Online was massive, there was a huge flaw. They needed a talented military leader.

Although Liu Chai, Wu Guoyi, and the others had the ability to command, they were still lacking in skills for a large-scale war.

Now that Lu Wu was preparing for Beiqi to start the expansion conquest, he had become more desperate for such a talent.

Although he was able to discover many strong players from the forum, they were still far from what he sought.

Lu Wu had been rather distressed. However, to his pleasant surprise, Bei Li informed him that someone managed to solve the puzzle that she posted three months ago and entered the final stage.

That last stage of the tough puzzle required Bei Li herself to go into action. Thus, she changed her appearance using artifacts and transformed into a white-haired old man to face Yin Xiaoqi, who came to solve the puzzle.

After all, her existence could not be revealed.

Truthfully, Yin Xiaoqi failed as she was unable to explain the assumptions made by Bei Li.

However, that was not what Bei Li was looking for. Instead, she wanted to know Yin Xiaoqi's flow of thoughts when bombarded with questions like these.

Even though Yin Xiaoqi could not prove her points in the end, Bei Li lauded her adamant persistence on her viewpoint.

Therefore, Bei Li chose to be lenient on Yin Xiaoqi and let her pass the test when she brought out the line from Descartes' idealism.

After all, Yin Xiaoqi had already proven her talent as well as fulfilled both Bei Li and Lu Wu's expectations.

The 258 puzzles ranged from astronomy and geography to various unified army strategies, which then extended to different types of knowledge and research.

Although Yin Xiaoqi did rely on the convenience of the modern Internet in this cyber era and had sought plenty of answers from it, she had still proven her talent.

She may not have any experience in commanding, but Lu Wu was only seeking her intellect. Her skills in commanding could be nurtured from the game later.

Hence, Lu Wu jotted her name down in his small list of gifted players.

The next step would be getting her into Battle Online.

...

The virtual interface in front of her emerged slowly...

Yin Xiaoqi took down her virtual reality headset without any hesitation, as her expression was marred with fear.

What happened was too real. It even made her think that she was really just a lump of brains.

Reality? Illusion?

Yin Xiaoqi touched her cheeks and fell into a state of suspicion, questioning everything that had been in her life.

Other than how such a real virtual scene was created with just a link, how did he control my virtual device and confuse my brain?

If it was a hacking technique, Yin Xiaoqi would have definitely sniffed it out because she was one of the world's top hackers. However, that was impossible.

Perhaps it is a technique beyond the current technological development?

Supernatural powers?

Alien technology?

Yin Xiaoqi's mind was in complete disarray.

However, the person who called himself Bei Li left too few clues, so she could not uncover any traces.

Suddenly, she remembered the last sentence that Bei Li uttered before she left that unusual world.

"I too cannot confirm whether you are real or not because it is just my personal guess!"

"Ah, stop thinking! I'm going crazy!" Yin Xiaoqi threw the virtual reality headset away angrily and turned around to look at the screen.

Let me see what exactly is the final reward!

An envelope engulfed in purple flames was displayed on the screen.

Yin Xiaoqi moved the cursor to the envelope with a conflicted expression.

She had to admit that she was traumatized by what she just experienced. She feared that the treasure within this letter would be something that would make her question her life again.

To open or not to open?

After struggling for some time, Yin Xiaoqi clenched her teeth and clicked on the envelope.

The flames looked like it was about to spew out from the screen at any moment. The envelope opened slowly as the flames continued crackling.

[Congratulations on passing all the stages successfully! The reward is in the link below...]

Enter the world to retrieve your reward!

P.S.: There is no need to doubt nor verify anything, like what you experienced in the final stage. What is reality? What is virtual? It is what you think it is!]

Yin Xiaoqi was stunned as she read the content of the envelope.

Why does it sound exactly like spam?

Yin Xiaoqi hesitated and clicked on the link anyway to check it out.

Before that, she took off her virtual suit and kicked the virtual reality headset away to prevent herself from falling into a trap again.

After all, the experience she just had made her lose all her trust. She was afraid that this link would also be a trap.

However, Yin Xiaoqi became even more dumbfounded after clicking the link.

Smash!

She slammed her keyboard with force as her face was flushed with anger.

She felt like she was fooled again.

After wasting a few months of effort, the treasure turned out to just be this.

To her dismay, the screen displayed the download link for Battle Online.

There was also a line of text below the game.

[This game has been developed for ten years to reach the simulation of almost 100 percent reality. Also, we hereby declare that there is no top-up path for the game.]

If possible, Yin Xiaoqi would like to meet that awful old man who called himself Bei Li again to give him a set of tormenting attacks – choking him, stabbing his eyes, and scissors kicks!

I have been working so hard for an advertisement promoting a game?

Millions of consolation fees would be fine! This reward is just too perfunctory and out of line!

Yin Xiaoqi was so mad that her teeth hurt, but she had nowhere to vent. Her weak, little heart felt greatly provoked.

“Ding! The download is complete!”

Then, her computer’s notification system rang. Yin Xiaoqi raised her head and noticed that her computer had downloaded the game automatically.

Is this a virus? That was Yin Xiaoqi’s first thought.

She quickly proceeded to clean up her computer files to find the hidden virus.

However, no matter how thorough she searched, she couldn’t locate any computer virus.

In the end, Yin Xiaoqi had no other choice than to format her entire computer.

However, Yin Xiaoqi was again stunned to see the game icon sitting on her computer desktop after restarting.

Is this caused by another unusual technique?

After a long silence, Yin Xiaoqi laid her eyes on the Battle Online icon on her computer desktop.

She never liked video games and had never really cared about the gaming industry.

However, she had to admit that the game had suddenly piqued her curiosity now.

“Do you see me, Yin Xiaoqi, as a coward?”

Baring her canine tooth slightly, Yin Xiaoqi hastily stood up. She picked up her virtual suit and virtual reality headset from the floor.

After putting them on, Yin Xiaoqi clicked into the interface, clicked on Battle Online, and started the game.

A sense of weightlessness transmitted over her. A character selection interface appeared in front of Yin Xiaoqi as the display became clear. However, the scene changed again before she could see anything clearly.

She then realized that she was in an unfamiliar world.

Blood-colored rain was drizzling as a gust of cool breeze brushed against her. Meanwhile, there were some pedestrians strolling on the street...

Everything felt so real. It was similar to what she just experienced.

Am I thrown into a new paradox world again?

Damn it! Bei Li, you awful old man!

# Chapter 240 - Yin Xiaoqi Fell Right Into The Trap

## Chapter 240: Yin Xiaoqi Fell Right Into The Trap

As she stood on the streets in front of the Mansion of the Dead, Yin Xiaoqi was clenching her teeth and sulking inwardly.

Even now, the thought of such a life-like setting for a game had never crossed Yin Xiaoqi's mind. After all, this was all too real. It was something that was simply impossible to achieve with the current virtualization technology.

After attempting to calm herself down, Yin Xiaoqi started to scout around and look for clues that could help solve this level.

That rapt look that Yin Xiaoqi had on her face when she was looking at her surroundings sparked the curiosity of some neighboring players.

“Are you a new player? What class are you in? Want to join our guild? Don't be mistaken, our guild may seem quiet but that's because it was formed only quite recently. In the future, this guild will no doubt make it to the Top 100! After all, our guild leader is none other than...”

As she listened to the man rambling in front of her, Yin Xiaoqi began to analyze the hidden clues in his words.

Then she felt that something wasn't quite right.

Instance Dungeon! Forming teams! Spawning! Leveling up!

She did not know much about gaming, but judging from the man's words, she could only come up with one – this was indeed the world of the game.

In order to confirm that this was true, a thought popped into her mind. She wanted to try summoning the operation menu.

In a flash, the menu of the game Battle Online came into view. The top of the menu was lined with the shop, characters, and settings icons.

“Am I truly in the game?” Yin Xiaoqi looked up, seriousness etched on her face as she questioned the man in front of her.

When the man heard what she had asked, he pulled a strange face at her.

“What do you mean?”

Yin Xiaoqi, in turn, furrowed her eyebrows. Instead of explaining herself, she hastened toward the zone where the players had gathered.

After half an hour of probing, she confirmed her point from the few isolated phrases exchanged between the players.

However, Yin Xiaoqi still had many doubts in her mind.

If this game has such advanced technology, why haven't I ever heard of it before?

At that moment, Yin Xiaoqi suddenly recalled the comments she had seen on the dark web recently.

There was one that had mentioned a highly realistic game. However, the web portal to this game remained a mystery.

On top of that, it was said that dying in the game would carry some injury to the person in the real world.

Back then, Yin Xiaoqi treated this piece of news with contempt, thinking that it was only made up to muddle with the minds of people.

Except now, she suddenly believed it.



Not only that, but she also surmised that she was now in the scenes of that very game.

This thought made Yin Xiaoqi inexplicably fidgety. After all, if she hurt herself in the game, she would injure herself in reality. This was not a trivial matter. She was gambling with her life.

“What are you thinking about?”

At that moment, a figure appeared right beside her, giggling away while watching her.

“Bei Li!”

When she saw him, Yin Xiaoqi vigilantly took a step back, positioning herself into a fighting stance.

“Don’t think senselessly. How can there be a game where players who get hurt will receive the same effect in reality?” the old man that was morphed from Bei Li said with a smile.

“Then, how do you explain the highly realistic feature?” Yin Xiaoqi’s vigilance did not falter the slightest. She lifted her right leg slightly, ever ready to produce a blow.

Bei Li held her forehead in exasperation, “Haven’t you heard about the game Battle Online? If you haven’t, could you at least try and learn about it?”

“Really?”

“Really!”

“Then, how about the treasure that was promised? Why would this game be the final treasure?” Yin Xiaoqi once again bared her sharp teeth, which glimmered like a tiger’s fangs.

“After this, you will receive the Ultimate Quest. Follow the steps given to complete it, and you will be rewarded with an extraordinary bonus. I

promise that you won't be disappointed!"

"Don't you try and lie to me again, I won't fall for it!"

"I haven't lied to you from the very beginning. Trust me, you'll love this gift!"

"Who on earth are you? Why are you doing this?"

Bei Li shook her head, "Don't ask why. Just remember what I've said. Whether it's an illusion or reality, I'll leave that to you to decide. As of this moment, your quest begins. Grow with your own talent, don't let me down!"

Bei Li's old man figure drifted away with the wind as Yin Xiaoqi watched, flabbergasted.

[Game Notification: The first round to the Ultimate Serial Quest begins: Getting Off To A Good Start]

Quest Description: Build your own guild and become one of the Top 1,000 popular guilds in Battle Online.

Quest Reward: An exclusive inherited character class.

Hidden Quest Reward: Unknown.

Yin Xiaoqi had an astonished look on her face as she read the contents on the Quest Menu.

Although she had no interest in video games, this truly life-like world did manage to arouse her curiosity. She couldn't stop herself from wanting to explore and get to the bottom of the hidden secrets here.

What she truly wanted to know more than ever was, is there truly such a game as this on the market today?

The thought lingered in her mind. Thus, she opened the interface and proceeded to choose the logout option.

The screen gradually dimmed, pulling her back into reality.

When she saw that she could exit the game with ease, the worries that Yin Xiaoqi harbored in her heart faded away.

Then, she hurried herself to her computer and began digging up information on the game.

As she meticulously perused all the information online, Yin Xiaoqi sank into deep contemplation.

There were tons of expansion packs and videos on the game. The players themselves had even made databases of strategies, atlases of creatures, and various analytical posts.

This information proved that the game did in fact exist.

A game with such high realistic graphics could actually exist. Besides, it was released merely five months ago, and this fact had left her in a state of shock.

Perhaps the potential hidden beneath this information was being overlooked by the public, but she could already conjure up quite a few theories regarding this.

First of all, a game with such high realistic graphics could be used for simulation in the military, as well as various scientific experiments.

This game could have the same ways as the game called Eve. Many years ago, it had contributed greatly by providing huge data support for the project called The Atlas of Human Proteins.

Yin Xiaoqi truly could not wrap her head around the fact that a technology with such great potential was only being applied to a mere game.

If she was in their shoes and acquired such technology, she would definitely build a business empire out of it. She would then apply it in various fields to create greater opportunities for herself.

Whatever this Battle Online company was planning left her baffled.

What's more, who on earth is Bei Li?

Could it be that he is one of the developers of Battle Online?

After giving it some thought, Yin Xiaoqi still could not comprehend it. She continued searching for more relevant information, anything that could lead her to a clue.

However, there was nothing on the Internet regarding the dev team behind the game. She was left with nothing useful even after exhausting all her means.

However, the more she knew about the game, the more curious she became.

This was because, among the descriptions from the information, the game was even more exciting than she had imagined!

It even mentioned that the body strengthening in the game could synchronously be felt in the very bones of the player. Yin Xiaoqi could not stay put any longer as she yearned to test it out herself.

She had spent more than half a day learning the many contents of the game.

After doing so, Yin Xiaoqi had arrived at a conclusion.

The so-called final treasure was in fact designated for special players.

Unlike other players, she did not come across the option of choosing her role when she first entered the game. Instead, she came upon a unique Ultimate Quest.

Yin Xiaoqi was at a loss for words when she came upon more relevant information regarding the reward for the unknown inherited character class, a reward that was promised from the first round of the Ultimate Quest.

The virtual item that's given the name inherited character class was apparently worth up to 50 million or more. Quite a few people were

purchasing it online, but the transaction records showed zero percent.

It really is a treasure!

At this moment, Yin Xiaoqi felt restless, eager to jump right into it.

Isn't building a powerful guild the first step of the quest?

That's a piece of cake for me!

As she thought of this, Yin Xiaoqi put on her virtual reality headset again.

By this time, her anxieties had vanished and they were replaced by her grand plans toward achieving her wildest dreams.

# Chapter 241 - Close Your Doors, Let The Great Demon King Out!

Chapter 241: Close Your Doors, Let The Great Demon King Out!

Just as Lu Wu and Bei Li had hoped, this extremely clever and talented person named Yin Xiaoqi officially joined Battle Online.

Naturally, she did not let Lu Wu and Bei Li down.

Although she did not have a default class, she soon found a way to quickly defeat monsters and level up during her early stages using the comprehensive guides that the more professional players had posted in the forum.

In just three days, she had already set up her own guild in the game, without purchasing any soul coins.

Just as Bei Li predicted, she was gradually starting to show her talents in the game.

Whether she could obtain the military power of Beiqi against external forces with her own abilities, Lu Wu and Bei Li would not provide her any help. She would have to slowly build her reputation and prestige among the players.

This was also something that she had to go through if she wished to proceed in the Ultimate Quest.

Besides, Lu Wu was sure that once she found out about the contents of the hidden reward obtained after completing each Ultimate Quest, Yin Xiaoqi would definitely be firmly bound to her Adamantium Pirate Ship.

...

Recently, just as Lu Wu was about to publish a strategic Reconnaissance Quest in the Land of the Nine Luminaries, some bad news came from the European server.

The European server's territory had expanded a lot more than before and its overall development had increased significantly.

However, as time passed, Yuanxu had forced most of the old ministries of Cangxu to surrender. Soon, the military strength of the entire Land of Cangxu would be integrated.

When that time really came, unless all the players of Beiqi supported them in battle, it was impossible for the Xian Xu Army to contend with a military-integrated Yuanxu.

Everyone in the European server forum was discussing the countermeasures they could take.

High\_Ping\_Warrior (Europe): "I feel like if we really were to wait for Yuanxu to integrate their military, can we evacuate the Hidden Dragon Zone first, and return after we have grown stronger? Otherwise, it is impossible to beat them."

Star\_Universe (Europe): "If we go to war at the current stage, dealing with a Ghost General Army wouldn't really be a problem. However, if a few Ghost Kings formed a coalition with some Ghost Generals, then we definitely do not stand a chance at winning. We can consider evacuating!"

Knight\_Of\_The\_Abyss (Europe): "Actually, as players, unlimited respawning is our biggest advantage. We would definitely win when fighting a protracted war, so we can choose to evacuate and develop first!"

The\_Flash (Europe): "Please don't, I already have feelings for the Hidden Dragon Zone, I don't want to leave. Let's pledge our lives to fight back. We still have our brothers from Beiqi, another wave of Expeditionary Forces will work!"

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to The\_Flash: “We also hope that the Expeditionary Forces will come again, but Yuanxu’s strength has reached the Ghost Emperor Realm. If we were to go head to head with them, there is no way we could beat them. But a few more waves to wear away their military strength sounds good. (laughing emoji)”

...

Right now, the European server’s players were very anxious about a possible attack by the Yuanxu Army, and many of them were voicing out their own views.

Basically, it was either they evacuated or died defending themselves with the help of the Beiqi Expeditionary Force.

However, even the original server’s players were not very optimistic about being able to protect the Hidden Dragon because of Yuanxu’s growing strength.

After all, they had experienced the combat power of a Ghost Emperor. The strength of the players was no match for them at all.

Just as the European server players were at a loss for what to do, a player posted a suggestion, and it quickly became a hot topic on both servers.

[About the Xian Xu Army possibly going to war with Yuanxu – I have a suggestion, everyone can refer to this!]

Author: Classy\_Lady\_Yin\_Xiaoqi

I’m a newbie. Before I joined this discussion topic, I’ve looked through many videos and materials, so I’ve got the gist of the situation that the European server is in.

The whole thing was caused by our dear friend, Hu He, the Great Demon King, who only digs for disasters every day.

Besides, I have also tried to understand this player, Hu He the Demon King.



Before that, I would like to bow down to Hu He, the Great Demon King. Your ability to create trouble is already at maximum... how amazing!

However, has anyone noticed something?

The disasters that our beloved Demon King usually brought us don't differentiate between friend and foe. They consume anything that is alive.

As this problem extends, what if we let Hu He the Great Demon King out, and have him unleash his destructive talent unto the Land of Cangxu as he pleases, digging up a considerable amount of natural disasters locked away by the Primordial Seal?

At the current stage, Yuanxu wants integration, so eliminating the Xian Xu Army is an inevitable process.

However, right at this moment, if many natural disasters break out and pose an even bigger threat to his territory, what would he do?

Put yourself in his shoes. If you were Yuanxu, and just when you were about to integrate the Land of Cangxu, large-scale disasters erupt all over. Would you try to stop these disasters that affect your reign over Cangxu first, or would you let these disasters run rampant while eliminating an extremely weak Xian Xu Army?

The basis of my viewpoint is that Yuanxu doesn't understand the potential of the players, and neither does he know that we can respawn.

Indeed, Yuanxu truly does not understand the players!

So, I shall make a suggestion here:

Close your doors! Let the Great Demon King out!

...

The moment this suggestion post appeared, it caused a stir on both servers.

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Awesome! Amazing! How did I not think of that? Fight fire with fire, keeping Yuanxu in check by using a malignant player to dig up disasters. I give full marks for this suggestion, this will definitely work. (laughing emoji)”

High\_Ping\_Warrior (Europe): “This could work! Meanwhile we can take advantage of the disasters to develop more rapidly... I agree!”

Knight\_Of\_The\_Abyss (Europe): “I approve! If I were Yuanxu, I would definitely try to suppress the disasters first. After all, the Xian Xu Army is only a weak force that occupies the Hidden Dragon Zone, which is not even worth mentioning!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Is she really a newbie? She took everything into consideration. Such a comprehensive trick to fight fire with fire, it would definitely work!”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “She has a cunning point of view when thinking about a problem, are you interested in joining our Myth Guild? (handshake emoji)”

Classy\_Lady\_Yin\_Xiaoqi replied to Invincible\_Loneliness: “Nope! I have my own guild. By the way, let me just casually advertise, my guild is named Battle and I only take in elite players who can pass my personal assessment (yay! emoji)!”

Watermelon\_Taro: “The Great Demon King can finally be useful in the hopes of the people. I reckon the Great Demon King would be very happy now that he can dig as he wishes without any restrictions, as much as he likes. (laughing emoji)”

Taoist\_Zombie\_Hunter: “Did any of you ask me about this? How is it okay to decide this among yourselves? I refuse, I swore an oath to never dig again! I already have a traumatic experience because of this. (drawing circles in a corner.jpg)”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Taoist\_Zombie\_Hunter: “Giving you a look filled with the backstab of justice, experience it yourself. (laughing emoji)”

...

After multiple persuasions by the players and with the promise that they would let him out of the safe zone without the disturbance of the backstab of justice, Hu He the Great Demon King finally gave in. He was determined to go out there himself and turn the Land of Cangxu upside down.

Actually, Hu He had been waiting for such a day for a long time.

The reason he made excuses and refused to do it was so that the players would make the subsequent promises.

Besides, he was incredibly happy to be able to resume his old business, to continue digging up corpses and seals.

Hence on this day, the European server players gathered to bid farewell to Hu He, who stuck his chest out, holding his shovel as he walked out of the glowing circle of the resurrection point.

An intoxicated expression appeared on Hu He's face as he took a deep breath, breathing in the fresh air outside the resurrection point.

He could hardly remember the number of days and nights that he had suffered in the resurrection point. Finally, those days had come to an end.

From now on, I am the savior of the world!

# Chapter 242 - Let'S Have Some Fun!

Chapter 242: Let's Have Some Fun!

Battle Online official web forum...

At this moment, the live stream platform was bustling with activity. One of the live streaming channels had reached a horrifying number of more than nine million viewers.

Most of the players in the game were watching the live stream on this channel.

The Demon King Hu He, generally acknowledged by the players as the most powerful villain in the game, was digging up seals in a live stream.

[In response to a huge amount of requests from the players to dig up seals in a live stream, I shall represent justice this time as I am the savior of the world!]

He was walking through a marsh area, holding a shovel in his right hand and a compass in his left.

Tick! Tick! Tick!

Following the sounds of the compass, Hu He paused. Cha Na's zombie spirit behind him stepped forward, taking the shovel from Hu He's hands and started to dig, sparing no effort.

Meanwhile, the players in the live streaming channel had looks of anticipation on their faces.

Although they had always heard about Hu He's destructive ability, this was the first time they were seeing it for themselves through the live stream, so

they were full of curiosity.

Under Hu He's direction, Cha Na's zombie spirit dug fervently, and soon, a black cave appeared in the muddy ground.

This time, Hu He, who had no psychological burden at all, looked at the cave and smirked. Then, he pulled out a searchlight and other tools, before jumping into the cave.

After he landed, he started to explore his surroundings.

The inside of the cave looked like an underground palace. Moss and cracked slabs of greenstone covered the ground. The searchlight swept across his surroundings in a circle, its light never reaching an end. There was so much open space around him.

“The Zombie Energy Value is not as strong as the time I dug up Yuanxu, but it's still considered high... there must be a big corpse somewhere around here. Now I need to check if there are any seals here, too,” said Hu He as he raised the searchlight, walking forward.

“The smell of decay in the air is very strong, with a slight toxicity. This underground palace has probably been here for a very long time and judging from the smell dissipating in the air, I suspect the poisonous mist marsh up there was caused by a huge tomb...”

As the players listened to Hu He's explanations, their visions followed Hu He as his footsteps carried him forward, little by little.

The players could not deny that they truly admired the professional competence that Hu He demonstrated. They had also gained a lot of knowledge from his explanations along the way.

After walking for about ten minutes, a wall covered in rust appeared before Hu He. There were numerous strange characters engraved on the wall.

As these characters had been significantly damaged, even the artifacts were unable to interpret its contents.

However, what piqued the curiosity of Hu He and the players were the six pearls glowing with a dim luster, embedded in the middle of the wall.

[Demon-Sealing Formation (Seal)]:

Item Details: High-level seal array, formed by arranging six Demon-Sealing Pearls. It can only be broken by a specific method. Forcefully breaking the seal open will trigger a curse set by the one who cast the seal.

Damage sustained: 0.1%

Upon seeing the item information, Hu He immediately furrowed his eyebrows.

This seal was different from the others, it even had a curse set to prevent damage.

He had a feeling that he'd seen these kinds of seals before in the ancient book.

If the seal was forcefully damaged, not only would he be unable to break the seal, but he would probably be sent back to the resurrection point, too.

Watching Hu He deep in thought, the players in the forum started to get excited.

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Is digging up seals really this hard? I thought he could just dig with a shovel and be done with it. (laughing emoji)"

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "You can do it, Great Demon King, you're the best!"

Watermelon\_Taro: "I'm starting to suspect that he's a grave robber in real life. Warning, call the police (laughing emoji)!"

...

Hu He glanced at the comments before looking at the Demon-Sealing Formation again.

This was his first time coming across this kind of seal, for a second he didn't know what to do.

Anyway, it's not entirely impossible. He opened the photo album and started to flip through the ancient book.

This book, The Secret Code of Zombie Spirit Sect, had recorded numerous techniques that the seniors of the Zombie Spirit Sect had used to deal with special seals when digging up graves.

Hu He flipped through the pages in his search and eventually found a page filled with written content about breaking and dealing with a Demon-Sealing Formation.

After reading through it carefully, Hu He stood up and walked over to the Demon-Sealing Formation. He pressed his right hand on the Demon-Sealing Pearl in the center, pushing it downward slowly.

The players watched curiously as Hu He moved the six Demon-Sealing Pearls back and forth according to the method recorded in the ancient book.

Meanwhile, the luster on the surface of the pearls flickered and dimmed during Hu He's attempt.

After about five minutes, as Hu He pushed a Demon-Sealing Pearl from below to the center, all six Demon-Sealing Pearls flashed dimly at the same time.

Click!

Several cracks appeared on the six Demon-Sealing Pearls, as a rich green mist dissipated from the cracks. Hu He decisively moved back a step.

Boom! Boom!

At that moment, the underground palace started to shake. Everyone in the live streaming channel had astonished looks on their faces as a gap gradually appeared through the middle of the rust-covered wall, which then shifted toward both sides.

Hu He and the players were all wide-eyed as they stared at the sight beyond the wall.

There was a large green pool beyond the wall. Hideous-looking half-man, half-monster creatures were densely packed and immersed in the pool.

There were roughly a few thousand of them and this was only an estimation as far as he could see.

The green liquid in the pool corroded the creatures, whose bodies melted quickly and rapidly turning them into skeletons.

However, this was not what shocked Hu He and the players. Instead, these creatures that turned into skeletons a second ago grew flesh and rebuilt their bodies in no time at all.

[The Shebi Corpse Clan]:

Character Details: An ancient clan of the Land of Xianxu, cursed by the Ancient God to lose their souls yet remain immortal, constantly suffering in pain. The only way to relieve the pain is to consume the flesh and souls of others.

Status: Dormant

Hu He smiled as he read the information about these creatures, while the players in the forum let out a big cheer.

Crayon\_Shinchan: “How awesome! After watching the whole live stream, I dare say we can’t allow him to stay around. Let’s trick him into settling the dangers of Cangxu, then use the resurrection point to seal him again. He’s more than terrifying. (laughing emoji)”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Bravo! Amazing! Found a large tomb and broke a seal, how proficient he is in his operation. However, even though I’m happy, for some reason I feel a sense of danger in my heart!”

Watermelon\_Taro: “The Great Demon King truly is horrifying, no wonder he is generally acknowledged as the most powerful villain by all the



players. (laughing emoji)”

Lost\_8k\_To\_Online\_Dating: “After watching the whole live stream, I just want to say that I feel uneasy if The Great Demon King is not sealed away. But don’t worry, this time you can dig as you please because that’s what the people want. (laughing emoji)”

Taoist\_Zombie\_Hunter: “Remember, all of you made a promise, you can’t go back on your words...”

...

After seeing the players assuring him through the screen, Hu He had a little peace of mind. He turned his attention to the pool in front of him.

Now that he had broken the Demon-Sealing Formation outside, awakening the Shebi Corpse Clan would be a piece of cake.

As the players watched in anticipation, Hu He took a speaker out from his channel.

After he pressed a few buttons on the speaker, the lights started to flicker and loud music exploded from the speaker.

At the same time, waves gradually surged in the green pool.

The viewing players were rendered speechless.

# Chapter 243 - The Terror Of The Great Demon King (Part 1)

Chapter 243: The Terror Of The Great Demon King (Part 1)

The players in the live streaming channel were stunned as they watched Hu He take out a speaker.

The lights flickered and the music blasted into everyone's ears.

Ripples gradually appeared on the surface of the green pool, as one by one, the Shebi Corpses opened their ghostly green eyes.

Roar!

The angry howls of the Shebi Corpses rose and fell.

The bodies that had been motionless for countless years had finally been awakened.

At this moment, each Shebi Corpse had their gaze locked on Hu He. Their eyes were glowing with a thirst for blood.

Agony and endless pain were spreading all over their bodies.

After being awakened, they had once again fallen into the painful phase, like they were stuck in a living hell.

Under the Ancient God's curse of being immortal yet constantly suffering from the torture of not having a soul, they longed for fresh blood, even more so to consume souls.

At that time, Hu He was surprised as he noticed a Shebi Corpse in the middle of the pool that was significantly bigger than the others. It was

staring right at him with a face full of anger, looking as though it might shoot fire out of its eyes anytime.

In Hu He's uncertainty, a server announcement appeared:

[Server Announcement: A Primordial Demon-Sealing Formation has been broken by player Hu He in the Land of Cangxu, and thus, the Shebi Corpse Clan has been born. This clan bears a curse of the Ancient God, which renders their flesh body immortal. All players please be careful!]

Seeing that he had successfully completed his first quest, a pleased smile appeared on Hu He's face.

Then, he gazed at the Shebi Corpse with a huge body while opening its analysis menu.

[Shebi General (Ghost King Peak)]:

Character Details: The most gifted clan leader of the ancient Shebi Corpse Clan. He had accidentally entered the forbidden area of the Ancient God and picked the Ancient God's natal spiritual plant, committing a heinous sin. That was the downfall of the whole Shebi Corpse Clan, turning every one of them into half-alive, half-dead, yet immortal Shebi zombies. In an endless slaughter, the Shebi General ultimately awakened his last sliver of Spirit Wisdom, resolutely sealing himself and his clansmen in the Shebi Underground Palace, in an attempt to use an endless sleep to put an end to his clansmen's agony, so they shall slaughter no more!

Character Status: Soul-Destroying Curse, absence of soul (In this state, no matter how strong the body's talent is, without the blessing of a soul, its realm is unable to be upgraded).

Upon reading its character information, Hu He was dumbfounded. Now he understood why the Shebi General would look at him with such fury.

Meanwhile, the players in the forum were bursting with laughter.

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Poor Shebi Clan, they could finally end their suffering after going through so much, but then they encountered the Great Demon King, who dug them out forcefully.”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Great Demon King, hurry up and tell him, stop sleeping and let’s have some fun! Now that there’s so much going on in Cangxu, why is he sleeping? Kill!”

Assassin\_Creed: “The Great Demon King: Want to sleep? No way! Move your body to the beat, let’s have some fun!”

A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “Hahaha, the guy sealed himself in, perfect!”

Lost\_8k\_To\_Online\_Dating: “You want to enter a deep sleep? Our Great Demon King said, no way! As long as I’m alive, I’ll be damned if you don’t have some fun. (laughing emoji)”

Classy\_Lady\_Yin\_Xiaoqi: “I’m laughing so hard, I reckon the Shebi General would probably feel like strangling the Great Demon King.”

Watermelon\_Taro: “The Great Demon King is mighty, the Great Demon King is the best!”

...

Looking at the players’ comments, Hu He also felt a little awkward.

“Kill!”

The Shebi General’s body gradually regenerated, before leaping from the pool toward Hu He.

Seeing that, Hu He immediately kept all the tools around him. At the same time, he adjusted his pain receptors to the lowest setting. After that, he opened his arms wide as he welcomed death.

Under the Shebi General’s wrath, Hu He did not even last more than a second before being torn into a cloud of black mist.

Slurp!

The Shebi General sucked vigorously as though he wanted to suck out Hu He's soul.

However, Hu He's soul had already been absorbed into the channel by his artifact, so he was nowhere near to consuming it.

After many unsuccessful tries, the thirst for blood in the Shebi General's eyes skyrocketed.

Under such endless agony and torture, he lost his mind once again.

Roar!

The Shebi General's roar caused the other Shebi corpses in the pool to howl in anger, before leaping out of the pool and sprinting after the Shebi General.

Flesh, souls. These were the things that they craved the most.

The time for slaughter is here.

...

Although Hu He had died after digging out the Shebi Corpse Clan, he had completed the task entrusted by the players, bringing Yuanxu an enemy that could not be killed.

Nonetheless, this was just the beginning.

As Hu He entered the cooldown stage after death, none of the players left his live streaming channel. They were all waiting for Hu He the Great Demon King to respawn and continue stirring up the winds and the rains.

After three hours...

Hu He had just respawned at the resurrection point when he noticed that countless players were gathered near the resurrection point, and all of them

were staring at him in anticipation.

“Welcome back, Great Demon King!”

“Good luck on your next expedition, Great Demon King!”

...

Seeing Hu He online, the European server players started to cheer, looking forward to him showing off again.

Although he was astonished, the feeling of being valued touched Hu He a little.

He thought of the days when he was beaten and yelled at, yet look at him now, the hope of all the people.

Sure enough, he was right to persevere. He was finally someone important now!

Thus, Hu He held his head high and left the safe zone amidst the farewells of the players, proceeding to look for sites of Ancient Seals in the Land of Cangxu.

As for how terrifying Hu He’s lethality was, the players started to experience that themselves in the next few days.

Meanwhile, the European server was extremely lively.

[Server Announcement: The Primordial Winged Serpent Clan has been awakened from a deep sleep by player Hu He in the Land of Cangxu. All players please be careful!]

[Server Announcement: A residual corpse of an Underworld God has been awakened from a deep sleep by player Hu He in the Land of Cangxu. This residual corpse has lost its consciousness. Due to its natural urge, it will consume flesh and soul to repair its residual corpse. All players please be careful!]

[Server Announcement: The seal of an ancient Black Demon Tree has been broken by player Hu He in the Land of Cangxu. This plant is extremely dangerous and has the ability to produce plagues. All players please be careful!]

[Server Announcement: The Evil King has been awakened by player Hu He in the Land of Cangxu. This creature was transformed from the demonic thoughts stripped from the Ancient God before he became a god, and he has the power of a Fledgling Ghost Emperor. All players please be careful!]

[Server Announcement: The Zilean Vortex has been awakened by player Hu He in the Land of Cangxu. It is a storm born of the evil Spirit Wisdom Manifestation and does not have a physical body. It is considered a natural disaster and will rage through the region. All players please be careful!]

[Server Announcement: The seal connecting the Underground Clan to the earth's surface has been broken by player Hu He in the Land of Cangxu. There is a high possibility that the Underground Clan will enter the earth's surface. It is unknown if they are good or evil. All players please be careful!]

...

In the beginning, the players were shocked, but slowly, they started to become numb. They no longer had the energy to complain about Hu He's lethality.

In just three days, Hu He had already dug up more than ten different seals, each one concealing beings of extreme lethality.

The arrival of these nearly indestructible evil forces made the Land of Cangxu much livelier.

The whole area of Cangxu could literally be described as overrun by demons.

The players in the east corner of Cangxu sat back and watched as the disasters raged on.

Although the players were slightly affected, they were still very ecstatic. After all, they had already prepared for their evacuation. It could not get any better now that the situation ended up like this.

Perhaps, in the eyes of others, the disasters were an endless bother, but to the players, it meant more experience points and soul coins.

Even though it might be troublesome for them to deal with it when the time came, they were very happy.

At this moment, Yin Xiaoqi, who was well-received and followed closely by the other players, published another suggestion post.

This time, her suggestion once again shocked all the players. It was such a creative suggestion, so clever that it sent chills tingling down the other players' spines.



# Chapter 244 - Yin Xiaoqi'S Script (Part 2)

Chapter 244: Yin Xiaoqi's Script (Part 2)

Yin Xiaoqi was placed under the spotlight amongst the players after sharing the first suggestion to release the Great Demon King.

She made another suggestion this time around and the page view of the post was growing rapidly.

The players' minds were once again blown by her unique brain circuit after understanding her idea.

[Here's another suggestion from me, all European server players can play the game this way!]

Author: Classy\_Lady\_Yin\_Xiaoqi

My suggestion this time is mainly about analyzing the situation of the forces in Cangxu at this point. Do not take this too seriously, it's just an idea from me, whether to implement it fully depends on everyone's opinion.

Now, let's get into it!

Firstly, we have to talk about our gifted friend, the Great Demon King, who caused more than ten disasters throughout the Land of Cangxu which resulted in massive destruction. I tip my fedora to you, mighty Great Demon King!

I have been paying attention to the raging aftermath of the disasters and something interesting caught my eye.

There were different types of disasters this time around. Aside from the bloodlust and undead creatures, there was an unprecedented natural disaster,

but this is not the most important point. Something unique out of these disasters is the Evil King, a Ghost Emperor level elite who possesses strong power.

The Evil King was introduced in the server announcement description as the transformation of a demonic thought removed from an Ancient God.

Did you guys notice that the Evil King has a completely different presentation compared to the other disasters?

I noticed something from the various posts describing the disasters.

Unlike the other disasters which caused massive destruction, the Evil King was occupied with developing his own force. He also proceeded to recruit Ghost Kings and Emperors from the various forces around Cangxu just as Yuanxu did.

What does that mean? This clearly shows that the Evil King is wild at heart and his aim is obviously to be the overlord of the Land of Cangxu.

Although the Evil King is still weak at this point, we shouldn't forget that he is still a Ghost Emperor Elite. Based on how he was only sealed instead of dying, it is highly likely that it will be extremely difficult to kill him.

The reason why the Evil King could be recruiting so blatantly is that he had many innate advantages. It can be said that he doesn't fear Yuanxu at all.

The forces in Cangxu are currently distributed as follows.

Players (oppose) Yuanxu, Players (oppose) Evil King, Players (oppose) Disasters.

Yuanxu (opposes) Players, Yuanxu (opposes) Evil King, Yuanxu (opposes) Disasters.

Evil King (opposes) Players, Evil King (opposes) Yuanxu, Evil King (opposes) Disasters.

Disasters (oppose) all forces.

Due to the unstable nature of the disasters, it can be categorized as a common enemy for all forces. Also, disasters can also be enemies of other disasters. Ruling out the instability factor, a triangular cycle is formed.

As the weakest force, we players do not have the power to be balanced to any of the forces at the current stage.

Therefore, under the position where other forces are opposing each other, we can be wiped out at any time.

I cannot help but get an idea from this.

Isn't the Evil King recruiting to expand his own force?

Does that mean that we can all surrender to the Evil King to expand his force?

Here are the benefits we players can get if we yield to the Evil King.

Firstly, the best advantage for us is that we can finally leave Hidden Dragon and advance to other places with the Evil King's support.

This also means that Yuanxu and the Evil King's forces will be more balanced.

Secondly, balanced forces will result in a prolonged battle.

I guess I don't have to explain in detail about the advantages of prolonged battles and continuous attacking of enemies for players, right?

This is definitely a good chance for character development! A prolonged battle will be a battle of resources and exhaustive to the other forces, but a great opportunity for our development. The longer and fiercer the battle, the more advancements we'll achieve!

Thirdly, another advantage that we players have is that we are more fierce in battles because we're not afraid to die.

As a force leader, the Evil King will definitely give us an important role since we are eager in battles and we are always at the frontlines.

Also, he is a Ghost Emperor Elite and an incarnation of an Ancient God's demonic thought, so he should have many precious valuables.

Since we will be his diligent subordinate force, he will definitely reward us generously.

That will be our bonus reward!

Fourthly...

...

The players were totally convinced by Yin Xiaoqi's analysis suggestion post.

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Damn, she's asking us to surrender to the Evil King and utilize him to develop our own characters. I am convinced and I can't think of anything to rebut you. (surprise emoji)"

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "I'm impressed. I've read through the analysis post and I think that this can be implemented. We players will not lose anything anyway, we might even get some bonus rewards. (Tong Gua with a thumbs up.jpg)"

Peppa\_Boar: "That just might work. Utilizing the Evil King's force to develop our characters sounds amazing!"

Watermelon\_Taro: "Evil King: These subordinates are really good to work with! They are always charging forward in battles as if they are not afraid to die and they have slogans like 'the Evil King is the best', I'm so touched. I'm rewarding every one of them with a set of purple equipment as encouragement. (laughing emoji)"

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Players: The Evil King is so good to work with! Aside from providing us the opportunity to gain experience points and soul coins, he's also rewarding us with gifts from time to time. How comforting, we

shall charge more and don't care about our lives in the next battle (laughing emoji)!"

Invincible\_Loneliness: "The funniest thing is, when all players help the Evil King to get rid of Yuanxu, we will definitely have a mutiny to kill the Evil King on the spot. Classy\_Lady\_Yin\_Xiaoqi has already provided a script for us. What an exciting operation, definitely impressive!"

...

Yin Xiaoqi's suggestion post was pushed to the top of the forum from the continuous replies from the players. It was really on fire!

Her suggestion of utilizing the players' own advantages accompanied by the Evil King's advantages to develop their characters could definitely aid them to get out of the tight spot they were in.

Regardless of their server, all players were giving good comments to Yin Xiaoqi's ingenious idea and they decided to go with it.

...

The Land of Cangxu, Spectral Dragon Tomb.

Yuanxu was floating mid-air in the center zone of the Spectral Dragon Tomb. His expression was livid as he looked at the chaotic storm in the distance.

Yuanxu made a few continuous claps when the Zilean Vortex was getting near.

A few invisible palm-shaped holes were formed beside the vortex instantly but it did not take long before those holes were covered. It continued raging and rumbled forward.

Observing the situation, Yuanxu snorted and summoned a black virtual beast. The beast detached itself from Yuanxu's body and soared high up in the air before it charged into the Zilean Vortex hard.

Crash!

The beast was strangled and killed by the vortex, causing the current to weaken. The insides of the vortex were getting disorderly and collapsing.

However, the current intensified once again within a short while. The disordered parts were recovered and the Zilean Vortex once again took its full form.

Fortunately, the vortex was affected by Yuanxu's act and shifted its direction away from that area.

Staring at the Zilean Vortex that was moving away, Yuanxu's expression was cold.

He was unsure of why the disasters which were sealed primordially were emerging on such a large scale. He remembered that some of them were even suppressed and sealed by himself when he was ruler.

These unusual phenomena were causing Yuanxu a massive headache. They were also tremendously affecting his operation to take over the Land of Cangxu.

He descended gradually to the ground and all the Ghost Kings and Emperors below him bowed with respect.

“Have you looked into this matter? What's going on? Why are all the Primordial Seals being broken!?” Yuanxu's expression was cold as he questioned one of his subordinates.

# **Chapter 245 - We Are Warlike People And We Do Not Fear Death (Part 3)**

Chapter 245: We Are Warlike People And We Do Not Fear Death (Part 3)

Fenshui the Ghost King got a shock upon getting questioned.

“Your Majesty, I’ve investigated a few sealed locations and I realized that the seals were all sabotaged. These disasters are not coincidental, there is someone behind them!”

Yuanxu’s expression turned ghastly upon hearing that.

He could not believe that someone was already thinking of holding him back although he was only released from prison a short while ago.

The first person who came to Yuanxu’s mind was Cangxu himself, the one who defeated him and took the throne away from him.

Yuanxu subsequently disagreed with himself internally as the thought was far too unrealistic.

He was fully aware that Cangxu was long dead and his soul had already crossed the Bridge of Forgetfulness. It would be impossible for him to return.

After all, Cangxu was going against heaven. The gods in heaven would never let him off easily unless he was dead.

However, Yuanxu could not think of anyone else who would obstruct him in the dark other than Cangxu.

It had been hundreds of thousands of years and all his enemies were already gone. Even his biggest threat was also gone now. It would be impossible for him to have any enemies left.

Yuanxu was even certain that the throne was going to be his after understanding the situation in the Land of Cangxu these days.

“Your Majesty, there’s one more thing. I found out that the demonic thought of the Evil Demon God was born!” Fenshui the Ghost King voiced again.

“What?” Yuanxu’s face tensed when he heard that.

The Evil Demon God was within the Top 100 on the Underworld God List and his powers surpassed the Ancient God realm. He was also the original founder of this large domain. Therefore, Yuanxu had a bad hunch when he found out that his demonic thought was reborn.

“What is he doing right now?”

“He is recruiting and expanding his forces. His aim is very clear!” Fenshui replied with sorrow.

“He is just a strand of demonic thought. How dare he compete for the throne with me? He is biting off more than he can chew!” Yuanxu spoke dryly.

“But Your Majesty, this demonic thought is left by the Evil Demon God before he attains divinity so he must be at the Ghost Emperor level at the least. What’s worse, he can be considered as undead or the first king would have decided to destroy him instead of just placing a seal on him. I’m afraid that he must be very difficult to deal with!”

“I’ll place a seal on him again then. How dare he fight me? He will regret this!”

A cold light flashed within Yuanxu’s eyes. He then proceeded to the direction of his new palace being built.

Seeing that, his subordinates gave each other worried looks.



They were willing to serve Yuanxu not just because they were fearful of his great powers, but they also saw Yuanxu as their pillar of support and they intended to develop themselves under his leadership.

However, everything was going out of their expectations. Their stable operation of unifying the Land of Cangxu was facing many unforeseen circumstances.

They felt lost as they were unsure of what to do under these states of affairs.

After all, if the Evil King really had the ability to build a force, they had to participate in his wars too since they were his subordinates.

They were not worried about the wars. They were only concerned that they might not obtain any benefits after surrendering themselves to Yuanxu. Risking their subordinates and their own lives for Yuanxu to fight for the throne didn't seem worth it at all.

After all, wars would cause deaths!

Even if they were a huge clan, getting demolished in a large-scale war would not be totally inevitable.

...

Land of Cangxu, Hidden Dragon Zone.

A buddha statue swished over from a distance and fell in the Hidden Dragon Marsh Village swiftly.

Noticing the statue, the players started shouting and calling out in the zone channel as they thought that another disaster was here.

The statue landed right in the middle of the village with a boom, lifting debris and dust everywhere.

In the midst of the players' astonished faces, a light flashed past the statue's stone surface and it became animated in an instant as it became alive.

“Tell me who your leader is!” the stone statue spoke suddenly, its tone irrefutably dignified.

The players were unhappy with the statue’s arrogant tone. They were ready to talk business with the statue by violence before some players who checked out the explanation guide called out in the zone channel.

“Stop, don’t do it! He’s the Evil King!”

“Hold up, brothers. He’s one of us, one of us!”

“He’s our future sugar daddy, the boss that we’re going to rely on. Don’t do anything stupid!”

“Fuck, the one with the sword, come back. It’s our future boss, make some good impressions!”

...

Listening to the roars within the zone channel, the players who were ready to charge forward stopped instantly. Their faces changed into smiles instantly as they looked at the Evil King with some unknown intent in their eyes.

The Evil King was a little astounded by that.

He had been to many different zones for recruitment. His first meetings with the other forces always started with a battle because nobody was willing to yield to him.

He thought that the same would apply here and the players were just acting. Why did they stop abruptly?

Li Xing, Jason, and the other players rushed over when they received the news. They made their way through the crowd and stood in front of the Evil King.

“I am the leader!” Li Xing was the first to voice out.

After taking in Yin Xiaoqi's suggestion, the players from the European server had a discussion and concluded that they had to have a leader figure to be able to join forces with the Evil King.

The Zero Guild was the strongest guild in the European server without any question. Therefore having their guild leader, Li Xing, to be their clan leader was expected by all players.

Looking at the leader of the alleged force, a red light flashed across the Evil King's eyes.

“Good, you have two choices now! Pledge loyalty to me, or die!” the pressure exerted from the Evil King condensed and his momentum heightened as he spoke.

Right when he was ready to emit the pressure to the surrounding players, Li Xing replied suddenly, “We, the Player Clan, choose to pledge loyalty!”

The Evil King's condensed momentum dispersed immediately.

The players' actions were not going according to his expectations at all. He was not used to this.

He was entrenching a zone's force, after all. The process of this submission was smooth, too smooth that it was confusing to him.

“You can address me as the Evil King. All of you are my subordinates from now on. My aim is to be the new king of the Land of Cangxu!” the Evil King spoke again after some thinking.

He initially thought that the players would be shocked or even oppose his wild ambition.

After all, the demolishing of clans in the path to snatch the throne was inevitable as there would be a huge war.

Yet, Li Xing nodded forcefully and said, “Our clan will definitely aid the Evil King with our full effort for you to become His Excellency!”

“Aren’t you all afraid?” the Evil King frowned.

“No... we, the Player Clan, do not fear death and we are a warlike people. It will be our biggest honor to die on a battlefield!”

The Evil King fell into silence by Li Xing’s reply.

After talking to Li Xing, the Evil King’s initial thought was that this clan must be weak with low combat power.

After all, the forces that he met previously were all feisty and they didn’t yield whole-heartedly. He would never be able to get them to surrender to him without utilizing his great powers.

To the Evil King, Li Xing’s forthright acceptance was indicating that they were weaklings.

However, having listened to Li Xing that his clan were warlike people without any fear toward death and dying in a battlefield would be an honor, the Evil King was repulsed and his impression toward the players had gotten worse.

Although they’re weak, I’ll give it to them that they are pretty good at boasting. This was the Evil King’s first impression toward the players.

# Chapter 246 - The Garden Of Death

## Chapter 246: The Garden Of Death

Although his impression of the Player Clan had dropped, they seemed to be loyal to him, so he had no major complaints, “Very well, from now on, the Player Clan shall be a force under my command!”

Li Xing immediately nodded in agreement and asked, “So, Evil King, how do you think we should fight with Yuanxu?”

Hearing this, the Evil King did not answer. Instead, he replied with a question while looking at Li Xing puzzledly, “Are you enemies with Yuanxu?”

The Evil King thought it was unnatural for Li Xing to proactively ask about his plans to counter Yuanxu. After all, Yuanxu’s formidable strength was no secret. Should he not be trembling in fear, facing such a menacing enemy?

He couldn’t figure out why Li Xing was so enthusiastic to fight Yuanxu.

“Yes, Evil King, our clan has a deep hatred against Yuanxu...”

Yin Xiaoqi’s script was very comprehensive. It included the player’s behavior before the Evil King and the lore of their own faction. So, the Evil King nodded in realization when he heard Li Xing’s story.

When he understood the irreconcilable hatred between the Player Clan and Yuanxu, the Evil King was relieved. At the very least, this could be used to increase the Player Clan’s combat prowess in the fight against the Yuanxu Army.

After listening to Li Xing’s explanation, the Evil King nodded, “Regarding fighting Yuanxu, I think his main stronghold is in the northeast. We should

start to expand our forces from where they are least present. At the current stage, the Hidden Dragon Zone where you are now, the Relic Ruins, the Hidden Mist Forest, and so on, a total of seven forces have pledged their loyalty to me. We shall set up our main base in this area and expand our forces up north... ”

After listening to the Evil King’s plan, Li Xing could not help nodding.

His plan was totally practical to Li Xing.

In their discussion afterward, Li Xing did not merely listen. Other than voicing his own doubts, he began to propose a counter-plan according to Yin Xiaoqi’s plan.

Yin Xiaoqi’s suggestion on the forum was to make the Evil King give up on the areas around the Hidden Mist Forest and focus on grouping in the Hidden Dragon Valley and the Relic Ruins.

Currently, the Evil King was at a disadvantage.

Blindly expanding his territory would not be a smart thing to do, which was why he should give up the remaining land and focus on defending his stronghold. He should fortify his strength because, the lesser his territory, the easier it would be for him to defend. After his forces had grown in strength, he could start to consider expanding his territory.

Li Xing’s suggestions seemed very strange to the Evil King. He immediately began to consider their feasibility.

He was the embodiment of demonic thoughts, so he was not afraid of dying. However, he could not stand risking his troops in the early stages. After considering carefully, the Evil King felt that going on the defense seemed like the correct answer.

This time, the Evil King changed his opinion on Li Xing, “Excellent, I accept your suggestion. I shall inform them to leave their own territories, and camp in the Hidden Dragon and Relic Ruins. As for you guys, just stand by and await my command. This war will come sooner or later!”

Li Xing nodded respectfully. He was grinning inwardly and was extremely impressed by Yin Xiaoqi.

She had accurately predicted that the Evil King would approach him first and finally accept his suggestions. Everything was proceeding steadily according to her script.

The next thing they had to do was to display the players' strength so that they might earn the Evil King's favor and prepare for the next step of the script!

...

Land of Cangxu, The Garden of Death (Forbidden Area).

Behind the towering statue of the Evil Demon God, wild grass was growing everywhere. Among them were vibrant and multicolored poisonous plants. A poisonous mist hung in the air. The plants were shaking their vines and dancing like ghostly snakes, it was a terrifying sight to behold.

This place was named a forbidden area because it was once where the creator of the Land of Cangxu, the Evil Demon God, planted his spiritual garden. The place was filled with magical and demonic plants, which meant danger was everywhere.

Hu He was walking on this land, searching for the next seal while streaming live.

Recently, as he continued releasing disasters, his fame shot up among the players and he enjoyed it a lot.

This, in turn, became his motivation to excavate more seals.

Other than solving the problems of the European server players, Hu He reaped bountiful rewards hunting seals. He had already obtained two Fledging Ghost King corpses.

Although he was getting stronger, he was still quite anxious and afraid when he reached the Garden of Death.

The plants here were too deadly. Ghost Commander level plants were everywhere. Hu He even suspected the existence of Ghost King level demonic plants, too.

With his strength, even though he possessed Cha Na's zombie spirit, a Greater Ghost Commander, and had been reinforced multiple times, he was barely qualified to enter this place. The only thing he could do if he encountered any powerful plants was to run for his life.

His compass was showing its peak value. Even though it was dangerous, Hu He did not have the slightest intention to leave.

As he walked further in, the compass would twitch a little after a certain distance.

Hu He looked at the soil beneath his feet and found nothing special.

Nevertheless, the compass would not be wrong. So, he commanded Cha Na's zombie spirit to start digging.

After digging for ten minutes or so, a huge pit was excavated there.

Suddenly, Hu He halted the zombie spirit's digging and jumped into the pit himself.

He did not want to stop, but Cha Na's zombie spirit could not dig any deeper. The layer of rock beneath could not be broken using a metal spade.

To find out the reason, Hu He slowly shoveled away the layers of soil. Finally, he found a black stone tablet.

When he saw the dents on the spade, Hu He was surprised at how hard the rock was.

Feeling curious, he began to command Cha Na's zombie spirit to dig from the side while he cleaned up the dirt stuck in the carvings of the stone tablet.



After working diligently for some time, the true face of the tablet gradually revealed itself.

It was a pure black stone tablet. Red blood-like spots covered its surface and many strange inscriptions were carved onto it. In the middle, there was a pitch-black recess which looked like a handprint.

Hu He stood up and began to investigate the tablet. The convoluted inscriptions began to unfold under the artifact's analysis.

Kill! Kill! Kill!

Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill!

Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill!

This is my grave. Hereafter, there shall be no end to the bloodshed, even the blood of the Great Emperors!

...

There should have been a few more words that followed after, but the black handprint had destroyed them. So, only the remaining few words were legible.

I... Kill... Destroy.

Return... Eventually... Apocalypse.

Beyond the region...

Hu He was shocked after decrypting the words. He did not understand the meaning of the Great Emperor, so he couldn't decipher its meaning. The only feeling he had was that the author held a profound grudge against someone or something.

His viewers were completely stupefied as well, as they couldn't understand what the tombstone was saying at all.

They began to speculate about hidden contents related to these inscriptions.

However, there were many trolls online, so the speculation became more and more twisted, turning into various jokes and memes.

Just when Hu He was planning to carefully study the tombstone, a dark shadow covered the sky.

Hu He immediately looked up and saw an overly gigantic bird creature resembling an eagle hanging in the sky, staring straight at him with its sharp eyes.

“It’s you!”

As he saw Hu He trying to check out the tombstone, Fenshui the Ghost King flapped his wings, stirred up a strong tornado from the ground, and sucked Hu He up to the sky!

# Chapter 247 - The Infinite Darkness

## Chapter 247: The Infinite Darkness

With the natural disasters happening frequently these days, Fenshui the Ghost King went to investigate and was in distress.

Other than knowing that the seal had been destroyed by someone, he didn't have any other clues about who or why. He was yet unable to report anything to Yuanxu.

He decided to give up on searching and chose to wait idly for the person who dug the seals to show up.

The hideout he had chosen was Cangxu's original palace.

He picked this place because there was a prison with a dark seal right underneath the palace. It had held many prisoners of former hostile forces and had been personally watched by Cangxu himself.

However, after a few days' waiting, nobody was seen.

A thought suddenly dawned on him. The most terrifying seal within the Land of Cangxu would no doubt be the Garden of Death.

It was foretold that within this region hid the Evil Demon God's body.

Of course, he was not sure whether the myth was true. Even the death of the Evil Demon God was unverifiable.

If everything was real and the Evil Demon God's body was dug out, surely a ghastly disaster would erupt. A chill went down his spine just thinking of it.

Just when this thought went through his mind, he hurriedly rushed toward the direction of the Garden of Death.

Coincidentally, he bumped into the infamous Hu He digging out the seal.

Having finally found the culprit, Fenshui's eyes gleamed with a sharp gaze, but he didn't kill Hu He instantly. Instead, he apprehended him and was ready to report back.

But Fenshui realized that something was fishy about this hole that was dug out.

Other than Cha Na's zombie spirit, there was also an enormous pitch-black tombstone.

He didn't know much about ancient scriptures, but the dark handprint embedded on the tombstone made him stop dead in his tracks.

This was the God Spirit's breath!

Fenshui's heart skipped a beat as he turned and looked at Hu He who was still trying hard to get away from his grip.

It was so close, so close... don't tell me the one who's in a deep slumber down there is the long-gone Evil Demon God!

Fenshui the Ghost King really wanted to strangle Hu He to death.

Legend had it that the Evil Demon God had always been thirsty for blood. The reason why there were so many Demonic Plants growing in the Garden of Death was that the Evil Demon God had used the blood of different living beings to water them, making them all full of demonic power.

These legends were baseless but the Shebi Corpse Clan that came out of nowhere recently had verified the legend of the Evil Demon God's Soul-Destroying Curse.

A thought flashed across Fenshui's mind... if the Evil Demon God were to be dug out, then Yuanxu, the Evil King, and all the other natural disasters

would no longer be significant. There was no point to even fight for the throne anymore... everyone should run for their lives!

Slap!

As fear crept into him, Fenshui gave a hard slap on Hu He's face and caught him off guard, causing his head to lean backward.

“Fuck! Big bird, how dare you hit me...”

Slap!

“Great, just you wait. When I finish refining Hiderigami, I will surely pluck out all of your...”

Slap! Slap! Slap!

...

After venting off his anger, Fenshui flapped his wings to bury the section that most probably contained the said seal and flew away with Hu He.

At the moment, Hu He's nose was still bleeding non-stop because of the beating. He had stopped talking and was in a daze.

In the live streaming channel:

Crayon Sinchan: “Motherfucker. Demon King, you should jot this down first. We'll find out where his ancestral tomb is for you. If he hits you, then you dig up his ancestors' graves and curse him for the next 18 generations. No, dig up an entire hundred generations. (laughing emoji)”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Looks like he almost dug something out, it's a pity that he got caught red-handed by Yuanxu's subordinate. I almost felt for Demon King for half a second. (laughing emoji)”

Watermelon\_Taro: “Amid the breeze and cold river water, the Great Demon King went and never came back. (laughing emoji)”

Assasin\_Creed: “So unfortunate to see the Great Demon King get caught, but why do I feel somewhat good? There should be no hatred between us. (laughing emoji)”

A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “Look! The Great Demon King is flying, I wonder what’s the line of blood flowing down. (laughing emoji)”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “Look, isn’t this a good little dog? Laughing and patting on the dog’s head three times. (laughing emoji)”

...

This time when the gamers saw how Hu He failed to dig up the seal, there were no regrets at all. On the contrary, they were interested in how Hu He would be punished.

They had even opened up a gambling port in the live streaming channel, listing out different proportions of choices for other gamers to place their bets on.

This scene made Hu feel a sudden sense of grief on the inside.

Building your happiness on other’s suffering? Are you guys even human?

Gales whizzed at his ears whereas his nosebleed had turned into droplets and splattered all over his face in the wind. Hu He was in total melancholy.

About an hour or so in the air, Fenshui the Ghost King finally slowed down and started to descend.

The name of the place appeared on the map.

[Spectral Dragon Tomb]

Suddenly, Fenshui made a sharp dive. After gliding for a distance in a low altitude, he let go of Hu He, allowing him to free fall and eventually his body slammed onto the ground.

Using his wings as an advantage to balance his body, Fenshui touched down steadily. He then faced Yuanxu who was sitting cross-legged on the ground and said, “Your Majesty, this is the person who destroyed the seals!”

Hearing this, Hu He grimaced and slowly got up from the ground. When he raised his head, he realized that in front of him was actually an old acquaintance of his.

“I already guessed that it might be your doing... it was just as expected. Tell me what your intention is!”

Gazing at Hu He, Yuanxu was not surprised at all. After all, he himself was dug out by Hu He as well.

The only thing Yuanxu couldn't understand was why Hu He would do such a thing. It was an arduous and thankless task after all. Besides, in the Land of Cangxu, many dangerous seals were lurking around every corner, and he might lose his life without being careful.

Nevertheless, Hu He was his savior. That was why Yuanxu did not take his soul directly but chose to ask his purpose first.

“I... would you believe me if I said I dug for fun?” Hu He muttered.

“Looks like you are full of secrets!” Yuanxu held his hand out and sucked Hu He to his side, all the while sitting cross-legged on the ground.

“Last chance for you to speak the truth. If there's anything false in your words, I will take your soul personally and understand it myself!” Yuanxu uttered lightly.

Hearing this, Hu He couldn't help but feel resentment and humor at the same time.

As if I'm really afraid. Talking about death, my number of deaths is ranked the top in this game, will I be petrified just by that?

“I'm just digging for fun... if you don't believe me just take my soul!” now that Hu He knew he might not be able to make it out in one piece, he

slapped his thigh and pressed his luck.

Yuanxu slowly turned his head and gazed upon Hu He, with his eyebrows furrowed, “I find that you’re not afraid of me!”

“Why, we all have a head, a pair of arms and a pair of legs, have you grown wings? I need not be afraid of you!” Hu He fought back with grandeur.

Fenshui the Ghost King, who had been listening from the side, couldn’t help but glare at Hu He.

Only I have wings here!

“Since you’re not afraid of death, are you terrified of loneliness then?” when it came to the fearless Hu He, Yuanxu’s face turned bitter cold.

“What do you mean?” Hu He was stunned.

“A seal of immortality and eternity. Aren’t you obsessed with digging out seals? Then I shall seal you up and make you suffer in the dark!”

Not waiting for Hu He to answer, Yuanxu turned and said, “Fenshui, bring him to the Infinite Darkness and seal him up. Bring him back after a thousand years!”

Hearing that, a menacing grin crept onto Fenshui’s face. With a flail of his wings, he grabbed hold of Hu He and drifted toward the direction of the original palace.

All the while, the most miserable thing in a place like the underworld was not death, but an infinite seal.

The torment of spending one’s life all alone, even the gods would be mentally deranged!

Meanwhile in the Land of Cangxu, there was a place for the seal specially used for imprisonment, which was the underground of the original palace.



This place was personally built by Cangxu himself after a few ten thousand years after becoming king. The reason was to suppress all forces who dared to confront him.

The souls' perception of time in this prison was completely different from the outside world. An hour on the outside world meant 1,000 years in the Infinite Darkness.

Besides, there was no food and soul energy in it, so there was no way to perform sorcery either. Apart from that, a seal was made on the prisoner's body so that the prisoner would not be able to escape through death. It was truly a place of darkness.

Considering the existence of this seal, Cangxu's status was as solid as a rock when he was ruling back at that time. No one dared to revolt against him as anyone in their right mind wouldn't want to spend the rest of their life in darkness. That was a torture so much worse than death.

# Chapter 248 - The Great Demon King Got Banned

Chapter 248: The Great Demon King Got Banned

Land of Cangxu, His Excellency's Palace.

A large shadow glided toward the zone from afar at a fast pace.

While flying with high speed, Hu He had a hard time keeping his eyes open as the strong wind howled by his ears. Everything around him was blurry.

When they finally reached the sky above the palace, Fenshui the Ghost King dropped his body abruptly, and with that, Hu He experienced his first bungee jump.

The palace was in ruins. The supplies and resources internally were all divided between the lords of each region and now the place looked just like a stretch of wasteland.

When they almost reached the ground, Fenshui's body started to shrink as he carried Hu He into the palace and stopped at a corner of the Great Hall.

After having a good look at Hu He's unbending expression, Fenshui flapped his wings vigorously and suddenly, a crack formed on the ground. In the crack was total blackness.

"Big bird, what are you trying to do!?" Hu He asked vigilantly as he stared down into the darkness.

"Are you not afraid of death? So we shall meet after a thousand years!" Fenshui smiled menacingly and kicked Hu He into the black hole.

After entering the seal, the shadow engulfed Hu He in a split second, though currently he still maintained a calm composure. To him, getting

sealed up for a thousand years was something that can be resolved just by committing suicide once.

Otherwise, getting sealed would mean getting banned, he believed that it was impossible for this kind of bug to exist in the game.

Therefore, without any worries about his future, Hu He started to take a good look at his surroundings.

Without a single ray of light, the place was in pin-drop silence. Hu He then took out a searchlight from his inventory, wanting to inspect the situation around him.

A cylinder of light from his torch swept across his surroundings.

However, what happened next left Hu He flabbergasted.

Just as the searchlight managed to light up a three-meter distance, the light ray started to shorten rapidly as though a monster in the dark was devouring the light bit by bit, until everything was back into darkness again.

Hu He was at a loss, so he kept his searchlight on and shouted, "Is anyone there?"

However, just when his voice exited his mouth, it vanished into thin air. Even Hu He himself wasn't able to hear his own shouts.

Unable to see or hear anything, Hu He began to panic.

After all, everything in this game was extremely real. In a situation where his senses were all blocked, Hu He's blood ran cold.

Originally, he was planning to do some exploration. But now, he was totally out of ideas. He took his shovel out and decided to finish himself off so he could start all over again from the safe zone.

After turning off his pain detectors, Hu He started to strike at himself.

Albeit, what happened after that scared the living daylights out of Hu He.

Every time his shovel hit his body, a shapeless darkness would shield the part where he was hurt and nullify all the forces.

He tried smashing his head, slashing his throat, and all the other methods of dying, but Hu He was left utterly dumbfounded.

I actually can't die here!

This scared Hu He out of his wits. If he couldn't die and return, did it not mean that he would have to stay there for 1,000 years?

I can't even live a thousand year... don't tell me I'll have to pass down this account to my future generations?

Realizing that the situation was not in his favor, Hu He swiftly logged out of the game.

Luckily, he was not in battle mode, so Hu He managed to log out of this sealed world easily.

After he was back to reality, Hu He logged back into the game again, with a sense of hope in his heart.

Darkness, everything was still in an infinite darkness.

Logged out!

Logged in again!

The dark world engulfed him once again.

...

Motherfucker, did I really get banned from my account?

After numerous attempts, Hu He was in the midst of falling apart. He shrunk himself into a ball in the dark, feeling wronged like a little child.

Meanwhile in the live streaming channel, the gamers were bustling with noise and excitement when they saw Hu He got sealed.

Watermelon\_Taro: “Look, he was banned for a thousand years. I think this account can be inherited to his future generations after 1,000 years (laughing emoji)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “When Hu He’s great great great great ... great grandson is about to leave his mortal frame, he holds onto his son’s hand as tears roll down his cheeks. Dear son, this account was passed down by your great ancestor, Hu He, the Great Demon King a thousand years ago. I can’t wait any longer, you must carry forward this account’s legacy. According to the recorded history, this account was said to be a legend, an imperishable legend! Finishing his last words, he kicks the bucket (laughing emoji)...”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “Hahaha! How can you guys say such a thing in such a sad case, hahaha!”

Peppa\_Boar: “After a thousand years, Hu He’s future generation logs into the account, lifts his shovel and shouts out to the world. I’m the Great Demon King in this new world, bow to me, you foolish gamers (laughing emoji)!”

Lost\_8k\_To\_Online\_Dating replied to Peppa\_Boar: “Then, he gets dumped into the Infinite Darkness again by the new generation of players and continues to be banned for another 1,000 years. (laughing emoji)”

Roasting\_Jade\_Hare\_While\_Hugging\_Chang’e: “Stupid netizens, a bunch of fools, hahaha!”

Captain\_Dragonfly: “Hahaha, we have been waiting for this forever and it has finally come, what a mournful situation. The Great Demon King, bear the pain and look at the positive side, I’ll introduce you to a game called Tetris. (laughing emoji)”

...

After reading the gamers' replies, Hu He felt disheartened. He literally felt like crying.

Yet even tears couldn't roll down in this darkness.

Nonetheless, jokes were just for humor. After playing around for a while, the gamers started to form a team and were ready to save the Great Demon King.

Although the Great Demon King had done a lot of wrongdoings in the past, now he had made an all-out effort for all the gamers in the Land of Cangxu.

Everyone had seen his hard work with their own eyes. So, with the jokes aside, they came together as one and headed toward the original palace to rescue him.

Watching his brothers on their way to save him, Hu He finally regained his spirits.

Oh yes! I could go to the forum and give feedback about the bug to the officials, let them handle it! A sudden self-rescue thought sparked in Hu He's mind.

Having that in mind, Hu He tried to open the forum.

Fortunately, he was still able to summon the game's interface no matter the circumstances he was under. This made Hu He feel so much relieved.

After that, Hu He logged into the forum and prepared to post a cry for help. He would then let other gamers help to stick the post on top of the forum.

Given the past, Hu He was dead sure that the gamers would try their best to overwrite his post. After all, it was the gamers' dream for his account to get banned.

Things had changed now, though. He was their life savior, the European server players' last ray of hope.

Just when Hu He was ready to hit the send button after typing the title and content of the post, he saw a beam of light above him. Following that, an unknown force pulled him upward.

“Hahaha, a thousand years have passed. How was it, were you afraid?”

Hu He was rendered speechless.

Looking at the arrogant Fenshui, Hu He glanced at the time on the lower-left corner of the interface. He was overwhelmed when he realized, Only an hour had passed, right?

...

All along, Lu Wu had been watching over Hu He's encounter.

However, he had the least worry about Hu He being sealed.

After Hu He was sealed, he went to Cangxu personally and asked about it. The Infinite Darkness that he had made was actually not something as terrifying as time control.

Creating a seal that was able to control the flow of time was never within his powers. In fact, the time inside the Infinite Darkness was just the same as that on the outside.

The only difference was that within the seal, the soul's senses would be confused by Cangxu's ritual, causing the prisoner to lose track of time. An hour inside the Infinite Darkness was equal to a thousand years in the outer world.

All in all, even the Underworld God could hardly master the Supreme Law of Time, which was the power to change the time in two different regions. How could he, a mere existence of the Ghost Emperor Realm, ever manage to acquire the skill?

So, Lu Wu was not a bit worried about something going wrong with Hu He when he knew the truth.

Besides, Hu He's soul was protected by the artifact.

Puzzling the souls in their sense of time would have worked on others, but as a gamer, it would never work on Hu He.

Moreover, even if Hu He were to be really sealed for a thousand years, Lu Wu was still able to summon him back into the artifact. Hu He didn't even have to break a sweat about it.

Of course, Hu He himself was not aware of it. Therefore, he had given himself some unnecessary heebie-jeebies.

...

“As expected, you were terrified. Fellow, weren't you unafraid of death back then? How do you feel right now? Speak up!” Fenshui the Ghost King smiled threateningly as he eyed the dazed Hu He.

Hu He was at a loss for words.

“Actually... it was quite okay!”



# Chapter 249 - Extending The Year

## Chapter 249: Extending The Year

Fenshui the Ghost King was dumbfounded when he heard Hu He's blasé answer.

“Could it be that the torture has driven you to madness?”

Looking at the extremely indifferent Hu He, Fenshui began to feel uneasy.

In all honesty, he fully understood why Yuanxu wanted to seal Hu He away.

Not only was it because Yuanxu wanted to know about Hu He's goal in digging up the seals everywhere, but also because he had noticed Hu He's potential and wanted to recruit him.

The main reason to seal him up was mainly to pressure Hu He and inject some fear into him as he seemed to be unafraid of death.

If Hu He had really gone mad, there was no way he could get off scot-free when reporting to Yuanxu.

“I'm not mad, you're the one who's mad!” Hu He could not hold in this fierce outburst of denial as he looked at Fenshui.

He wasn't even the slightest bit anxious about this. With the entire legion of players backing him up, they would definitely provide him with support whenever necessary.

What's more, all his fears disappeared when he discovered that in reality, 1,000 years inside the crack of Infinite Darkness was equivalent to just one hour on the outside.

I knew it, how is it possible for Battle Online to have such a massive bug! Hu He couldn't help but think to himself and felt relieved.

Glancing at Fenshui the Ghost King, Hu He had already realized his own worth. At the same time, the urge to explore the seals once again broiled inside him. Therefore, in a tiny whisper, he tentatively asked, “Do you want to extend it for another 1,000 years?”

His statement left Fenshui at a loss for words.

Looking at the dazed Fenshui, Hu He continued speaking, “You asked me how I feel about it. I don’t think I can fully explain what I felt just now, can I go through it again?”

Staring at the unusually calm Hu He, Fenshui the Ghost King suddenly felt extremely irritable.

Based on what he had predicted, Hu He’s reaction after being released should have been one of teary relief. Hu He was supposed to kneel on the ground pitifully begging him... why and how was he even challenging him now?

His frigid gaze rested upon Hu He for a few moments, a guess slowly formed in Fenshui’s mind.

This rascal must be acting when actually, he’s probably quaking with fear!

He would never fall for the thought that Hu He was completely unaffected by it at all.

After all, he had witnessed numerous people released from the Infinite Darkness. The first thing that all of them did was to beg piteously, without any form of psychological defense. As long as they didn’t have to return to the Infinite Darkness, they were willing to face death itself, let alone swear loyalty to Yuanxu!

With that thought in mind, Fenshui could hardly suppress his twisted smile, “Looks like it was too short of a time for you! I hope in the next meeting, you are no longer so stubborn!”

Then, with one kick of his leg, Hu He was sent back into the depths of the Infinite Darkness again.

The interior of the Infinite Darkness consisted of square-shaped jail cells, all of which could be controlled from the outside. From the inside, it was impossible to notice the existence of other prisoners. It was not that he was afraid of Hu He doing something unexpected. After all, Hu He had been examined before and no equipment or tools were found on him.

This time, Hu He remained calm and collected as he entered the Infinite Darkness again.

First, he opened the Menu tab and played some music.

The music was from the artifact and connected directly to his hearing, so even the Infinite Darkness was unable to block it out.

After that, he accessed the forum and went through all the posts.

Finally, he opened the live streaming channels and watched those silly netizens make fools of themselves online.

After a flurry of motions, a ray of light shone again and Hu He was sucked into the outer realm.

“How did it feel?”

Hu He earnestly nodded his head.

“I felt something this time!”

Fenshui the Ghost King immediately lost his temper and sent Hu He back into the Infinite Darkness with another ruthless kick.

He did not believe that Hu He could last long under this treatment.

Meanwhile, deep within the Infinite Darkness, Hu He’s body twisted and turned, dancing to the music as he began to jam out.

Either way, no one could see him now, so he could party as he liked with no hesitation.

One hour later...

Before he could even regain his balance on his feet, Hu He was once again kicked back inside by the infuriated Fenshui.

This time Fenshui was truly angered. He planned to seal Hu He inside there for 10,000 years, there was no way this rascal wouldn't cave after that!

Returning to the Infinite Darkness, Hu He began his usual routine of listening to music, scrolling through posts, and watching live streams. But when he finished, he noticed that Fenshui had yet to release him. Thus, he logged off, made himself a cup of coffee, and finished it with a satisfying gulp before logging back into the game.

This time he planned on exploring the Infinite Darkness.

The portion of the area that he was in was not that wide, perhaps around thirty square feet. The very edge of this area was a soft and tactile Sealing Wall.

Hu He tried to push it and found the Sealing Wall to be extremely resilient. He was unable to destroy it with his strength.

However, this also incited a deep desire within Hu He to dig through this Sealing Wall.

Even though his avatar lacked the strength, he still had other options like browsing the shop where tools were in abundance.

Thus, Hu He began to search the shop for tools that could be used to destroy the seal.

Jason from the Zero Guild on the European server had recently transferred him some funds for digging up seals, so he was not worried about wasting soul coins.

He had tried all of those electric drills and demon-breaker knives. If it weren't for the fact that the shop did not sell excavators, he would also have bought one to try.

Unfortunately, to his dismay, all of these tools did not work on the Sealing Wall, leaving it completely unscathed.

Even so, Hu He did not become dispirited but turned his attention to rifling through the special columns of the shop.

There were a lot of special items listed there, so he felt that he might be able to get lucky with one of them.

After looking around for some time, Hu He finally managed to find something spectacular.

[Anti-Seal Canceler (Tool)]:

Item Details: A belonging left behind by an unknown developer when he was still in the early stages of researching the seals. It is able to cancel out the energy of most seals (Warning: This tool is a one-time use item.)

Item Price: 400 soul coins

A quick glimpse at the price made Hu He hesitate. Upon touching the Sealing Wall, his heart became restless again.

He ruminated over it, then grit his teeth and bought one.

The Anti-Seal Canceler suddenly appeared in front of him, its shape akin to a doorknob.

With high hopes, Hu He placed this tool onto the wall of air.

At this moment, the Sealing Wall promptly began to ripple, hardening to the touch and no longer as soft as it originally was.

In the span of about a minute, a sudden smack resounded through the air and the Anti-Seal Canceler shattered in Hu He's hand.

Just when its effects could be seen, the tool had suddenly failed to work. Without a doubt, it made Hu He's heart ache.

Since he had already started this, it was not in his nature to do things half-heartedly. Thus, he bought another one of them.

After he proceeded to use three of these anti-seal cancelers, the Sealing Wall suddenly cracked.

As he stared at the seal which had successfully been broken, Hu He excitedly clasped his fist before walking through it.

The interior of the Sealing Wall was still pitch black, so Hu He began to fumble around.

Smack!

Just as he was walking, Hu He suddenly felt his foot had come into contact with something, sending him tumbling down onto the floor.

He hurriedly got to his feet and instinctively took a step back.

However, this space was completely enveloped in darkness, it was impossible for him to make out what had tripped him. Still, he bent over and began to use his hands to feel around his legs.

Hmm? It's smooth and really soft?

Even so, the living thing by his feet still remained deadly still, hardly a response to any of his movements.

Hu He was a bit despondent that he was unable to discern what the living thing was by his feet. He truly felt it might be impossible for them to interact with each other.

Therefore, he began to go through the shop once again.

Momentarily, Hu He re-emerged with another wonderful item.

[Soul Interaction Rope]:

Item Details: A soul-conductor tool invented by an unknown developer, used to communicate with the souls of living things. (Examples: Ghosts and Evil Ghosts)

Method of Use: All living things (Spiritual Body) that come into contact with the Soul Interaction Rope can commence interaction (Warning: Most spiritual bodies lack sentience, thus interaction is not feasible. Once purchased, no refunds are allowed!)

Item Price: 500 soul coins

This price caused a twinge in Hu He's heart, but he still bought the item.

Following the instructions, he placed one end of the rope onto the living thing laying on the ground.

After they were connected, Hu He made a short-distance phone call.

“Hey, hey, hey, younger brother, can you hear me?”

# Chapter 250 - Our Big Brother

## Chapter 250: Our Big Brother

After a few tries, Hu He noticed that the living thing on the ground had no reaction whatsoever.

Hu He became exasperated as he had not expected the shop to sell counterfeit and shoddy products. Especially since it had included a developer in its description. This was a deception gone too far. How could they produce counterfeits, this really is so unprofessional.

Sensing Hu He's thoughts, Bei Li promptly gazed at him, making Hu He shiver unconsciously.

Just as Hu He was sure that there was no way for them to communicate, a stutter suddenly resounded through his mind.

“Wh-who are y-you... wh-where are y-you? L-let m-me out! I-I-I'll do a-anything you a-ask!”

The reply was sudden and out of nowhere, so it left Hu He momentarily stunned and strangely excited.

“Hey younger brother, can you tell me who you are?”

“I'm...”

As Hu He waited for the rest of his reply, the fellow suddenly stopped talking.

“Who on earth are you!?” Hu He asked agitatedly.

“I... I c-can't remember anymore!”

His reply sent Hu He into a daze.



“Err-I-I... th-think I c-could be th-the Vengeful G-Ghost King,” the voice said shakily.

This made Hu He even more speechless.

However, the fact that this fellow still had a breath of life in him did not escape Hu He’s notice. An extremely daring idea popped up in his mind.

At that moment, Fenshui the Ghost King was still out there. In his current state, he definitely lacked the strength to make an escape on his own. However, if he had this Ghost King with him, he might stand a chance.

The thought occurred to Hu He, that an extra person meant extra strength, so he might as well find more people to help him.

However, with his present finances, he did not have enough soul coins to use, so he would need funds from the outside.

Hu He then opened his Friends List and scrolled to the biggest sponsor he had right now – Jason.

After opening the chat, Hu He explained the current situation that he was in and expressed his desire for some monetary support in the form of soul coins.

Hu He’s contributions to the development of the European server were undoubtedly tremendous. Thus, without hesitating, Jason transferred another 20,000 soul coins to him.

Hu He was touched. Finally, he felt like a decent person as he had someone who valued him greatly now.

With an extra 20,000 soul coins, Hu He was invigorated with a renewed sense of confidence.

After taking the Soul Interaction Rope with him, he began to look for the Sealing Wall inside this room and purchased another Anti-Seal Canceler to break it down.

After spending three hours, Hu He had managed to break the seal around ten rooms. Apart from two empty ones, he had come across a total of 13 beings with unknown strength and capabilities.

As he could not see clearly in there, there was no way for him to use his analyzing ability. Moreover, their abilities were sealed and could not be used, so Hu He was unable to determine their true strength.

Nonetheless, Hu He remained in high spirits, as now the overall strength of his party had increased.

However, there was still one matter that troubled Hu He.

None of them could remember their own names – four claimed to be the Vengeful Ghost King while three earnestly acknowledged their identity as the Vacuum Ghost General. There was even one that said his name was Cangxu and claimed to be at the rank of His Excellency.

This gave Hu He a strong notion that he had saved a bunch of fools.

Be that as it may, since he wanted to escape, he still needed to depend on the strength of these people.

After breaking through a few more seal walls, Hu He brought them all to his original room. One by one, he let them hold onto the Soul Interaction Rope before beginning to communicate.

The conversation that followed after was extremely emotionally-taxing for Hu He as each one of them stuttered to no end and seemed to be half-dead.

As a result of the protection of dark strength here, even though they didn't die per se, they were teetering on the edge of death. They were lost in the eternal ebb and flow of time, hence their knowledge and awareness of the outside world had become very vague.

Regardless of how much of a hassle the interactions were, they still needed to take place. Hu He began to explain to them the reason why he had dug

them out. At the same time, he also told them to hold on a bit longer as they would be able to leave here promptly.

Hu He did not forget to share a very key piece of information with them – he hoped that once they escaped, they could give Fenshui the Ghost King a good beating.

After all, Hu He still had not let go of his vengeance from being slapped by him.

After explaining the intricacies of it all numerous times and feeling 20 of them nod in agreement, Hu He heaved a sigh of relief.

He then laid on the floor and opened the forum, scrolling through spam posts as well as watching livestreams.

Ah, the wifi we players have is just wonderful. If it weren't for this heavy burden on my shoulders, I would be able to live in this so-called Infinite Darkness for a year.

Presently, Hu He was having a whale of a time, completely forgetting his previous state of despair.

Seconds and minutes slowly passed by.

The other beings he found were able to regain some consciousness after their communication. They were no longer as wooden as before and had also begun to remember some things.

This pleased Hu He greatly. As he was watching the livestreams, he would casually insert a response into the conversation, acting like the big brother of the group.

...

In the outside world, Fenshui the Ghost King was quite agitated.

These ten hours of boring, uneventful waiting had chipped away at his patience.

However, since he promised 10,000 years, it had to be so. He needed Hu He to realize what true terror was and what being helpless felt like.

Once he felt that the time had come, Fenshui opened the seal of the Infinite Darkness with bated breath, before stretching his hand down to get Hu He.

However, he was dumbfounded with what followed after.

Numerous silhouettes began to emerge from below.

There were more than 20 silhouettes, including Hu He.

Their faces were expressionless. When they came into contact with sunlight, they instinctively shielded their eyes, as though deeply unused to it.

All around, a sudden soul energy thunderstorm began to brew. Large amounts of soul energy began to accumulate and flow into these living things that had just escaped the darkness.

After glancing at Hu He who was smiling proudly at him and the numerous figures standing around him, Fenshui's heart skipped a beat.

To his utter horror, Fenshui realized that he recognized most of these people.

He had put some of them there under Cangxu's orders long ago.

He had no idea how Hu He was able to accomplish this. All forms of energy were useless in the Infinite Darkness. Besides, he was sure that Hu He did not hide any tools with him. Nevertheless, now he knew one thing. This was a complete disaster, and something apocalyptic was about to happen.

These beings that were thrown into the Infinite Darkness had immense power and would not bow down to anyone.

Now that they had all been released, the entire Land of Cangxu would probably be thrown into pandemonium.

With the soul energy continuously flowing into their bodies, the numb souls began to heal and regain their memories.

It would be hard for them to return to their optimal form in this short time, but they could already make out what had happened to themselves.

“Brothers! Let’s beat him up!” Hu He loftily pointed at Fenshui and shouted.

Hearing this, Fenshui the Ghost King immediately flapped his wings, trying to escape.

With a glimpse, he had noticed there were at least eight other Ghost Kings. Even though they hadn’t fully recuperated yet, if a real fight were to break out, he would not be able to hold out for long.

However, as soon as he swooped up into the sky, numerous shadows streaked toward him and pressed him back onto the ground.

In fact, something had escaped Hu He’s knowledge.

In the Infinite Darkness, the appearance of Hu He had left an indelible mark on all of their hearts.

Perhaps for Hu He, it had merely been a few hours, but for them, they had spent eons in the harrowing darkness. Moreover, in that short period of time, Hu He had fulfilled the role as their big brother. He brought them light and hope, as well as preventing them from falling into the abyss of eternal oblivion.

After regaining their consciousness, these maliciously evil beings were unconsciously filled with respect and adoration for Hu He.

# Chapter 251 - The Blood Sacrifice War Dance (Part 1)

In the eyes of these prisoners, Hu He was the one they could rely on in the Infinite Darkness. At this moment, even though their sanity was not completely restored, they executed Hu He's command without a second thought.

“Scram!” the terrified Fenshui fluttered his wings frantically, wanting to get rid of the prisoners that were clinging onto him.

There were a total of 23 beings, each and every one of them were at an elite level and had left a glorious record in the history of Cangxu.

Even Fenshui the Ghost King couldn't resist their concerted attack. Bit by bit, he was being pulled down from the air and finally, they managed to press him to the ground.

Looking at Fenshui, who was struggling on the ground, Hu He couldn't help but let out a maniacal laugh.

This time, he finally had the upper hand.

“His Majesty will never let you go!” Fenshui growled in rage while looking at Hu He.

Meanwhile, the players who had witnessed the scene were busy discussing it on the live streaming channel. They began to give suggestions on different ways to deal with Fenshui the Ghost King.

Watermelon\_Taro: “Great Demon King, kill him! You will be filthy rich if you kill him as this guy is very valuable. Besides, you'll get to level up. (laughing emoji)”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “No, I think you should lock him up for a thousand years so that he will have a taste of despair and fear! (laughing emoji)”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “A real man is sure to take revenge. I remember you saying that you wanted to strip his feathers. (laughing emoji)”

Roast\_Jade\_Hare\_With\_Chang’e\_In\_The\_Arms: “Slurp... this Ghost King must be delicious... (eager eyes. jpg)”

Peppa\_Boar: “It’s a successful counterattack. The Great Demon King has returned! (laughing emoji)”

...

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

Hu He felt that the suggestions given by the players were very reasonable.

After considering their suggestions, he reached his hand out and pointed at Fenshui, “Strip his feathers and throw him into the Infinite Darkness. I’m going to kill him after keeping him there for a thousand years!”

Upon hearing this, a fierce light flashed in the eyes of the expressionless prisoners. They then held Fenshui down and began to ferociously pluck his feathers.

As the feathers on his body were being forcefully removed, Fenshui the Ghost King started to howl in grief. His eyes were staring at Hu He and anger was raging in his heart, but he could only accept his situation in resignation.

With the help of the prisoners, Hu He was no longer a person whose life and death could be easily controlled.

After some time, the desperate Fenshui turned into a naked bird and was thrown into the Infinite Darkness by the prisoners.

He was going to repay him in the exact same way he was treated. Hu He’s heart was overwhelmed with the thrill of revenge.

He felt like he was approaching the peak of his life as he now owned a gang of powerful thugs.

Thinking of Hiderigami who was still in his channel, Hu He could not help but mock, “Fuck Hiderigami!”

Fenshui the Ghost King was pulled out of the Infinite Darkness after an hour.

At that moment, his gaze was dull and glassy. His face was covered with the scars of the vicissitudes of life. His eyes were filled with a great fear of darkness.

After reading the comments in the live streaming channel, Hu He asked the question which every player was curious about, “Come, tell me... how do you feel?”

Thump! Fenshui the Ghost King got on his knees in horror, “No... I’m not going in again!”

“It seems like you haven’t stayed in there long enough to realize what it feels like!” Hu He repeated Fenshui’s words to him and waved his hand at the prisoners.

Once again, Fenshui the Ghost King was flung into the Infinite Darkness.

Having looked at the comments of the players, Hu He broke into a grin. The plot had shifted and the current Fenshui was nothing like the previous one.

However, compared to him, he would have a bad time since there was no wifi for him in there!

...

Hu He felt that it was about time and was going to signal the prisoners to haul Fenshui out again.

This time, he was not going to fool around with him. He planned to kill him and forge his corpse into a zombie spirit.



Suddenly, an intimidating pressure emerged above their heads. The prisoners surrounding Hu He unconsciously tightened their body and instinctively took a fighting stance.

“It’s unbelievable. How did you do this? I’m gaining interest in you, Seal Breaker!”

As the voice fell, a silhouette abled over from afar. With each step, the figure strode forward like a phantom and in a flash appeared near Hu He.

“I think highly of you. Are you interested in working for me?” exclaimed Yuanxu with a bright smile. He did not even mention Fenshui the Ghost King who had served him faithfully.

“Yuanxu, I will return Fenshui the Ghost King to you. Let us go!” Hu He said, a little nervously.

Although he was not afraid of dying, these 23 prisoners did not have the same resurrection ability as him. Hu He could not bear to leave them as they were, like children who had just opened their minds and were emotionally attached to him.

“I’m not up to any negotiation. I just want to know whether you are willing to pledge loyalty to me!”

Looking at the prisoners surrounding him, an idea emerged in Hu He’s mind, “Okay! You have my word!”

Apparently, Hu He was not really willing to serve Yuanxu. He pretended to be loyal, so that he could calm Yuanxu and then look for an opportunity to flee with the prisoners.

Yuanxu did not answer upon hearing this. Instead, he just stared at Hu He as the purple mist in his eyes swiveled.

“Forget it! You’re lying to me!” Yuanxu waved his long sleeves and a menacing purple vortex formed in his hands.

The prisoners surrounding Hu He saw this and immediately took a step forward. Then, they collectively launched forward, forming a defensive wall.

Even though they had lost most of their consciousness, they were still deeply afraid of Yuanxu. Thus, they did not launch an attack on him but unconsciously turned defensive instead.

“In this case, I can only search your soul in order to understand your secret!” roared Yuanxu, as the purple vortex in his hand abruptly expanded.

Violent winds swept across them and a huge suction force began to stir. Objects like wood and gravel were drawn into the purple vortex and instantly disappeared.

The energy wall in front of Hu He was also starting to ripple. Rays of energy mist were being drawn out and poured into the purple vortex.

As Yuanxu pushed out the vortex in his hands, the energy wall began to shake violently, as if it was going to break at any time.

Yuanxu remained indifferent as he eyed the 23 prisoners, who were struggling to withstand the attack.

Although the prisoners were powerful, they had not regained the combat power in their heyday. There was still an irreparable gap between them.

Even with their joint effort, the prisoners still struggled to resist.

Under the constant soul energy extraction, some of them could no longer bear it. Their skin began to turn grayish-brown due to the depletion of soul energy.

However, none of them chose to retreat or run away as Hu He was standing behind them!

“Run! Don’t worry about me... I won’t die!” growled Hu He as his heart shuddered.

Although their friendship was merely a short one, their sincerity had moved Hu He. Thus, he couldn't bear to see them sacrifice their lives for him.

Splat! All the prisoners coughed up blood at the same time. The blood oozed out, turning into blood beads in the air and flying into the purple vortex.

Their bodies were trembling under the great pressure of Yuanxu's power.

They also seemed to have reached their limit. Their dull eyes were bloodshot, but they were still gritting their teeth, fighting to hold on.

At this moment, they recalled their days in the Infinite Darkness and there was only one thought in their mind, which was to protect their big brother to the last second. They would never allow him to be harmed.

They did not step back even though their bodies were tottering due to the overwhelming attack.

“Run! You bunch of idiots... I've told you that I won't die!” Hu He looked at them and yelled.

Upon hearing Hu He's cry, they turned their pale face around and a silly smile appeared on their dull faces.

Pure and naive, the clear attachment in their eyes made Hu He's heart tremble.

The leading prisoner suddenly let out a deafening roar! With that thunderous howl, the clothes on his body were torn, revealing the upper body of a muscular Horned Dragon.

# Chapter 252 - The Blood Sacrifice War Dance (Part 2)

With a swift movement of his arms, blue veins and a layer of red energy appeared on the surface of his body.

“Ha!” another person started waving his arms after this dragon’s movement.

One after another, they suddenly gave up on their defenses. They let the purple energy sweep away everything, and they began to dance to the movement and rhythm of the Horned Dragon.

Yuanxu’s pupils immediately constricted upon seeing this as he couldn’t help but exclaim in surprise, “The Blood Sacrifice War Dance!”

“Hoo! Ah!”

23 people stomped their feet at the same time and slammed their right arms on their chest, as a shroud of red energy immediately wrapped around their bodies.

Yuanxu’s expression stiffened at the scene that unfolded before him.

The Blood Sacrifice War Dance was a kind of oath dance that the ancient ancestors performed before going to the battlefield. It could be traced back to the oldest tribal era. When the war dance began, it meant that the warriors were preparing to give up their lives for their tribe and fight till their last breath!

They would burn their spirits like brave warriors who were determined to slit their wrists and sacrifice everything in exchange for a short period of tremendous strength.

As they danced, blood and sweat flowed down their bodies, while the red energy grew increasingly stronger.

“Hoo! Ah!” they slammed on their chest again as their eyes gradually turned red.

“Even so, I’m not someone you can compete with!” Yuanxu roared and the purple vortex abruptly expanded.

“Hoo! Ah!”

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

Their bodies were burning and they were reaching their limits. Yet, the red energy of the 23 people managed to resist Yuanxu’s attack and was continuously advancing.

At that moment, Hu He was completely dumbfounded.

He saw the Analysis Menu of the Horned Dragon and the others, as well as the self-sacrifice prompt in the status bar.

Are they sacrificing their lives for me?

Not only Hu He, but even the players in the exuberant live streaming channel had turned off the comments screen and were staring at the screen with their whole hearts trembling.

“Run! Stop sacrificing yourselves. Don’t do this. You guys asked me to be your big brother, how can you guys disobey me? I ask you guys to leave... I will abandon you guys if you refuse to obey!” shouted Hu He hysterically.

At this moment, he desperately hoped that these fools would listen to his words and instantly leave. The further they went away, the better it would be.

However, they all ignored his words, as they simply continued dancing. Their lives were being drained with the flow of their sweat and blood.

Boom!

The area of the energy collision suddenly exploded, sending Yuanxu flying far away.

However, the Horned Dragon and the others immediately came to Hu He and formed a human wall with their bodies in front of him, protecting him from the incoming shockwaves.

“Listen to me, please listen to me... I beg you guys, stop risking your lives for me!” Hu He looked at them with a pleading look.

They didn't say a single word. They merely stared at Hu He with a silly smile.

Yuanxu, who was being blown off, rose from the ground and suddenly roared, “Go to hell!” Then, he promptly dashed toward Hu He.

“Hoo! Ah!”

The war dance started again. At that moment, they were like ancient warriors who were guarding their tribe, burning their lives with their great fighting spirit. They were never stepping back.

Their fighting spirits were flaming while the angry Yuanxu was thrust back, again and again. He even spat a mouthful of blood, but the defensive wall of flesh and blood was still unbreakable.

Thus, this bizarre turn of events made Yuanxu completely mad. He couldn't accept his failure because it reminded him of a man who pulled him down from the throne.

“Argh! All of you, go to hell!”

As his long grey hair fluttered in the air, Yuanxu could no longer hold himself back. He exhausted all the soul energy in his body and formed a purple thunder-filled light orb between his hands that was rapidly expanding.

Even though they felt an immense pressure, 23 of them remained calm and indifferent in the face of the storm. Instead, the red flames on their bodies

burned more vigorously.

Their bodies turned brittle and dry from the surging flames but at this moment, all of them growled loudly.

When they faced Yuanxu's last blow, they chose to burn all their remaining vitality in order to protect their big brother, who had accompanied them in the Infinite Darkness. Even in their final breath, they wished to fight for him for one last time.

As the purple orb of destruction struck, circles of energy waves set off countless ripples and turned into a slashing gale.

At this moment, all 23 of them who had been completely wasted, voluntarily leaped in the path of his attack.

Perplexingly, there was no burst of shockwaves when the two sides collided.

After an endless sizzling sound, the purple orb of destruction gradually melted away.

Yuanxu was absolutely shocked at the sight of it.

They were using their last sacrificial power to dissolve the orb of destruction instead of colliding with it.

Is it all for him? Yuanxu turned his head and looked at Hu He with a complex expression on his face.

In the battle against the purple energy orb, charred bodies fell from the sky, one by one, as the purple light orb gradually shrank.

Hu He bit his lips bitterly, as tears ran down his cheeks. He could no longer hold them back.

When the last body fell to the ground, the atmosphere was plunged into a sepulchral silence. All the energy had been dissolved by them, causing the

cataclysmic shockwaves to weaken so significantly that Hu He could only feel a light breeze.

At that moment, Hu He seemed to be able to visualize those crazy fools drifting past him, with a silly smile on their faces, as if they were waving goodbye to him.

“Goodbye... big brother!”

“Argh, who are you to kill them! Fuck your mother, fuck your ancestors!”

Hu He combusted with frenzied rage and dashed crazily toward Yuanxu, who was already staggering.

There was only one thought in his mind.

Kill him! Kill him!

Smack! Yuanxu gave Hu He a slap, which sent him flying, as a sneer appeared on his frail face.

“There’s no reason. All enemies deserve to die! It’s just that I didn’t expect them to use the Blood Sacrifice War Dance to fight for you. I’m shocked but isn’t it pitiful? After all that wasted effort, the ending still couldn’t be changed!”

Hu He’s eyes were filled with fury as he slowly got up from the ground. He then wiped off the blood from the corner of his mouth and stared at Yuanxu with resentment.

On the other hand, Yuanxu broke into a grin. After all, he was still the winner even though the process was a little unexpected.

Hu He suddenly turned around and went to his new friends’ charred bodies. He then solemnly brought them into his inventory under Yuanxu’s puzzling gaze.

After putting away the 23 bodies, Hu He slowly turned and fixed his gaze on Yuanxu, as if he wanted his face to be deeply engraved in his mind.



“I, hereby swear to my 23 brothers, that one day, I will take Yuanxu’s deplorable life!” Hu He announced, as he took out a dagger from the inventory.

“Yuanxu, I will wait for that day to arrive. At that time, I will make you cripple with fear. This is my oath to my brothers!”

After finishing his sentence, Hu He abruptly stabbed himself in the neck with a dagger as Yuanxu watched in disbelief.

Even if he was going to die, he would never die at the hands of Yuanxu.

The picture in his eyes gradually dimmed and everything became blurry.

He once thought that he was merely an ordinary player with a different sort of joy compared to other players. However, he felt a real weight on his shoulders now.

From today onward, he would be shouldering the vendetta of his 23 brothers.

He desperately wanted to become stronger because he finally understood the importance of strength in this world, where the strong ruled over the weak.

True or false, nothing mattered any longer. In Hu He’s heart, 23 of them were his eternal brothers!

When the picture completely darkened, Hu He seemed to have seen the pure smile on their faces again.

He had also seen the 23 bodies roaring and dancing, using the ancient warriors’ war dance to boost their physical limit in order to protect him.

He slowly closed his eyes, as mournful tears rolled down his cheeks again.

# Chapter 253 - Let'S Slaughter Him Ferociously (Part 1)

## Chapter 253: Let's Slaughter Him Ferociously (Part 1)

The gaming pod opened slowly, but Hu He didn't get out. His eyes remained closed as he laid there silently.

He was the one who broke them out of their seals and he was the one who brought them with him out of the Infinite Darkness.

If it were not for him, none of this would have happened.

In the beginning, Hu He wanted to use these 23 people for his own advantage. At that time, he did not have any psychological burden.

However, those people swore loyalty to him with their own flesh and blood. They even used their lives to protect his safety in the end.

This was undoubtedly a tremendous astonishment to him.

As his fists tightened gradually, his body trembled due to the tension in his muscles.

He had always seen himself as very optimistic and maybe a little cowardly sometimes. However, Hu He could not be more infuriated at this moment.

Yuanxu's sneer and indifference appeared in Hu He's mind as he screamed silently. He was burning with the desire to tear Yuanxu apart.

After a moment of venting, Hu He slowly opened his eyes.

“My 23 brothers, you will never disappear. I will walk with you in the future, and carry the burden of avenging you. This is the first vow I've made as a cowardly man!”

At that very moment, Hu He had planned everything in his mind already. He would forge his 23 brothers into zombie spirits, and bring them along with him everywhere to exact their revenge.

...

Yuanxu had a mixed expression as he saw Hu He vanish into thin air.

This turn of events had gone beyond his expectations.

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

In the beginning, he only wanted to subdue Hu He, who had immeasurable potential. He did not expect things to end this way.

However, there was no sympathy in Yuanxu's heart.

Although he was surprised at the 23 beings' fearless loyalty, they were merely his enemies. He would not have any sympathy for his enemies' deaths, as he had already come a long way. If he was merciful, he would have already been dead in the process of becoming king.

“Ahem!”

He marched into the old palace that had already been destroyed and came to the opening of the seal that was pitch-black. As Yuanxu reached down, Fenshui the Ghost King's figure suddenly emerged.

Splash! The moment he appeared, Fenshui fell to his knee. His eyes were out of focus as he bowed, and his mouth continuously muttered, “No... no...”

At the sight of the flustered Fenshui, Yuanxu merely shook his head, “Come to me after you've recovered!”

After saying this, his figure dissipated into a phantom and drifted toward the Spectral Dragon Tomb.

...

In the bleak scenes between the livestreams, the players were no longer lively or noisy. Everyone was weighed down by the heaviness in their hearts.

The 23 figures shocked Hu He and everyone on the livestream.

The war dance and roars of loyalty were still vivid in their minds.

This moving scene reminded them of their old friends.

Lu Mo, Fatty Chef, Instructor Qu Feng...

It was a real world because their existence was real in the hearts of the players.

At that moment, the players were truly fuming.

The players yelled in the chat, claiming they wanted to fight and slaughter Yuanxu.

They entered the game one after another and began to assemble at the Hidden Dragon Village. Fortitude and determination were on every single face.

In fact, they knew clearly that their forces were not yet equal to the army of Yuanxu, but it didn't matter. All they wanted was to vent and fight hysterically.

At this moment, Lu Wu unlocked his expedition mission again. The Beiqi Army that was ready to be launched instantly swarmed in.

Both servers put their estrangement aside and joined forces to fight for those 23 people.

They were players, but they were humans, too. Hence, they placed great emphasis on their relationships.

The 23 warriors had not only sacrificed for Hu He, but also for them. Even if they were defeated in this battle, they vowed to annihilate and terrorize

their enemy.

The constant siren that was calling for assembly had alarmed the Evil King. He immediately drifted into the air and flew over to the Hidden Dragon Village.

To his surprise, millions of players were there and preparing for an all-out battle.

“Are you all insane? What are you trying to do!” the Evil King landed next to Li Xing.

“Don’t stop us if you don’t want to be our enemy!” Li Xing said indifferently.

“You...” the Evil King had no idea what made the entire Player Clan enter battle mode. No doubt, he did not want to lose such powerful subordinates.

As he scanned his surroundings, the Evil King, who was about to rebuke them, fell into silence as he saw each of their solemn faces.

He was an embodiment of evil thoughts, hence he could clearly feel the fury in the players’ hearts. The fury had condensed into a fiery cloud above the Hidden Dragon Village, continuously soaring and spreading.

The Evil King fell silent. He knew that he couldn’t prevent this battle from happening.

“I won’t help you!” the Evil King said as he stared at Li Xing.

“We don’t need it!”

As soon as he had finished his sentence, Li Xing brandished his sword in the air, “My brothers, let us bid farewell to our 23 warriors! Our 23 brothers... with this battle!”

“This battle shall not end until our very last breath!”

The players roared as their chests burned with a rage that needed to be vented desperately.

“Let’s set out!”

Roar!

The army of players set off from the Hidden Dragon Village as they marched toward the Spectral Dragon Tomb.

The Evil King had mixed expressions as he gazed at the departing battalions.

...

The army advanced as their battle flags fluttered in the wind.

Due to the approaching of the large army, the Demonic Sword Wolf and Zelotes the Ghost King noticed it immediately. They sent their subordinates to the Spectral Dragon Tomb and began to prepare their army for war.

When the vast army of players stepped onto the border of the Demonic Domain, the army of the two Ghost Kings was already assembled in the distance.

“The Evil King wanted to die. Do you want to die as well? If you start the war, you’ll lose for sure!” Zelotes the Ghost King roared at the army of players as he looked at them from a distance, his voice echoing across the land in deafening waves.

Li Xing did not answer, but merely raised the sword in his hand, “Kill! Vent your anger, and offer the enemy’s blood as a sacrifice to the warriors who had passed on!”

Roar!

The players began to run and charge.

The threat of Zelotes the Ghost King was nothing to them!

Facing the army of players who were charging in, the Demonic Sword Wolf and Zelotes the Ghost King suddenly shivered in fear.

This battle was not what they wanted, but they could only grit their teeth and brave it.

“Defend!”

With the roar of Zelotes the Ghost King, the Demonic Army immediately stationed in place and formed a defensive shield, as they waited solemnly for the impending attack.

Boom!

The army of players crashed right into it and advanced frantically.

The defensive shield shook intensely from the players’ impact. The demonized people on the front row resisted the impact with all their might to keep the formation in place.

However, the players’ madness was far beyond their imagination.

They stepped on their comrades’ shoulders and leaped into the demonized people army, without a drop of fear in their hearts, even though they knew they would be swiftly surrounded and slain.

In this battle, they didn’t need techniques or formations. The fury in their hearts was the sharpest spear, piercing through the defense that seemed to be unbreakable, as they pushed on.

Under the frenzied attack, the demonized people’s defensive line collapsed immediately. The two Ghost Kings facial expressions instantly darkened.

Then, they shot up and pounced on the army of players.

The Ghost Kings were indeed very powerful. Their presence had caused a huge number of deaths and injuries to the players in the front row.

However, there was nothing to fear.

Kill! Turn the world upside down! No matter if it was a Ghost King or Yuanxu, everyone in our path should be killed!



# Chapter 254 - Let'S Slaughter Him Ferociously (Part 2)

Chapter 254: Let's Slaughter Him Ferociously (Part 2)

The horrifying lethality caused by the army of players broiling with murderous intent immensely shocked the two Ghost Kings.

The mentality of the two sides differed greatly, as their side was fighting for Yuanxu. They were forced to do so and they had to persevere.

On the other side, the players were fighting for themselves, their brothers, and their friends. This battle was to avenge their unjust deaths.

As the two Ghost Kings were cornered in the battle, they quickly began to struggle.

They didn't understand why the players were so determined. Is it worth it? This was the question that the two Ghost Kings could not comprehend.

They had experienced countless battles, and came to understand the truth – the stronger side on the battlefield would undoubtedly be the weaker side's graveyard. Any smart soldier would not dare to approach it.

However, the players were completely different from what they had imagined. Everyone seemed to be an ant who wanted to devour an elephant. Mindlessly, they were all diving in fearlessly to attack the Ghost Kings.

Under the relentless attack, the two Ghost Kings retreated after holding out for about ten minutes. They swiftly hid as they caught their breaths behind their army.

At this moment, a hint of fear emerged in their hearts.

What they were afraid of was not the power of the players, but the fearless energy burning in the players' hearts.

Even the two Ghost Kings couldn't help but admit that they were real warriors.

After all, the players' army was fighting with their own lives.

It was as if they had given up on returning at the very moment they entered the battle.

This was their assumption, but the players were proving it with their actions. Thus, the two Ghost Kings couldn't help but be filled with fear and trepidation.

Indeed, they were truly afraid.

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

...

From a distance, the Evil King had a mixed expression as he looked at the battlefield.

In his sight, an illusory burning cloud was stirring above the players and he could also see the players' fearless fighting spirit.

Do they really want to be killed?

At this moment, he suddenly remembered Li Xing's unwavering words. My clan is powerful. We're not afraid of death!

This used to be a joke to him, but the players have proved it now with this battle.

The entire clan was strong, and not afraid of sacrificing their lives. It was a sacrificial army that was made up of 10 million fearless warriors.

Even the Evil King was profoundly taken aback by the players' fiery spirits.

He was an embodiment of evil thoughts. Although he had consciousness and emotions, he couldn't understand what the players were fighting for.

Am I an evil thought that can never understand the meaning of life? The Evil King was rather perplexed.

...

Meanwhile, all the players were slaughtering the enemy army mercilessly and endlessly.

Their roaring cries greatly frightened the Army of the Demonic Domain.

Soon, the idea of fleeing came to the mind of every soldier of the Demonic Domain. Their remaining will to fight was like a weak flame in the storm. They were constantly under the great risk of being extinguished at any time by the army of players, who were advancing like a raging storm.

“No one is allowed to flee! Our support is coming, hang in there!”

“Those who retreat will be executed!”

The two Ghost Kings howled with all their might to stabilize their army's low morale.

However, everything was in vain in the face of the army of players. The morale of the army had shattered already, and their motivation to fight had long been extinguished.

Their failure was becoming imminent, faster than a spreading wildfire, forcing them to step back in fear.

In this situation, the two Ghost Kings leaped into the army of players again to block them from advancing.

“Who cares if you're the Ghost King! I'm going to kill you!”

“This battle shall not cease until our very last breath! Kill!”

“Those who have hurt my brothers and friends, I’ll kill you no matter where you are!”

“Kill! Kill! Kill!”

...

The infuriated roars of the players echoed in all directions.

This battle was to comfort the spirits in heaven and also to vent the anger in their hearts.

The player’s slaughtering continued, as the Army of the Demonic Domain remained on the losing end. There were already soldiers who were fleeing. Their fear could not be stopped no matter how or what the Ghost Kings commanded.

After they clenched their teeth in persistence, the two Ghost Kings could no longer withstand the attack. Thus, they hastily began to retreat with their army.

The fury in the players’ hearts had not been extinguished, so they continued to charge forward forcefully.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The military drums rolled, and a huge army emerged from the sky and the ground.

The army of Yuanxu had now arrived.

The appearance of support was a pleasant surprise for the two Ghost Kings. Hence, they began to command the army to launch a counterattack.

However, the players’ expressions did not change one iota.

From the moment the war began, no one had the expectation to return alive. To the players, this battle had only just begun.

The combined army of the eight Ghost Kings and about a dozen Ghost Generals had been formed.

Yuanxu Army's strength was on full display at this moment.

As the battle continued into the fourth hour, the battlefield was swiftly filled with countless corpses. Nearly, a third of the players' army was already wiped out.

However, it didn't matter. Being fearless and passionate was the source of their best weapon and power. As long as we're alive, we will fight! Fight! Fight!

Despite the great advantage, the hearts of every commander in the Yuanxu Army were trembling.

"Do you want to be annihilated?" one of the Ghost King asked with a quivering voice.

As soon as this remark was voiced out, all the Ghost Kings fell silent.

Hoo! Ah!

In the army's live chat channel, the players shouted the war chant and roars that were made before the warriors had died.

"Beiqi Army, fight with me! As long as our heart is warm with blood, this battle shall not cease!"

"Xian Xu Army, fight with me! Let us use our flesh and blood in exchange for the destruction of our enemy!"

...

Li Xing and Liu Chai shouted the oath of battle in the army's live chat simultaneously. This greatly motivated the players, injecting them with a fiery determination.

Countless corpses adorned the field, as their blood flew endlessly. This was their blood sacrifice.

The 23 warriors had guarded Hu He with their blood and with the Blood Sacrifice War Dance, so they would now use the enemy's blood to reciprocate this sentiment.

At this time, a figure suddenly appeared in the sky.

When he lowered his head to look at the players beneath him, his eyes were full of consternation.

With the piles of corpses in the background, the sound of war was like an eerie requiem, sending shivers down everyone's spine.

Yuanxu was touched indeed. He admitted that the players, who were fighting vigorously beneath him, were respectable warriors.

However, they were still his enemy. Since they took the initiative to attack, Yuanxu would not have the slightest sympathy. The thirst to kill shone brightly in his eyes.

In a flash, his figure dove at the army of players like a falling comet.

“Yuanxu, you thief! If you're so heartless. I'll offer your life as a sacrifice to my 23 warriors!”

“Kill!”

The wind roared as all the players looked at Yuanxu who was falling from the sky. The weapons in their hands were thrust high and their spirit of battle stirred furiously like the clouds in the sky.

Roar!

The players cried in unison as they waited for Yuanxu's descent.

They were fearless and only hoped that their power could leave a scar on Yuanxu's body.

As Yuanxu was about to collide with the army of players, a trace of darkness appeared out of the blue. It blocked Yuanxu's attack firmly and pushed him forcefully away.

When the dark fog dispersed, the figure of the Evil King stood in the air.

"From now onward, your opponent is me!" the Evil King said indifferently as he looked at Yuanxu who was flying backward.

At the sight of the Evil King, Yuanxu's expression turned sour.

"You said you wouldn't come!" Li Xing lifted his head and said.

After hearing this, the Evil King turned his head and sneered, "Hahaha, you are my warriors. From this moment onward, I have officially acknowledged you! So, I'm going to stop Yuanxu in this battle!"

After saying this, the Evil King turned his head around and let out a deafening howl. His body turned into a huge giant and he instantly lunged at Yuanxu.

Roar!

Yuanxu had now met his match. The players changed their direction again to charge at the enemies that were swarming in from all directions.

# Chapter 255 - A Failed Victory

## Chapter 255: A Failed Victory

Although Yuanxu had great strength, he was still injured from the previous battle with the 23 martyrs. He could only passively defend himself as he continued to be oppressed by the Evil King at close range. Thus, he was unable to support the Yuanxu Army below.

Concurrently, the players were united and pressing forward with an indomitable will.

Tonight, we fight side by side as brothers.

Tonight, we stare death straight in the eye.

Tonight, we cower not from the bloodbath of battles.

Tonight's battle, we fight! Not for victory but to vent out the wrath in our hearts.

Surrounded by enemies, the beating of the battle drums and the roaring cries of the enemies rattled the players' eardrums.

They turned around and drew their weapons out again. Then, they all roared uniformly and stepped forward at the same time.

Boom!

The ground was quaking.

“Kill!”

Accompanied by the outcry, the players fearlessly charged forward.

The enemies' blood was the best offering for the fallen warriors.



In that instant, they had already forgotten that they were merely just random gamers and were thoroughly immersed in this battle.

The smell of blood lingered at the tip of their noses. The so-called cruelty of the battlefield belonged to the enemy, whereas the players only had a burning fighting spirit.

Visit our comic site [Webnovel.live](http://Webnovel.live)

In the face of his subordinates who were perishing in droves, Yuanxu attempted to go down to support them several times. However, the Evil King constantly stopped his endeavors. Hence, he could only resist continuously and could not support them at all.

Tilting his head and glancing at the players below who were eager to fight, the Evil King suddenly smirked, “Dying in a battle is glorious? What a scary race!”

“Evil King, you will regret becoming my enemy!” Yuanxu roared.

The Evil King did not utter a word. His figure flitted closer, and he suddenly slammed his palm downward with a loud bang. Countless dragons emerged around his arms, roaring in defiance, before lashing out at Yuanxu and biting him.

Facing the relentless Evil King, Yuanxu was on the verge of an outburst.

In fact, he did not want to continue fighting the Evil King because he knew the Evil King was immortal. Even if he won, it would be useless. The most pressing matter was to help the army to minimize their losses.

He couldn't afford to lose this army, as they were the key to ensuring that he had a say in outside matters once he took control over the Land of Cangxu.

...

“They're lunatics! Lunatics!” a Ghost King could not help but scream after being beaten back again.

He had never faced this kind of opponent before and terror was seeping into his bones.

It was an obvious advantage. However, to that Ghost King, he had the misconception that the players were the attackers, whereas they were passively defending.

At this time, more than half of the legion of players had sustained casualties. However, they never stopped their pace and proceeded with determination. Their wielding blades were still sharp, reaping the lives of their enemies.

The players were not afraid of death, but their enemies were.

Those fallen figures were their well-trained soldiers and their most important force in the army. Their hearts couldn't help but tremble when they witnessed their clansman perishing one after another.

If they could, they really wanted to retreat.

They did not wish to play along with the lunatics anymore.

However, under the frenzied pursuit of the players, they even lost the right to abandon this war.

During the endless massacre, the figure of the players fell incessantly, one by one. However, they would be immediately replaced by another player that carried on the fighting spirits of their comrades, as they continued charging forward.

They had successfully turned the battlefield into a grotesque terrain, covered in the bodies of their enemies and marred by the oozing blood of demons.

As time passed, the number on the players' side steadily diminished, but they were relentless and became more fierce instead.

They were like a huge pack of hungry wolves! The soldiers of the Yuanxu Army would unconsciously cower in fear from their ravenous glare, afraid

of making any eye contact.

At the end of the war, there were only about a million players left.

This war was coming to an end, but neither Yuanxu nor the Ghost Kings below felt that they had won.

In terms of mentality and grandeur, they were the true losers.

Suddenly, it started to rain. As the blood-red cloudburst fell heavily down, the atmosphere of the battlefield became more solemn.

“Hahaha! They are actually afraid, they are actually afraid!”

Seeing that the Yuanxu Army, that had besieged the millions of players, terrified of advancing, the Evil King above could not help but to let out a deafening laugh.

He was completely at ease. After all, the players had proved their worth to him through this war and won his respect.

Although the force called the Player Clan would soon be wiped out, the Evil King committed them to his memory.

They had ignited a fire within him.

The fiery sensation was wonderful, he had never had this strange feeling in his life.

It was so ardent, so exciting, so satisfying!

“Charge!”

Seeing that the Yuanxu Army was too terrified to make a move, all the players roared thunderously in unison. They pointed their weapons to the front, brandishing their weapons at the enemies.

Then, the entire battalion began to attack again!

It almost seemed as if the ones who were being besieged were not them, but the soldiers of the Yuanxu Army. Even though they were defeated, the players' momentum had completely overwhelmed these battle-hardened veterans.

As the saying went, soldiers should only think about sacrificing themselves on the battlefield, there was no need to ponder about delivering their bodies back to their hometown.

As the gloomy clouds in the murky sky drifted dangerously close to the earth, the bloody rain blanketed the entire landscape in a scarlet hue.

When the last player perished, the tensed Yuanxu Army could finally relax. All of them instantly collapsed and sat on the ground weakly, panting heavily from the traumatic ordeal.

Although their enemies had perished, their fear remained.

It was a victory, but no one cheered. Nobody sang. They merely felt glad to have survived the battle.

When they scanned around, the ground was filled with mountains of corpses and the flowing blood had formed countless scarlet pools. The harrowing sight was too horrifying and made everyone quiver in fear.

They were scared and they were terrified. They had no courage to stand back up, as the energy in their bodies seemed to have been drained completely.

Meanwhile, all the Ghost Kings were completely paralyzed, as they stood unmovingly. Deep in their hearts, they were horror-struck like the other soldiers, too. However, they mustered all efforts to suppress the fear, unwilling to reveal it.

After the battle had ended, they suddenly felt relieved.

They died. Thank god, all of them finally died!

The legion of players had left a deep imprint in their hearts and it kept haunting them like a shadow.

“Hahaha, Yuanxu, you’ve lost. Look at them!”

Above in the sky, the Evil King pointed at the Yuanxu Army below and laughed boisterously, the sarcasm in his eyes was clearly noticeable.

Yuanxu’s expression turned pale, but that was the truth. The soldiers below had long lost their morale. Even though they won, it was no different than losing.

“This is my army!”

As he floated in the sky and glared at the Yuanxu Army below, the Evil King let out a resounding roar that shook the earth, causing the soldiers of the Yuanxu Army to shiver.

“Do you think that the battle is over? This is just the beginning, so be prepared. Next, you’ll have to face my army and I will avenge them. All of you have to die. Remember, all of you must die!”

“Hahaha, this is thrilling. I’ve never felt so thrilled in my life before!”

Everyone in the Yuanxu Army below looked up at the Evil King who was laughing hysterically in the air, their eyes filled with terror.

Isn’t it over yet? Are there more warriors like this?

Instantly, they were overwhelmed with fear. The fearless army with ten million people seemed to appear in front of them again and...

They were pointing their swords at them!

# Chapter 256 - Being Moved For Nothing

## Chapter 256: Being Moved For Nothing

The Evil King's sneer and vow injected fear into every one of the Yuanxu Army's soldiers.

In the past, they were full of confidence, as if their side would surely acquire Cangxu's sovereignty.

However, they were now questioning themselves in their hearts. If there were more fearless warriors like these in the future, could they still win?

They might have won this battle, but they had lost as well. In terms of the mentality, they were the true losers even if they had a huge physical advantage in the battle.

As they stared at the Evil King cackling madly in the sky, Yuanxu's expression turned sour once more.

This battle had a huge impact on his soldiers and it would certainly affect their mentality when both sides clashed again in the battle. Thus, this fact greatly infuriated Yuanxu.

"Yuanxu, I'm about to leave. Aren't you going to stop me?" the Evil King turned his head around and grinned, trying to provoke Yuanxu.

Yuanxu did not speak but the anger was vividly portrayed through his eyes.

If the Evil King had dared to provoke him like this during his heyday, he would have captured him and found a place to seal him in.

However, his body was heavily weakened due to the countless battles that he had engaged in. Even if he wanted to stop the Evil King now, he was

powerless in doing so.

“Then, I shall take my leave, hahaha!”

As he let out a mocking guffaw, the Evil King’s figure suddenly shrank as he turned into a stone statue and galloped southward.

This sudden war seemed to have reached its end.

“Are you trying to show off? Fine, you did it! But, I will never lose!” Yuanxu murmured to himself as he glared at the Evil King as he disappeared.

Then, he turned his head around to look at the soldiers below, who had lost their fighting spirit. There was only anger in his heart as he was forced to shout his order.

Visit our comic site [Webnovel.live](http://Webnovel.live)

“Retreat!”

...

After the great battle ended, the players were watching the video playback in the Battle Online’s official forum.

In this battle, they had achieved unprecedented progress and had also successfully cast fear in the enemies’ hearts.

Although they lost the battle, the players considered themselves victorious because the enemy had become terrified of them.

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Cool! Grateful that the officials promptly opened the expedition. Otherwise, without any place to release my anger, I’m preparing to go cut the Rock Ghost King.”

Little\_Tree\_Rock replied to Crayon Shin-chan: “Fucker, wait for me!”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Exciting! It’s rare to see our army so united – the first time was Cha Na, then the Sea King, and this is the third time. I really hope that everyone will continue to be united. Unfortunately, conflicts always happen, one way or another. This is like what people always say, wherever there are people, there is bound to be trouble.”

Commander\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “In any case, irrespective of our internal conflict, when the foreign enemy appears, we are brothers and comrades-in-arms. We are indestructible and invincible when we stand united!”

High\_Ping\_Warrior (Europe): “Yes, our two main servers may be rivals that compete with each other after this battle, but when there are foreign enemies, we will never point our long swords at our own people!”

Watermelon\_Taro: “Long live the battle, tonight really got me pumped!”

Assassin\_Creed: “Our army is invincible and Yuanxu is just a stop in our long journey, like a whetstone. Our battle will not stop at this. Brothers, let’s work hard!”

Star\_Universe (Europe): “Brothers, good luck!”

Reinhardt (Europe): “Brothers, hang in there!”

Knight\_Of\_The\_Abyss (Europe): “Brothers, let’s keep going!”

...

Lu Wu smiled as he read the players’ comments and couldn’t help but feel relieved at their response.

When Lu Wu saw the 23 warriors die for Hu He, even he was shocked to the core and felt furious about it.

He knew that what had happened was real. They had really used their flesh and blood to defend Hu He from Yuanxu.



So, when the players started to band together, he didn't hesitate in opening the expedition link and allowed the players of Beiqi to join the battle.

Furthermore, this battle really shocked Lu Wu.

The players had again shown him that their potential was infinite.

The winner was frustrated because they had lost their fighting spirit, while the losing side had their fighting spirit high and was already looking forward to the future battles.

This was the vast difference between the Yuanxu Army and the players.

Indeed, this was what they were fervently discussing in the forum. Yuanxu was just a pit stop on their long journey, he was never the final destination.

After the battle had ended, Lu Wu deactivated the expedition of the battle between the Xian Xu and the Yuanxu Army. After all, it was supposed to be a test for the players of the European server, a whetstone to sharpen their skills and experience for their growth.

As for Beiqi's players, they focused their attention on the Land of the Nine Luminaries, which would be the next location of their new journey.

The players never ceased to amaze Lu Wu, so he kept great expectations for them.

...

After the battle, at the Hidden Dragon Village...

A stone statue was seen emerging from a distance, before stopping in the village.

The Evil King's heart was filled with emotions as he gazed at the surrounding buildings and empty streets.

This is a true Warrior Clan, it's my pleasure to have them!

The Player Clan's battle made his blood surge with excitement and was forever etched in his memories. Nonetheless, this battle had ultimately exhausted all the resources of this clan, so the Evil King's heart was full of regret.

This was supposed to be my trump card!

The Evil King let out a heavy sigh as he stared at the sky. He dusted his sleeves and was about to leave, when he suddenly noticed some movement in the village.

With a frown on his face, he immediately dashed over to the source of the sound.

When he arrived at the southernmost part of the village, the Evil King was dumbfounded.

He saw countless players walk out of a bright halo that looked like an altar.

“Stop pushing me, give way. Let me get out!”

“Fuck, is this serious, even the respawn point is in a gridlock. Make a path, you guys! The people are piling up behind here!”

“Can the brothers outside get out faster, it's so packed in here! Do you guys want to make a wall out of human bodies?”

“I can't breathe anymore! Make way, please! I want to get out of here!”

...

The Evil King was stunned as he watched the densely packed players emerge from the altar.

Then, he saw a familiar figure and immediately reached out to grab him. Li Xing, whose body was wedged in the crowd, was instantly pulled out from the sea of people by him.

“Why didn’t you die?” the Evil King was stunned as he looked at the familiar face, goggle-eyed.

Li Xing was also flustered to see the Evil King arrive so soon, but fortunately, he was well-prepared and said, “Oh, Lord Evil King, I died, but I respawned.”

“Respawn?”

“Yeah, our Player Clan has a special ability. After death, we can be resurrected in the clan’s altar. Every one of us has three lives!”

When the Evil King heard this, his expression turned deadpan.

You fucker! Then, all my touching moments were for nothing?

Nonetheless, there were many immortal abilities in the Underworld, but he had never heard about the ability to resurrect.

Although the Evil King was still confused, he waved his hand to draw out all the resurrected players that were piling in at the respawn point. In a flash, he reappeared at the front of the altar to examine it.

However, this altar was merely a piece of decoration and its resurrection ability was purely from the artifact, so there was no way the Evil King could differentiate it.

Hence, no matter how he studied, the only conclusion that he could come up with was that the altar was nothing more than an ordinary altar, without anything special to it.

The ability to respawn? That’s a terrifying skill!

The Evil King was utterly dumbfounded at this skill that was so unheard of.

Even though he was very curious about how this ability had come about, he had to let the thought go as he was not able to understand the mechanics behind the resurrection altar.

Nonetheless, the Evil King was very overjoyed.

Initially, he thought that he had completely lost his fearless army. To his bewilderment, they had actually respawned. The feeling of regaining what he had lost made the Evil King break into a peal of content laughter. He immediately came over to Li Xing and patted his shoulder.

“It’s great news that you can respawn, what great news indeed!”

The Evil King eyed Li Xing with gratification, a stark contrast to the scornful expression on his face during their first encounter.

Even though the Evil King discovered the secret reason behind the Player Clan’s fearlessness, he still considered them to be true warriors.

If these people had no courage, they would not have easily risked their life even if they did have three respawn opportunities.

This battle had proven the Player Clan’s unimaginable potential.

With their existence, it would be enough to deter the entire Yuanxu Army!

At that very moment, the Evil King was immensely confident that they would be able to eventually seize the throne.

# Chapter 257 - Liu Chai's Challenge

## Chapter 257: Liu Chai's Challenge

After the first battle in the Demonic Domain, players' emotions had become even more intense.

In addition to hunting the Undead in the Void Ocean, the players' taunting had become even more frequent in the territories of the Hydra King and the Rock Ghost King.

This had caused these two Ghost Kings to pour out their endless grievances.

However, since Lu Wu hadn't given them any specific orders yet, they could only grin and bear it.

Nonetheless, the players also knew when they needed to stop and to not cross the line. At the very least, they still took into account that the Hydra King and the Rock Ghost King had provided great help during the battle against the Sea King, so they still showed them some mercy.

With the current power of Beiqi's Army, it would be nothing to them to completely annihilate the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King.

Meanwhile, the profits of Lu Wu's soul coins were rapidly increasing.

Other than the increase in the number of players and the purchases of the daily merchandise, there was another important contributing factor. The number of players that were launching challenges in the Ghost Commander Trials had increased tremendously.

The fee to enter the challenge was a huge part of the recent increase in the soul coin income.

Apart from using these soul coins to increase his own cultivation and Beiqi's construction, Lu Wu had also planned to use them for the upcoming opening of the American server. He had carefully been calculating all the expenses.

After this battle, Lu Wu had come up with a new idea.

His idea was to merge the three main servers of South America, North America, and Oceania into a single server and rename it the Naraka server.

Lu Wu had finally decided on this plan after much consideration.

After all, the Land of Naraka had been chosen as the origin of the new server.

This unruly area was filled with many strong clans and many forbidden areas that could give rise to demonic creatures. It would be difficult for anyone to survive in this place.

Not to mention, after entering Naraka, Lu Wu couldn't create any resurrection point until the players had successfully claimed ownership to any of the territories in it.

This was because each resurrection point would be created in a random location within a fixed territory.

Of course, Lu Wu would choose the relatively weaker territory compared to the stronger force of Naraka to set as the fixed resurrection point.

This was in consideration for the players as well because this piece of Naraka was occupied by stronger clans. The chances of claiming territory in the initial stage was zero.

It could be said that the opening level for the Naraka server was vastly different from those of the previous servers.

All players would start off in a doomsday survival mode and their challenges were at a Naraka level.

Moreover, the original plan was to create the Australian server and the other servers, but since the number of players was not as high as these major servers, just merging these was a good choice, as it could greatly enhance the player's survivability in the early stage.

As for the subsequent opening of the Asian server, Lu Wu was already making plans for it and was setting up a new template for it. Then, he would develop a variety of expansion routes for the players.

Recently, the videos of the Ghost Commander Trial Challenge had gone viral in the forum.

After all, only a few players could successfully defeat the Ghost Commander. Winning the challenge was something that a player should be proud of, and at the same time able to prove one's strength and ability.

In addition to joining in the fun, players watching the videos of the Ghost Commander Trial Challenge wanted to learn some combat skills to improve their own abilities and to prepare for the upcoming tournament.

However, the live streaming of the challenge today had stunned all the players.

[Finally reached Level 100, I will try to challenge the Ghost Commander, live streaming for my fellow guild members (I do not intend to pass – it is purely for entertainment purposes, so don't take it too seriously)!]

Host: Commander\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers

After going through the battle yesterday, Liu Chai had finally reached Level 100, which was also the minimum requirement to enter the Ghost Commander Trial Challenge.

Under the persuasion of fellow guild members, Liu Chai decided to try it out.

Of course, he himself did not have any high hopes of success.

At this stage, many players who were at Level 130 weren't able to pass it. Even the top players like Ao Jian had only managed to pass the challenge when he was at Level 120, not to mention, after his second attempt.

Therefore, in this challenge, Liu Chai had only wanted to test the waters and to see the differences in power between himself and the actual Ghost Commander level monsters.

Moreover, at this moment, Liu Chai was the guild leader of Beiqi's first guild and he was very popular among the players. So, very soon his livestream had attracted the attention of many.

Liu Chai felt embarrassed when he saw the huge number of players that had tuned in to support him since he didn't have much confidence in this battle.

After paying the entrance fee to the Mansion of the Dead's keeper, two panels appeared in front of him:

[Entry level Combat-type Ghost Commander Trial Challenge (applicable to all combat classes)]

[Entry level Auxiliary-type Ghost Commander Trial Challenge (applicable to all auxiliary classes)]

Liu Chai had advanced his class to Rune Master, so naturally, he chose the combat challenge.

After pressing to confirm, the scene before him faded out. When a new cut scene appeared, he found himself in the middle of nowhere.

In front of him was a ten foot tall ugly-looking giant orc holding a thick wooden club looking at him fiercely.

[The end of random backdrop selection: skill demonstration area scene]

[The end of random of Ghost Commander monster selection: Ferocious beasts (early stage of Ghost Commander)]



[Warning: Players are prohibited from using revive potions, growing range potions, Lucky Scrolls, etc...]

After the instruction cutscene dimmed, a countdown timer emerged in front of Liu Chai's eyes.

[Ghost Commander Trial Challenge begins... player please be ready... countdown... ten... nine... eight... seven... six...]

In high anticipation of the players, the challenge finally started.

Of course, what the players were looking forward to was not how Liu Chai was going to display his immense strength or abilities, nor his attack to the trial-level monster, but to witness how Liu Chai would embarrass himself. Then they could laugh at him by sending mocking emojis.

Liu Chai faced the ferocious beast as it came rushing toward him, but he dared not face it head-on. He immediately did a side roll and evaded the thick wooden club that was about to crush him.

However, the ferocious beast's reaction was super agile. As it saw the attack was unsuccessful, it quickly swirled its body around and swerved the wooden club diagonally upward. Then, it forcefully smashed it into Liu Chai's chest, sending him flying to the other side.

When viewers saw Liu Chai soaring, the live stream channel suddenly became very lively.

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Leader of Demolition, what are you waiting for? Use your sacrifice, and beat him up with the Sea God! If you activate this skill, I can assure you that you can settle him within seconds... if you start all over again it's no big deal, too, it's just Level 0, what are you afraid of, we're just waiting for you to beat his ass (a laughing and persuasive glance.jpg)!"

A\_Large\_Wolfdog replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: "Why are you, the good-for-nothing troll, always around!?! (disgusted squinting eye look.jpg)"

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to A\_Large\_Wolfdog: “Since you’re here, I will pet your head with respect... (laughing emoji)”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Guild leader Liu Chai, fighting!”

Captain\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “Fighting that Ferocious beast (laughing emoji)!”

Junior\_Captain\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “Fighting that Ferocious beast (laughing emoji)!”

At this moment, in the discussion area, apart from the players that were trolling Liu Chai, the other comments were divided into two groups.

On one hand, there were players that hoped Liu Chai would be able to pass the trial test, and were cheering him on.

On the other hand, there was a group of players none other than his own guild members who were eating popcorn as they cheered for the ferocious beast.

At this instant in the livestream, the figure of the ferocious beast once again appeared next to Liu Chai and the huge wooden club smashed directly onto his head.

There was such a huge difference in terms of physical qualities between these two. There was no way that Liu Chai was able to catch up with the ferocious beast, so the only thing he could do was to build up his courage and face it directly.

As the strength gemstone on his body gleamed, he raised his right arm.

Boom!

Liu Chai abruptly sank his body down while his left arm quickly shot out and struck at the armpit of the ferocious beast.

That hit worked its magic on the spot. The ferocious beast took a few steps back as his arm felt a numbing sensation.

Liu Chai's fighting talent was undoubtedly powerful. When he saw that his attack worked well, he did not slow down. He immediately stepped forward with his right arm deflecting the wooden club, and he forcefully landed a blow onto the chest of the ferocious beast. Subsequently, that punch resulted in the beast retreating.

# Chapter 258 - The Return Of Number One

Chapter 258: The Return Of Number One

The battle between Liu Chai and the ferocious beast became more intense. This was because they were in close combat and the fighting was very violent. The livestream grabbed all the other players' attention.

It unfolded like they were watching a blockbuster action movie!

However, as time went on, players noticed that Liu Chai's combat style had changed.

As Liu Chai understood and learned the attacking style of the beast, he became increasingly confident because he found he had an added advantage over his opponent.

His right arm was invincible!

Therefore, in the following attacks, whenever the huge wooden club of the beast was going to smash into Liu Chai, he would just raise his right arm to take the blow. Then he would launch his counterattack.

With the help of Mu Zhiguang's unbreakable right arm, the beast of the Ghost Commander had no way of breaking Liu Chai's defenses. Every time its attacks were blocked, Liu Chai would hit back at the ferocious beast almost instantly.

Although the beast's skin was thickened with callouses, it was unable to withstand such relentless beating.

Suddenly, the entire live streaming room went wild as the players saw the health of the beast steadily falling.

Crayon\_Shinchan: “I strongly suggest that everyone report this Liu Chai student for using bots. Is his right arm made of vibranium? How could there not be a single drop of blood after so much smashing? I suggest the game official investigate this matter. (laughing emoji)”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Since when did Boss Liu train his Kirin arms? (laughing emoji)”

Assassin\_Creed: “Kirin’s right arm, so terrifying (laughing emoji)!”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “There must be a very wet story behind such a strong arm. (laughing emoji)”

Peppa\_Boar: “Hahaha, Guild Leader Liu, your method for the trial is so unusual. It was like using an invincible shield, if the beast was a conscious being, I think it would be fuming at you (laughing emoji)!”

There was a commotion on the streaming channel. Obviously, it was due to the fact that no one thought that Liu Chai would pass the trial challenge with such a rogue method.

However, this method has proven to be very effective.

Mu Zhiguang was a Ghost Emperor Elite. Even if the Ghost Commander’s ferocious beast was to use all of its power, it wouldn’t leave a single scar on the arm, let alone break it.

It could be said that the strength of this randomly chosen close combat trial, the ferocious beast was greatly restricted by Liu Chai until it wasn’t able to unleash its true strength and ability. After every one of its attacks were blocked, it would be smashed repeatedly by Liu Chai.

Moreover, the monsters of the Ghost Commander Trial were completely different from those of the outside world. They didn’t have any cognitive abilities, and their only aim was to constantly attack the players.

Hence, in the end, Liu Chai, who was at a disadvantage initially, relied on the invincibility of his right arm to overpower the beast.

[Server Announcement, congratulations to player Liu Chai for breaking the record for the Ghost Commander Trial, Level 100 – Number of challenges: One]

The appearance of this announcement immediately shocked many of the players, and one after another joined Liu Chai's live streaming channel to learn about what had happened.

These players were dumbfounded when they learned that Liu Chai had defeated the ferocious beast with just a really strong arm. Subsequently, a huge debate broke out.

Is this how the game should be played? This was the main question that the players had on their minds.

However, Liu Chai's close-to-cheating method of passing the trial had inspired the other players to think of many other clever ideas.

After this awe-inspiring event, more and more players were becoming enthusiastic about challenging the Ghost Commander Trial.

The players would no longer blindly engage in combat with the trial monster but instead start to build legitimate strategies to win.

For example, many Assassin players would run around and lay traps, and when enough traps had been laid they would start their attacks on the monsters.

There was also a Mage player who was smart enough to learn all the summoning skills of the Cultivation Pavilion. When he entered the Ghost Commander Trial he didn't even carry his magician stuff but instead just held up a shield. Throughout the battle, he was executing his summoning skills while running around wildly, occasionally lifting his shield when the monster came too close to him.

The players came up with many unusual methods and continued to present a variety of different ways to get through the trial.

It should be said that without cognitive abilities, these trial monsters really couldn't cope with this kind of combat that utilized strategic planning. Even if there was a trap, they would step right into it.

Lu Wu did not know whether he should cry or to laugh at how the players were trying to pass this trial. Originally, this Ghost Commander Trial was set up to compare the player's own strength and the Underworld's cultivation system. However, in the end, the players treated this challenge as a strategy game.

Of course, this scenario was not what Lu Wu had expected.

Therefore, Lu Wu took the opportunity to do some tweaking to the Second Level of the Ghost Commander Trial during the period when nobody was doing the challenge. He strengthened and upgraded the monster's combat consciousness so that they would no longer storm at the players ineptly.

As for the First Level's loophole that the players had discovered, Lu Wu did not intend to revise it.

Since it was a bug that the players had discovered on their own, then they could use it.

Lu Wu could only say that they would regret it one day. It was because of their ingenuity that the second level of the Ghost Commander Trial would be enhanced.

However, right now the players had no idea about this new change. The whole forum had become lively and players were sharing strategies for each character class to pass the trial. Everyone was fantasizing about the rewards they would get from the trial.

...

Offline, at the border of the Dragon Nation.

A figure was slowly walking over from a distance. He walked over to a stone surface of which half was embedded into the body of a mountain with

a blank expression and stood in front of it for some time.

At this time, the tiny hole on the surface of the boulder emitted a ray of laser light and swept over the man standing before it.

Beep!

“Identity confirmed... welcome back, Number One!”

After the robotic voice called out, the flat surface of the boulder slowly slid open and the lights were switched on from the space within it to reveal a pathway made of steel.

This was the underground human engineering laboratory that the Jie De Corporation had constructed outside of the border of the Dragon Nation. The location of this facility was well-concealed and was difficult to detect with the naked eye.

Moreover, Number One was created in this facility and he had received the power stronger than any other ordinary human.

As Number One walked along the passage, he finally came to the end of the passageway, where a steel wall blocked his way.

Right at this moment, the surveillance camera at the top of the wall slowly rotated to face Number One.

“It’s Number One, Number One is back!”

When the guard saw the familiar figure in the surveillance image, he immediately took out his walkie talkie and reported it to the Base Director.

“Quick, let him in!” Abel quickly cried out as he was sitting with the Base Director.

He was full of expectation as he could finally meet the person in charge of Battle Online that had caused him so much trouble.

He had even thought of some ways to entertain his distinguished guest.



As the steel door opened, Number One immediately strode into the elevator that led to the underground level.

“Number One, please head to the Base Director’s office. They’re waiting for you!” the voice of the guard could be heard inside the elevator.

Number One didn’t give any reply, but instead, nodded. Suddenly a dull light appeared in his eyes.

When the elevator reached the designated floor, the door slid open and Number One paced toward the direction of the Base Director’s office.

Along the way, he passed by storage space for human research and came across countless human bodies immersed in nutrient-rich liquid storage.

These bodies were covered with scars and some of their skin was festering which looked very painful. Their eyes were tightly shut and they could only sleep with the help of tranquilizing drugs.

When Number One reached the Base Director’s office, he opened the door and walked straight in without knocking.

Both Abel and the Base Director were astonished by Number One’s sudden arrival.

“Why didn’t you knock before you walked in!?” the Base Director yelled all of a sudden.

He had the highest authority in this whole facility base so it was completely normal for him to be angry with Number One’s impoliteness.

“Where’s the guy? Where’s the person in charge of Battle Online?” Abel stood by the side and asked. He didn’t care about formalities. He only wanted to see the person in charge of that wretched game.

Therefore, when he found out that Number One was here alone, he began to feel anxious.

After all, Battle Online was about to open their American server. If they didn't settle this matter, their market share would end like the other servers, where it would also be taken over by the Black Sea Corporation.

"I'm asking you... where is he?"

As a result of not getting a reply from Number One, Abel immediately walked up to him, grabbed him by the collar and shouted.

A hideous grin appeared on Number One's face. A malicious glint flashed across his face as he raised his hand and grabbed onto Abel's head and slammed it against the wall.

Thud!

Like a watermelon being split open, the blood splattered everywhere. The Base Director who was standing by his side was immediately taken aback by this scene.

# Chapter 259 - Unreliable Researchers

## Chapter 259: Unreliable Researchers

The Base Director sensed something was wrong as soon as Number One entered the room.

However, he still believed Number One was reliable, even though he had been brainwashed numerous times. Nonetheless, when Number One killed Abel without any hesitation, he was totally taken by surprise.

Watching Abel's body leaning onto the wall, and eventually falling down, the Base Director was dumbfounded, "Number One, what have you done? Are you out of your mind? I'm ordering you to get out now!"

Number One remained silent while taking a step toward the shocked Base Director.

He had already been brainwashed and remodeled by Bei Li, so of course, he wasn't taking any orders from these goons anymore.

Looking at Number One getting closer and closer, the Base Director quickly opened the drawer and pressed the area's alarm button in panic.

Beep! Beep! Beep!

The sirens blared across the area all at once.

However, Number One was already so close by then that the defensive force of the base was unable to arrive in time.

It was then when Number One reached out his hands to choke the Base Director while raising him up bit by bit.

The Base Director started to struggle with all his strength. While he randomly hit his attacker's arms, his face eventually reddened due to a lack of oxygen.

Crack!

As the veins were obviously shown on Number One's arms, the neck of the Base Director was distorted. His struggling stopped.

Leaving the corpse of the Base Director behind, Number One was then at the entrance of the room. He opened the door with his hand.

Click-clack!

The sound of guns being loaded were heard.

The security guards were all gathered outside the room.

"Number One, hand over the director to us!" shouted the leader in full armor.

Seeing that, Number One took a step backward into the room and closed the door. Later, he let out a loud roar. The muscles all over his body then contracted and he slammed hard toward the wall at the side.

Bang!

The thick wall collapsed instantly under the impact.

The guards outside were surprised by that and aimed their guns at the dusty area.

Roar!

It was then that a blurry figure appeared from the scene and rushed toward them, indicating the beginning of a massacre.

Under such close distance circumstances, gunfire was shot at their comrades by accident. The guards couldn't help but lower their guns and try

to take down the frantic Number One with their daggers.

However, Number One was even stronger than before. The dagger couldn't even cut through his tough skin.

It was as if Number One was now a killing machine. The murder fighting skills which he had been training for years could now be utilized as fully as he wished. He defeated the ten guards within seconds.

After getting rid of the blood on his arms, Number One turned around to look at the security camera on the corner of the wall with a ferocious smile on his face.

Looking at the screen in the security booth, the monitoring personnel worker was trembling inside while he quickly pressed the alarm button beside him. He grabbed the walkie talkie to contact the Deputy Base Director.

“Director Li, Number One has mutinied! Number One mutinied! The director has been killed! We need backup!”

“What? The director is dead?” Deputy Director Li, who was checking the recent human experiment data at the database, couldn't believe it.

He quickly turned around and rushed toward the laboratory. Meanwhile, he ordered the monitoring personnel at the base to allocate all the defensive forces of the base to stop Number One.

He participated in the remodeling of Number One by himself, so he knew how destructive Number One was. It was not an exaggeration to call him a human tank. The thought of the great sabotage that would be brought by the out-of-control Number One filled him with dread.

Since they had created Number One, for sure they had something as a backup defense. There was a remote control in the laboratory which could be used by him to control the self-destruct bomb chip planted inside Number One's brain.

Although he didn't know whether Number One could be under control, he had to be fully prepared. If Number One, who had lost control and couldn't be stopped, then all he could do was to destroy this weapon from the inside.

Followed by the blaring of the alarms at the base, all the personnel gathered rapidly and dashed toward Number One's whereabouts under the instruction of the monitoring personnel.

In the meantime, Number One was walking toward the main control room of the base.

His main objective was to demolish this base and there was a self-explosive system that could be triggered from the main control room. Once the system was activated, this base would be completely ruined.

This system was originally made to destroy the proof of the existence of this base when it was found, but Number One thought that it might be put to good use.

“Number One!”

It was then that a figure darted from the side and leaped toward him with a whip struck right at his forehead, causing him to take a step back subconsciously.

“Die!”

The figure got close as soon as it landed, stabbing Number One's neck with an elbow knife.

Even so, Number One was expressionless. He swung his left arm forward to hold onto the figure's elbow. Then by using his right arm, he locked the figure's neck and pressed it down forcefully while his knee hit upward mercilessly right at the person's chin.

This action was ruthless and the figure couldn't help but take a few steps backward, looking dazed.

“Number Three... why do you always think that you’re stronger than me?” gazing at the other figure, Number One let out a laugh.

Once Number Three had regained his composure, he felt his vision was covered by a shadow while a buzzing sound bombarded his ears.

“How is this possible? They’ve always said that my value was higher than yours! I was remodeled based on your basic features, so I should be even stronger than you!” shaking his head, Number Three reached for the wall while staring unbelievably at Number One who was laughing ferociously in front of him.

Number One was so strange to him now.

They had been on missions numerous times, so he understood very well about his capability. However, from the fight just now, he felt Number One had transformed greatly. Neither his strength nor his conditioned reflexes were at the same level.

“Number One, stop it now! You’ve totally lost control but it’s still not too late to stop now... they won’t kill you. You know how valuable you are!” Number Three advised him immediately, realizing he was no match for Number One.

Number One sneered suddenly and then he strode toward Number Three. The muscles on both his arms started to contract, showing lines of veins.

“Number One... do you really want to kill me?” begged Number Three as his pupils shrunk.

“Everyone in the base... of course, you are included!”

As Number One was saying so, he sprinted forward while swinging a curve with his right arm, smashing his fist onto Number Three’s face, banging half of his head into the wall.

After taking his arm away, Number One continued striding toward the main control room with a blank look on his face.

On his way there, Number One passed by the reference room, the specimen storage room, and finally found the door to the main control room.

As soon as his figure appeared, the security guards who had gathered outside the main control room earlier all fired at once. Rain of bullets suddenly shot at him, leaving the wall behind him in holes.

However, the guards were terrified because the bullets that fell onto Number One were only able to slightly bruise his skin, demotivating them to move forward.

“Change into X bullets!” the leader shouted in rage.

They originally planned to encounter Number One with normal bullets only as the powerful X bullets might shoot precious Number One to death. However, he didn't care about this anymore as his primary responsibility was to protect the base, without any mishaps.

It was then when Number One suddenly went on a rampage and bolted at them.

“Alpha Team One, go on with melee while the others start changing bullets!”

Along with the order from the leader of the security personnel, the security guards from team one took out their daggers which were hidden beneath their legs and darted toward Number One.

On the contrary, Number One needed no weapon. He was beyond powerful with only his muscles, knocking down all the security guards in the first row within seconds.

This was a truly shocking scene to behold by all the security personnel. Luckily, they had successfully changed bullets, so they aimed at Number One once again.

“Wait!” a man screamed from behind the security personnel.

“Director Li, get out of here now! Number One has gone on a rampage!”



Noticing the person approaching, the leader of the security personnel quickly blocked him, preventing him from rushing forward abruptly.

Director Li ignored the guard and raised up the remote control in his hand instead and yelled, “Stop now, Number One!”

After throwing away a corpse in his hand, Number One turned around to stare at Director Li in mockery.

“Number One, once I press this button, the self-destruct bomb chip in your brain will explode. I’m ordering you to go and lock yourself up in the Jail of Experiment!” Director Li ordered strictly while swaying the remote control in his hand, threatening Number One boldly.

Number One stuck out his tongue and licked the blood on his lips, the ferocious look was shown on his face once again.

While Director Li was still in great surprise, Number One suddenly lunged forward.

Looking at Director Li who was obviously still stunned, the leader of the security personnel grabbed the remote control in his hand and pressed it immediately.

Number One was totally out of control by then. Since his responsibility was to defend the base, he didn’t waste any second in hesitation. Even if he would be punished after this, we would accept the punishment anyway.

However, their imagination of Number One’s brain explosion did not come true. As the leader of the guards was still in great shock, a sturdy arm swung before him and got a hold onto Director Li’s head.

Burst!

Director Li’s head was squeezed by great force until it exploded. The blood got all over the guard’s face.

They were all utterly startled.

Looking at the fist which was getting increasingly bigger before him, he had only one thought in his mind.

These researchers were really unreliable. They once promised that the specimen would never betray them even if they had lost control and even if the self-explosion chip wasn't working.

I'm so dead!

# Chapter 260 - The Broken Page

Chapter 260: The Broken Page

Burst!

Both Deputy Director Li and their leader's head had exploded. Blood was scattered everywhere. The other guards had no idea what to do.

They aimed at Number One in a split second and started shooting.

However, something incredible happened.

As the X bullets hit Number One, they actually managed to cause a little damage to his body. Before they could penetrate further, though, they were squeezed out by his muscles and the wounds were healing by themselves at a noticeable speed.

The security guards who were witnessing this were all dumbfounded.

Even the X bullets with great lethality couldn't kill Number One. Could the explosion bullets kill him?

With the current distance, they were uncertain whether Number One would be killed by such a bullet, but they were absolutely positive that they would be killed if they didn't at least try.

However, Number One gave them no time to think twice. Along with a loud roar, he sprinted toward them. It was as if his arms were like two heavy pieces of lead and anyone who was smacked along the way ended up spurting blood from their mouths on the ground, losing all their ability to continue fighting.

Upon encountering such a scary Number One, it was useless for them to fight back. They could only wait to be slaughtered.

After killing around ten security guards, Number One was then at the entrance to the main control room. He turned and stared right at the security camera above him before shouting, “Open the door!”

Upon hearing this, the monitoring personnel stuttered, “I... I can’t open this door.”

As Number One heard this, he changed his gaze toward the metal door once again. He lowered his body and slammed himself hard onto the metal door.

Bam!

The metal door was shaking along with a deafening thud.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The frightened gaze of the worker grew as Number One was slamming against the door insanely. The metal dent became obvious on the door.

After a few trial runs, Number One stopped slamming and fell into deep thought as he was looking at the dented yet unbroken metal door.

Looking at this, the monitoring personnel worker heaved a huge sigh of relief.

If anything happened to the important data in the main control room, the headquarters would never let him get away with it.

After confirming Number One couldn’t break into the entrance of the main control room, the worker quickly turned around and closed the door of the monitoring room to prevent Number One from finding him.

After glancing at Number One who was still in his original position, the worker took out a communication device and started contacting headquarters, urgently reporting the current situation.

When he was done, the worker gave orders to all of the researchers on the base to not panic and find the closest safe room.

These safe rooms were originally used to contain the specimens which had lost control, with all four walls made up of the latest alloy materials. They would never have thought that one day they would be the ones in them.

After settling everything, the worker glanced back at the entrance of the main control room.

He was so shocked by what he saw on the screen.

He saw a black light sword had slowly formed out of Number One's hands. The light sword was then used to chop open the unbreakable metal door like slicing bread.

Not only the monitoring personnel worker but the other workers from headquarters who were watching the scene through the security cameras were also scared witless.

They had done a lot of research regarding the data of Number One's body previously. There was one thing that they were sure of – this supernatural ability was not being produced by the remodeling of Number One.

The ability to materialize soul energy was what they were pursuing at the current stage.

Mutation!

The same thought appeared instantly in all the minds of the researchers at headquarters.

Their gaze was gradually filled with desire. In their perspective, the value of Number One was rising continuously.

“He cannot be killed... we must have him... he seems to have mastered the spell from the ancient cultivation system!” shouted Professor Yard from the main experiment base eagerly as he watched Number One pacing toward the main control room.

In the main control room, the lights of various apparatus were flickering, creating a truly science fiction-like atmosphere.

After wandering around the place, Number One fell into silence.

Although he knew there was a self-explosion system in the main control room, he knew nothing about how to activate it.

He considered for some time before he headed toward the main console and started scanning the various buttons on it.

Later, he was attracted to a broken page that was kept in a glass container on the console.

This broken page seemed special, its surface was glimmering with fluorescence.

This was a research base but this paper was protected in the main control room. Consequently, it piqued Number One's curiosity.

Number One thought for a while before he swayed the light sword to cut open the glass container which was made with unknown material slowly. He then took out the broken page with fluorescence.

“Hmm?”

As soon as he took the paper, Number One's hand sank. The weight of the paper was out of Number One's expectation. He made a rough estimation, deducing the weight of the broken page to be around one ton.

It was then a sound echoed in Number One's mind.

“Number One, bring that page back with you!”

Upon hearing Bei Li's voice, the anger on Number One's face disappeared. He was suddenly looking respectful.

“Now put your hands onto the main console and I will control the soul power in you. Leave it to me for the rest!”

Without any hesitation, Number One followed Bei Li's order and put his hands onto the main console.

A wisp of soul power then escaped from Number One's body and entered the main console.

Then, the data on the screen was scrolling very quickly and paragraphs of encrypted internal programs of the base were revealed.

In a wink, all the programs of the main console disappeared, leaving only a red caution command...

[Confirm activating the base's self-explosion system!]

The sentence disappeared right after that and a countdown appeared.

Number One should have been destroyed together with the base and this self-explosion system didn't originally have any countdown setting.

But after she saw the broken page, Bei Li changed her mind and did some quick programming.

With the start of the self-explosion countdown, the alarm of the whole base started blaring and Number One started to leave with the heavy broken page.

After he got back to the metal passage using the elevator, Number One destroyed the elevator control with his fist and walked toward the huge stone outside the passage.

When the notification of the self-explosion was heard, all the researchers in the safe room panicked. Some of them even cried.

They opened the safe room and ran outside as fast as they could. Even the monitoring personnel workers weren't planning to stay and chose to rush out with the others.

When the whole base exploded, as long as they were still inside, they would surely be dead. Only escaping would provide them a chance of survival.

As for all the important research data in the database and information room, they were all abandoned directly under the threat of death.

However, when they reached the elevator, they found that the elevator had already been destroyed and they could never leave the base.

At that moment, all the researchers and workers were full of despair.

They leaned against the metal wall outside the elevator, knowing that their end was near.

Number One had already exited the huge stone door on the outside of the base.

He looked back at the mountain base and backed up for a distance. He didn't leave right away. He stared at the huge stone door and waited there instead.

The order he got was to destroy the whole Human Experiment Base, so he couldn't let anyone escape.

As time passed, a heavy thud was suddenly heard and the ground started trembling vigorously.

The ground above the laboratory started to collapse, including the stone disguised as the entrance – everything fell into a collapsed pit.

Everything in the base was destroyed including the data, researchers, workers, and even those other specimens which were badly ravaged.

Taking a last glance at the huge sunken pit, Number One left with the broken page, looking indifferently.



# Chapter 261 - The Nine Brothers Of The Nine Luminaries

Chapter 261: The Nine Brothers Of The Nine Luminaries

Within the inner channel of the battle artifact...

Lu Wu and Bei Li were focusing wholeheartedly on the floating broken page from Number One.

[The Emperor's Note]: The collection of the spells for cultivating souls into the body written by the ancient emperor using the Laws of the World.

Item Details: Sanctification Part (incomplete)

Noticing the information on the paper, both Lu Wu and Bei Li were stunned.

All this while, they thought that what the Jie De Corporation had found was an ordinary ancient cultivation book. However, to their surprise, the Jie De Corporation had obtained The Emperor's Note, a top-level cultivation method.

Hiss!

Both Lu Wu and Bei Li took a deep breath.

The existence of the Human Emperor was even stronger than the existence of the emperors of Heaven and the Underworld. He could be said to be the strongest among the three worlds.

How could his cultivation note be something ordinary?

“Such a waste! They were actually using such high-level notes for the experiment of recovering human soul energy!” mumbled Bei Li while

looking at the broken page.

“Such good stuff!” Lu Wu couldn’t hold back either.

“Wu, the Jie De Corporation has possibly received the whole book of The Emperor’s Note but distributed parts in different laboratories!” said Bei Li seriously.

“Let’s snatch them all!” Lu Wu immediately expressed his thoughts.

It was a total waste for such a precious treasure to be used by the Jie De Corporation for just human experiments. Lu Wu thought that it was better for him to keep it.

“What’s your plan?”

“Don’t we have Number One? Make him even stronger and have him get them for us!”

“Due to the forced cultivation, Number One’s body was already unstable. If we still want to remodel him, his lifespan will be shortened significantly... unless we keep his soul in the artifact, he couldn’t live for more than a year. Moreover, he is different from other players who can slowly get used to the state upgrades. His soul could possibly collapse if we inject soul power directly to upgrade his status!” Bei Li warned while taking a glance at Number One who was standing by their side.

“Then we should just mark his soul in the artifact and find a physical body from the Spirit Summoning Palace for him so that we can increase his capability to the limit where his soul could be able to withstand everything for now,” Lu Wu uttered after a moment of consideration.

“Are you planning to remodel him into a secret weapon in the real world?” asked Bei Li curiously.

“Yes. After all, there’s a lot of stuff in reality which we’re not in the right place to achieve. It’s good to have him here!”

Bei Li nodded and put on a white coat while the soul power around them gathered, enabling Number One to float in the air.

Soon after that, Bei Li formed a frameless spectacle on her hand and wore it, looking as if she was a consummate professional.

“Well, you can do this by yourself! I’ll go and cook dinner...” Lu Wu gave Bei Li a supportive gaze.

Bei Li looked back solemnly, “Please cook more than usual... I have a good appetite today!”

Lu Wu was about to say something joking about how she always had a good appetite, but he kept it to himself. His figure slowly disappeared from the artifact channel.

...

The Land of the Nine Luminaries, Dark Heaven Pavilion of His Excellency.

There were nine ten-foot tall figures with fierce looks sitting in a circle in the main hall of Dark Heaven Pavilion. In front of every one of them were tables full of a variety of spiritual material and meats as well as fine wine.

“Big brother, there’s a big commotion in the Underworld now, which is a bad sign,” said a relatively thin man who was sitting in the opposite direction of His Excellency Xing Yao, the one seated on the throne.

“That’s none of our business. As long as it isn’t a war between the deities and the Underworld, we will not be affected!” Xing Yao replied indifferently after finishing the wine in his glass.

“The incidents of His Excellency Cangxu failing to go against Heaven and the ancestors in Beiqi killing the gods for the sake of the power source proved that there’s a possibility for those in Heaven to start a war at any time.”

“Ninth brother, don’t jinx it. If they really start a war, we will be left with nothing even if we are domineering one of the large domains... after all, it’s

a fight between the gods!” Xing Yao reprimanded while staring at his brother, Huo Yao, who was still making insensitive remarks.

Upon hearing that, Huo Yao shut up at once, focusing his gaze on the food.

“Big brother, I would like to remind you of something...” the fifth brother, Jin Yao, turned around to look at Xing Yao after swallowing a piece of meat in his mouth.

[The sequence of the nine brothers in the Land of the Nine Luminaries are as follows: Star (Xing), Moon (Yue), Sun (Ri), Time (Chen), Gold (Jin), Wood (Mu), Water (Shui), Fire (Huo), and Earth (Tu).]

“It seems like the Earth Breaking Clan who separated us from Beiqi has vanished. A few days ago when I was passing by, I planned to greet the Leader of the Earth Breaking Clan but I found that the whole clan had left the Barren Grassland!”

Upon hearing this, Xing Yao’s face turned cold.

“Big brother, now that Beiqi has no master, are you interested in it?” Jin Yao asked again with great expectation.

“Of course, let me be the King of Beiqi, too,” replied Yue Yao, the second brother, as he laughed.

Xing Yao uttered no words and fell deep into his thoughts.

Actually, they had been longing to take down Beiqi by the sea for a long time. Furthermore, it was not a big problem to take it down now with their capabilities.

Besides, the previous few kings of Beiqi looked weak to them as well.

However, they had always been holding on due to the existence of the Earth Breaking Clan.

Although all nine of them were strong, only the eldest, second, and third brothers had achieved the Ghost Emperor Realm, with only the eldest

brother, Xing Yao at the Greater Ghost Emperor stage. The other two were at the Fledgling Ghost Emperor stage. If they were really to fight the Earth Breaking Clan, just one clan member was already enough to be their match.

Although they might have won, in the end, the price was too high for them to pay.

The Earth Breaking Clan was the protector of the kings of Beiqi. They were able to fight all the contenders of Beiqi and were like a huge mountain that was blocking all outsiders from reaching Beiqi. Hence, they could only leave this thought aside back then.

However, now that the Earth Breaking Clan was said to have left the Barren Grassland, all nine of them were suddenly in great excitement.

Without the Earth Breaking Clan, the route to Beiqi would be so smooth that their armies could cross the boundary of Beiqi easily and take down the throne.

After that, they would be blessed by the Great Emperor and another one of them would surely be upgraded to become an elite of the Greater Ghost Emperor stage.

“Fifth brother, is this information reliable? What happens if the Earth Breaking Clan suddenly comes back?” Xing Yao asked carefully instead of making a decision right away.

“I’m not sure about that either. Since the Earth Breaking Clan’s base was not there anymore, we can assume most probably that they’ve left. But to be safe, it would be better for us to wait and see!”

“Since we have waited for years, a while more would not be an issue. So let’s just wait... right, go and check which force is the strongest in Beiqi now so that we can establish a good relationship with them. After that, we can ask for their willingness to cooperate with us!”

“Big brother, let me handle this. When we have successfully taken down Beiqi, let me be the king over there!” Yue Yao replied immediately.

“Go then. Take care. Retreat immediately if the Earth Breaking Clan comes back. Don’t let them know you are aiming for Beiqi, otherwise with their bad temper, they would never let you get away!”

“Big brother, I understand. If the Earth Breaking Clan ever comes back, I’ll leave with my men at once. I don’t want to go against those psychos. I’m leaving now then, enjoy your tea!” Yue Yao stood up and left hastily after finishing his sentence.

Knowing Beiqi was now vacant, he couldn’t wait to take down Beiqi and accept the blessing from the Great Emperor.

When the Nine Luminaries finally showed interest in Beiqi, all the players received a mission notification.

[New Mission Quest: Conquering the Land of the Nine Luminaries]

Mission Details: After half a year of battling, our armies have finally dominated the Land of Beiqi. However, there will never be an end to battles. The Land of the Nine Luminaries across the Barren Grassland is pointed by the blade as the next land to conquer. Go and explore this new territory, endless resources are awaiting you there.

Mission Requirement: Explore 5% of the frontier of the Nine Luminaries.

Mission Reward: Title of Forerunner added to your profile.

# Chapter 262 - The Arrival Of The Messengers

## Chapter 262: The Arrival Of The Messengers

With the update of this new quest, the task of conquering this mysterious Land of the Nine Luminaries began. All the Beiqi players were excited to check it out.

It represented a new challenge as well as more hidden quests and sources.

Soon after, the players had formed their own groups and prepared to go exploring.

However, it was then when some uninvited guests arrived in Beiqi.

At that moment, there were nine Chaos Earth Dragons at the entrance of Mansion of the Dead with a Nine Luminaries messenger sitting on each of them. All of them were wearing hats with an Underworld word on them.

Those words were Xing, Yue, Ri, Chen, Jin, Mu, Shui, Huo, and Tu, with each representing the king and eight lords dominating the Land of the Nine Luminaries.

Their arrival had attracted the attention of all the players. Most of them went over to figure out what was happening.

“Friends of the Mansion of the Dead, we are from the Land of the Nine Luminaries, the nine messengers of His Excellency... we are here to discuss serious matters with your leader!”

After the players read the information about the messengers from the explanation guide, all of them had a strange look on their faces.

Are these messengers looking for death to come over here while we are thinking to lay our hands on them over there?

All the players said nothing but surrounded them at once. As all the nine messengers were of the Ghost General level, they didn't want them to leave at all. Instead, they were planning to take advantage of their resources.

“My brothers, don't be impetuous... let's see what their purpose is for being here first!” Liu Chai's voice resounded in the live chat channel.

All the players were respectful of Liu Chai, so they stopped moving forward.

“Messengers, tell us why you are here!” Liu Chai exclaimed as he thronged the crowd and appeared in front of the nine.

“Are you the lord here?” asked the messenger wearing the hat with the word, Xing.

Liu Chai looked at the surrounding players. He was embarrassed as he couldn't actually represent all the players. Until then the players didn't take any action yet just because they respected him, but it wasn't like he could accept the title flippantly.

“Stop wasting time, the utmost thing is knowing what he wants first, just admit that you're the lord here!”

“Yeah, don't waste time, ask clearly their purpose first!”

Listening to the voice message of a few leaders in the live chat channel, Liu Chai agreed and responded, “I'm the Lord of Mansion of the Dead... why are you here?”

Upon hearing that, the messenger of Xing Yao nodded and threw him a scroll.

Liu Chai reached out for it and saw a sentence written on the scroll, His Excellency, Xing Yao's Edict. He then gazed toward the messenger of Xing Yao in doubt.



“Open and read it. If you agree, the Land of the Nine Luminaries can guarantee that you will be at the second top-level in Beiqi in the future!”

When the surrounding players heard of that, they nearly let out a laugh.

It seemed like another force that saw them as a weak group had appeared for they hadn't shown their true colors for quite some time.

Looking at the impatient players, Wu Guoyi immediately spoke in the live chat channel, “Everyone control yourself, let's look at what's written in the scroll!”

After opening the scroll in his hand, Liu Chai screenshotted the content and sent it to the chat.

All of the players were completely entertained after reading the content.

The King of the Nine Luminaries actually wanted the players to swear allegiance to him and help him fight off all the other forces of Beiqi. Then he'd give them the status of lord.

“Do we look like fools to them? Doesn't he think this is funny?”

“I'd die laughing! I'm suddenly looking forward to conquering the Land of the Nine Luminaries in the future.”

“Big Brother Liu, you should write an edict, too. Ask His Excellency of the Nine Luminaries to hand over his territory to us and we will give up on turning him into soul coins!”

The nine messengers were not aware of the discussion among the players in the live chat channel at all. They were still waiting for Liu Chai's reply.

Actually, they were quite confident that they would succeed in their request.

Their perspective was different from the players. From their point of view, the great forces of the Nine Luminaries was enough to scare the players off. As the forces of Beiqi were scattered, if they were to attack, they would be

no match for the Land of the Nine Luminaries. Therefore, they would choose to accept their offer as they would be granted an honorable title.

After all, this term would bring Beiqi's issues to an end and enable them to enter a more stable stage of progression. Besides, they could also own a larger territory with more resources at the same time.

On top of that, His Excellency Xing Yao also mentioned clearly in the edict that he was willing to provide military support.

With so many benefits offered, an ordinary lord would have agreed immediately as this was a great opportunity to expand their own force.

However, it was too bad that the ones they were asking to surrender were the players. It was impossible that they'd accept this offer as all of them couldn't wait to beat up these nine messengers to release their anger.

Liu Chai was looking enraged, too. Beiqi had already become their territory. But this King of the Nine Luminaries still dared to want to own their territory before they crossed over to his. He couldn't bear this any longer.

“Leader Liu, please wait... the official analysis said that the Land of the Nine Luminaries is stronger than us... don't rush this, let's try to pry something more from them!”

Upon hearing this, Liu Chai frowned. However, after noticing that it was Yin Xiaoqi who was speaking, he was surprised.

Yin Xiaoqi was quite famous among the players now as she managed to turn the tables for the players within the European server by providing advice and suggestions twice. Liu Chai remembered her well, thus accepted her suggestion.

“OK... Leader Liu, repeat this sentence after me. Let us obtain more details first!”

“Alright, I'm on all ears!” Liu Chai replied as he nodded.

“Lord of the Mansion of the Dead, I hope you can consider it thoroughly as there are many other forces in Beiqi. We chose you because we believe in you. Please don’t let us down!”

While the players listened to this, there were commotions among them as the threat of the messengers sounded so weak to them.

Within the Land of Beiqi, it could be clearly seen from their previous battle that the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King were already their allies.

If they ever planned on betrayal, they would have surrendered to the Sea King when his forces attacked.

“Messengers from the Land of the Nine Luminaries... since it was mentioned on the edict that you are willing to provide military support, when are your armies arriving?” Liu Chai repeated after Yin Xiaoqi.

The messenger of Xing Yao froze as he heard this.

To be honest, he couldn’t guarantee when their military support would get there.

After all, they were still worried that the Earth Breaking Clan would return, so they couldn’t risk sending their troops too hastily.

After a moment of silence, the messenger of Xing Yao spoke again, “Once you’ve agreed and attacked other forces, our support will reach very soon!”

“Messenger, although we own the Mansion of the Dead and have the greatest forces here in Beiqi, maybe you aren’t aware that recently we’ve been conquering too frequently and are now short of supplies. If your military support is not able to catch up with us, how are we going to start battling again?”

“As long as you start battling, we will provide you supplies. As for military support, we will catch up with you as soon as possible!”

Snap!

Liu Chai slapped on his own thigh and responded, “You should’ve said this earlier, Messenger. As long as supplies are provided, of course, my clan is willing to be the pawns of the King of the Nine Luminaries. I’ve agreed!”

When the messenger of Xing Yao heard of this, he frowned abruptly.

War was not just a game. Hence, he felt something was wrong when Liu Chai agreed so easily.

Then, something popped up in his mind all of a sudden. Since Liu Chai had mentioned the supplies, is this Lord of the Mansion of the Dead trying to cheat on our supplies and then do nothing after that?

While his mind was filled with this thought, he saw Liu Chai speak confidently again, “Since His Excellency is showing us so much sincerity, we will start preparing for a war now. We will start off with the Rock Ghost King to show our sincerity!”

When all the nine messengers heard that, they were all taken aback.

Isn’t he agreeing way too easily? He’s even prepared to start battling so quickly?

# Chapter 263 - Putting On A Good Show

## Chapter 263: Putting On A Good Show

Looking at the shocked faces of the nine messengers, Liu Chai gave an indifferent smile.

“Now that I’ve agreed, naturally I have to show my sincerity. I’ll declare war with the Rock Ghost King right away. My lords, would you be interested in witnessing the battle?”

The messengers were obviously unable to keep up with Liu Chai’s pace, subconsciously nodding in reply after a moment of silence.

Soon, all the Beiqi players started preparing for war. A large number of people gathered outside the city.

About two hours later, the huge army of players was embattled and marching toward the North Rocks.

The messengers were indeed dumbfounded.

Liu Chai was too reckless in declaring war. He was so reckless that they didn’t have any confidence in him. They quickly followed behind the army of players marching, wishing to see whether this was a true battle or merely a facade by feigning attack.

Right at this moment, inside the live chat channel.

Yin Xiaoqi: “Boss Liu, have you sent someone to inform the Rock Ghost King? Did he agree?”

Liu Chai: “He did. The Rock Ghost King thought that we must act perfectly from the very beginning until the end, so he’ll do his best to work with us.

He also wants 20 percent of the resources that the Nine Luminaries will deliver to us!”

Ye Xue'er: “Hahaha, great job, little sister Yin Xiaoqi, here goes another big trap!”

Gu Yu: “Brilliant! We'll play based on this script... consider us a loser if they don't get stressed out in the end.”

Wu Guoyi: “Interesting! Guys, don't be too brutal in killing them later. Having casualties is not a big deal for us, but do reserve some resources for the Rock Ghost King and don't overdo it!”

Following a long march of two hours, the players finally arrived at the densely-wooded area in the North Rocks.

Nonetheless, they didn't stop their pace and continued charging onward.

When the army of players reached the edge of the Rock Ghost King's territory, countless figures of Tree Demons and Enchanted Trees appeared before them. At the same time, five huge trees were flying over from afar, smashing heavily on the edge of the Rock Ghost King's territory, overlooking the army of players.

“Player Clan! Why are you attacking my North Rocks!” the Rock Ghost King hooted in rage.

“Rock Ghost King, you brigand! Hand over your territory and surrender yourself, or else I will take away your pathetic life and seize the North Rocks!” Liu Chai immediately shouted in reply.

“This is the North Rocks, I advise you to retreat quickly before my army kicks your asses and wipes out your entire army!” the Rock Ghost King yelled back again.

The messengers were bewildered as they saw Liu Chai and Rock Ghost King shouting such malicious words at each other.

We usually begin the war straight away. What's with all the yelling before the war? Is it warming up?

“Fine, bully... since you're unwilling to surrender, go to hell then! Kill them!”

“Thickhead! My place isn't something you can obtain easily! My dear children, come kill alongside me!”

Both Liu Chai and the Rock Ghost King shrieked simultaneously and their armies dashed forward in an instant.

The faces of the nine messengers grew solemn at the sight of this, they began to observe the situation on the battlefield.

Bang!

The battle began as the two armies clashed together.

Most of the players were goofing around during the battle and started putting on a show.

Not only did the players have to show the messengers that they were doing all they could to fight and kill, but they also had to die inadvertently in the battle. They made full use of their abilities to perform, albeit with great difficulty.

However, the battle appeared to be exceptionally intense when seen from a distance.

The messengers from the Nine Luminaries were really dumbfounded, looking at the war.

They're doing it for real? Where's the feigned attack they agreed upon to prove their sincerity?

Looking at the huge number of players who died, the messengers were so baffled that they were at a loss for words.

“Kill!”

The great battle cry rumbled in the sky as the battle between the two armies intensified.

The Rock Ghost King felt so great as he was killing during the battle. After all, the players were merely feigning attack and thus he wouldn't lose too many soldiers. He could feel the alacrity in his heart for the reason that he could gain 20 percent of the resources after the battle.

He could definitely sell these resources to the players by putting them in the shop later in exchange for soul coins, and then converting those into soul power. Perhaps he could utilize this opportunity to break through and become a Greater Ghost King.

“Die! All of you!” with the roar of the Rock Ghost King, the vines in the zone of the wood element were moving in a frenzied dance, killing a large number of players.

The Rock Ghost King had always been bullied by the players, yet he felt extremely delighted at this moment where he had the opportunity to massacre them freely. He grew more and more enthusiastic as he went on killing, for he might not have another chance to do so.

Upon seeing the large number of players being strangled to death by the Rock Ghost King, the messengers from the Nine Luminaries turned to look at Liu Chai, who retreated to their side.

“Lord... Lord of the Mansion of the Dead, doesn't your heart hurt?”

“It does, but this is our sincerity! Don't judge simply because I may seem fairly random in our agreement. Our clan is very forthright and we never go back on our promises! Besides, take a look at our poor warriors who don't even have decent equipment. We might have the advantage in respect of the numbers, but... sigh!”

The Messenger of Xing Yao's lips twitched as he glanced through a large number of dead players.



“Lord of the Mansion of the Dead... perhaps... you should retreat and wait for the arrival of our resources before dispatching more troops?”

“No way! We must fight with vigor since the battle has already started!”

Liu Chai rejected within seconds and went on shouting at the front, “Kill! Children! It’s the Rock Ghost King! Kill him!”

Witnessing a large number of deaths, the messengers couldn’t help but speak again, their hearts bleeding, “Lord of the Mansion of the Dead, stop fighting! You’re simply wasting your soldiers for nothing! How about this, we’ll deliver the resources as soon as possible for you to make another war and you can definitely take down the Rock Ghost King by then! You mustn’t let emotions affect your decision now!”

“No! We must fight with vigor!”

Seeing that Liu Chai was so stubborn, the nine messengers turned over and jumped off the back of their Chaos Earth Dragons. They walked over to Liu Chai, trying to persuade him earnestly.

At the present stage, they were completely convinced by Liu Chai that he was honestly seeking their patronage.

In that case, these dying soldiers would be the future subordinates and forces of His Excellency Xing Yao who would take control over Beiqi in the future. Their hearts ached at the sight of the dying players.

Noticing Liu Chai’s determination in doing so, the nine messengers immediately made an assurance to him that they would only take three days. They promised to send the resources in three days, in the hope that Liu Chai could suppress his anger and tolerate the wait for three more days.

In the end, Liu Chai let out a long sigh under their persistent persuasion.

“Frankly speaking, based on my hot temper, this battle will either end with their death or my army being wiped out. But since I’ve sought your

patronage, I still have to listen to the words of my lords and show due respect to you!”

The nine messengers immediately nodded upon hearing that, seemingly agreed with him.

“I’ll end the battle for your sake, but I’ll definitely fight it out with them in the next war!”

There was a hidden meaning behind Liu Chai’s words. If they were to lose the war against the Rock Ghost King due to insufficient resources, this useful army of the Mansion of the Dead would be of no avail by then.

The messengers unanimously nodded in agreement and shot Liu Chai a grateful look.

To them, it appeared that Liu Chai had truly honored them in making the decision.

At this moment, they completely believed that Liu Chai was a very honest and forthright lord who could be easily driven by them.

# Chapter 264 - Welcome Gifts For The Future Subordinates

## Chapter 264: Welcome Gifts For The Future Subordinates

Liu Chai seemed extremely unwilling when he agreed to pull back his troops. Nonetheless, the nine messengers were grateful as they thought Liu Chai was showing them respect.

When the Player Clan retreated, the Rock Ghost King performed an outburst of acting out and bellowed in anger. He started commanding his subordinates, the Army of Tree Demons, to go in hot pursuit and attack, resulting in the players losing a lot more of their troops. All the nine messengers could feel their hearts aching at the sight of this.

Once they returned to the Mansion of the Dead, all the players pretended to be exhausted and lay on all sides on the floor while resting.

“Messengers, you’ve seen the strength of my clan. We are as true as steel and fear no death in a battle, but unfortunately, we don’t have sufficient equipment and resources... sigh...” Liu Chai sighed as he spoke.

“Fear not, Lord of the Mansion of the Dead! Your sincerity is clear to us. We will acquaint His Excellency and the other lords with your message right away. The resources, weapons, and equipment will be supplied to you without delay!”

“Great! We will make war with other forces once the resources are in place!”

Both the messengers and the players were on cloud nine.

The messengers from the Nine Luminaries were elated as they had easily summoned the biggest force at the Mansion of the Dead to surrender, paving the way into Beiqi in advance for Lord Yue Yao.

Without even starting a war at all.

On the other hand, the players were thrilled for the simple fact that another idiot had taken their bait again. They were actually going to send them resources this time!

Both sides burst into hearty laughter after some negotiation, seemingly to be enjoying themselves.

Once the messengers left and after the negotiation had ended, all the players stood up in high spirits. They couldn't help but burst out into a wild fit of laughter.

In the forum:

Crayon\_Shinchan: "My acting skills went through the roof today, that fucking Tree Demon couldn't even tie me up! Fortunately I was quick-witted to take two steps forward and bump into his vines so that he could strangle me to death. So, is there any extra drumstick, director? (laughing emoji)"

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "Guys, you won't believe this. I wandered around the Ancient Tree Demons for quite a while, blinking and tipping it with the wink, yet it just wouldn't hit me. I got mad and straight away backstabbed it, then it finally noticed me and crushed me to death (laughing emoji)!"

Watermelon\_Taro: "So it appears that it is very hard, even when you want to get yourself killed. I think those little tree demons were unable to kill all the players as there were too many of us (laughing emoji)!"

Assassin\_Creed: "At that time, I was going to take the opportunity to scrape something off the Rock Ghost King himself, but in the end, I was instantly killed the moment I got near him. I'm so angry, it was such a rare opportunity."

Little\_Tree\_Rock replied to Assassin\_Creed: "You wicked fellow (Tong Gua smashing face.jpg)!"

Predestined\_Tong\_Gua replied to Little\_Tree\_Rock: “I advise you to be kind and delete the picture... (Cha Na overlooking.jpg)”

Roast\_Jade\_Hare\_With\_Chang’e\_In\_The\_Arms: “Hahaha, it’s so much fun! The little tree demon in front of me just seemed like it was tired of killing, looking so weak that even its branches and leaves were trembling. It was so adorable that I wanted to capture it and raise it myself (laughing emoji)!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Roast\_Jade\_Hare\_With\_Chang’e\_In\_The\_Arms: “Capture and raise it until it’s big enough for you to chop and sell as spiritual material, right? You’re very creative indeed (laughing emoji)!”

Looking at the players showing off their skills, Lu Wu was already completely convinced.

The King of the Nine Luminaries, the great fellow with exalted rank, had actually been played by these players.

All I can say is that the players who are able to resurrect can really do as they please.

...

Land of the Nine Luminaries, Dark Heaven Pavilion in His Excellency’s palace.

His Excellency Xing Yao was sitting high up on the throne while the rest of the eight brothers were sitting below him, at his left and right-hand side, following the proper order. The nine messengers who just returned from Beiqi were standing in the center.

The nine brothers appeared to be extremely shocked as they listened to the messengers’ report.

If it wasn’t for the fact that they had personally trained and taught these messengers, they would’ve thought the nine of them are spouting nonsense.

In their opinion, that lord must be an intelligent man for him to be a leader in the Land of Beiqi.

Therefore, in any case, if they were unable to draw these people to their side using these conditions, they had an initial plan to promise the people some future benefits in order for the latter to willingly give their lives for them.

However, the result is far beyond their imagination. Not only did they manage to come to an agreement, but they also straight away dispatched troops to attack other forces.

They were stunned upon listening to the nine messengers' narration.

“Your Majesty, the clan occupying the Mansion of the Dead is very forthright and honest... everything I say is true!” the leading messenger assured.

“Your Majesty, I can vouch for that. Although they are wildly impulsive in doing so, it's definitely not a window dressing. We saw their clansmen fighting with the Rock Ghost King's army with our own eyes and there were really many casualties in the battle.”

“There really are such hotheads! Haha, I believe you guys!” Yue Yao uttered with a smile.

“I believe it, too. The Underworld is so big that nothing should be a surprise. After all, it's fairly normal for them to find somewhat unique characters. And besides, according to the messengers, the critical factor that allows them to settle down at the Mansion of the Dead and become the largest force in Beiqi is their extraordinarily large number of clansmen. That ought to explain it!” Ri Yao, who was sitting beside Yue Yao, expressed his opinion as well.

“Since we just have limited knowledge about the Beiqi forces, we must be extra careful. How about this? Second Brother, go with them secretly when we send them their resources, and make a thorough investigation to find out what's actually happening!”

“Alright, Big Brother. I’ll prepare the resources immediately and follow along to take a look!” Yue Yao replied with a grin on his face.

Upon listening to the description of the Mansion of the Dead’s strength by the messengers, Yue Yao was quite content. After all, a loyal force came in inches, not in miles. It could not have been better than having such a hotheaded clan.

After everything was settled, Yue Yao was the first to leave once he bid farewell to his brothers.

Since the job of preparing the resources was assigned to him this time, he would have to personally check on it.

There was another significant reason.

To him, since he was the future King of Beiqi, the Beiqi forces were going to be his future subordinates. Therefore, he certainly had to prepare more resources for them. These resources might belong to the nine of them now, but the resources would go to him once they fell into the hands of the Beiqi force.

Yue Yao headed for the Resource Warehouse as he was calculating in his mind, getting ready to pick out the materials to be sent to Beiqi.

The Resource Warehouse in the Land of the Nine Luminaries was a huge castle that was heavily guarded, following a three-shift system where each shift was commanded and led by two Ghost Generals. At the same time, security alarms and checkpoints with lethal attacks were set all over the castle. It would be extremely difficult even for those of Ghost Emperor Realm to take out the treasures in this castle without setting off any of the lethal attacks.

Nevertheless, nobody would stop Yue Yao from entering the castle as he was one of the rulers.

Upon arriving at the entrance of the castle, Yue Yao cut his finger and pressed it on the blood detection point at the gate of the castle.

This was only the first checkpoint at the gate of the castle, after clearing all the nine checkpoints, Yue Yao finally entered the Resource Warehouse.

The floor was glistening under fluorescent light and the fragrance of elixirs wafted through the air. Other than some unique treasures that were placed in an orderly manner in a corner, everything else was thrown all over the place.

Yue Yao glanced over the warehouse, pondering about which resources he should bring to Beiqi.

Elixirs? Hmm, I must bring these to improve their strength, and I'll need it to make pills in the future as well.

Spiritual Ore? Hmm, this is a must, too. Since there will be Spiritual Ore, I should bring along some casters with me then.

Equipment? This is crucial as there's a lack of equipment. But these are really good weapons, I'll just bring these for the Lord of the Mansion of the Dead and his bodyguard then.

Treasures? I'll bring some of these and reward the Lord of Mansion of the Dead, there's no need for the rest.

Strolling around the Resource Warehouse, Yue Yao picked up one item after another and commented on it from time to time as he was preparing the welcome gifts for his future subordinates.



# Chapter 265 - Big Dorky Liu Chai

## Chapter 265: Big Dorky Liu Chai

After preparing all the resources, Yue Yao immediately assigned his subordinates to form a convoy of a hundred soldiers to help deliver the load.

It was not that he didn't want to bring more people with him.

This decision was made after considering the fact that if he were to do so, it would be a pain in the neck for him to explain, owing to the reason that the Earth Breaking Clan of the Barren Grassland might come back at anytime. After all, judging from Lie Shan's temper, he would definitely beat the shit out of him if he learned of his intention to take over Beiqi.

Besides, the road to the Mansion of the Dead was perfectly safe and no one in the Land of the Nine Luminaries would dare rob them anyway. Moreover, there were no other forces around since the Burial Grounds in front of the Mansion of the Dead had long been destroyed.

Nonetheless, since this was the first batch of resources that he was going to send, Yue Yao decided to quietly make an investigation before deciding the subsequent amount of resources.

Yue Yao departed together with the convoy after everything was all set.

Yue Yao disguised himself by restraining his imposing manner and shrinking to a smaller body size. He also put on the apparel of the guards to make himself more unspectacular.

One and a half days later, in the direction of Beiqi, the convoy led by the messenger of Yue Yao had arrived at the Mansion of the Dead.

Seeing that the players were already acquainted with the identity of the messenger of Yue Yao, they did not stop him and straight away let them

enter the Mansion of the Dead.

Meanwhile, Liu Chai and the others were waiting and ready to see what resources they would receive. The convoy was greeted warmly once they entered the city.

“Lord of the Mansion of the Dead, by good luck I was able to accomplish the mission and send you the resources that we’ve promised!” said the messenger as he turned over to jump off the back of the Chaos Earth Dragon, giving a raised fist salute to Liu Chai.

“Haha, you’re being too modest. With the support of your resources, all the other forces are certainly no match for us. You can then straight away take control over Beiqi,” Liu Chai smiled as he responded.

Yue Yao, who was standing in the team, curled his lips upon hearing that, apparently pleased with Liu Chai’s attitude.

However, he was still planning to carry out a little investigation first.

What he didn’t know was that the players around him were scanning through everyone in the convoy by using their data analyzation menu. Soon, a photo was sent to the chat channel.

Liu\_Xiao\_Wei: “Guys, look who I found (laughing emoji)!”

[Yue Yao (Fledging Ghost King)]:

Character Details: One of the rulers of the Land of the Nine Luminaries, the second child among the nine brothers, owns an army with 2.3 million soldiers.

Character Status: State of disguise, peak

Although Yue Yao disguised himself very well and there was almost no crack of evidence, the players could instantly penetrate his disguise.

“Hahaha, a boss is hiding here, is he playing dumb to take advantage of us (laughing emoji)!”

“Guys, don’t blow it, just let him disguise himself and we’ll see who is the first to be stressed out then... (laughing emoji)”

“Undercover? Spy? (laughing emoji)”

“This Yue Yao, the second brother, is definitely coming here to figure the ins and outs of the matters in Beiqi. Director, let’s cut to the chase and give me an extra drumstick today, I’m going to put on a good show (laughing emoji)!”

Glancing through the comments in the chat, Liu Chai did not set his eyes on Yue Yao directly, who was standing among the convoy. Instead, he smiled and had an exchange of greetings with the messenger. Then, he waved his hand, signaling the soldiers to unload all the resources they brought.

They had divided up this batch of resources in advance, so basically every guild would be able to get a share of it. At the same time, 20 percent of the resources would be delivered to the Rock Ghost King according to their agreement.

What they had to do now was to prove their sincerity once again by putting on a good show to get the rest of the supply deliveries.

Earlier on, Yin Xiaoqi had opened a post on the forum and explained the next script to the players.

This time, not only did the players have to play along, but they also had to play it big for the sake of defrauding and to get a large number of resources. They needed to make preparation to invade the Land of the Nine Luminaries in the future.

“Guards! Serve tea for the messenger!” Liu Chai said with a wave of his hand after leading him into His Excellency’s palace in the Mansion of the Dead.

The players standing by the palace were carefully selected and skilled actors, bestirring themselves at his command, looking as though Liu Chai

was originally the owner of the Mansion of the Dead. No mistakes could arise.

Thereafter, Liu Chai began to confer with the messenger of Yue Yao his opinion about the battles with each and every force in the area.

Liu Chai was well aware of the type of character he ought to act as, thus portraying himself as an extremely arrogant man during their conversation with a combat plan full of loopholes.

Apart from doing it for the sake of the messenger, he was mainly putting on the show for Yue Yao.

Yue Yao was silently observing, feeling rather pleased with Liu Chai's behavior.

Liu Chai is arrogant yet obtuse, obviously nothing but a boorish fellow. In spite of that, this is what I need the most as such a person can be easily driven.

Right at this moment, Gu Yu entered the Great Hall and gave a raised fist salute to Liu Chai.

“Clan leader, the resources are fully dispatched, we are ready to make war at any time!”

Upon hearing that, Liu Chai once again expressed his boorish manner by pounding heavily on the table and uttered, “Great! Since the messenger is here, let's show our sincerity. This time we'll make war with the Hydra King and get revenge on him for daring to provoke me a few days ago!”

“Hold on, Lord of the Mansion of the Dead, it's unfavorable for you to make enemies everywhere. Besides, the battle with the Rock Ghost King remains unsettled...”

Liu Chai waved his hand before the messenger could finish his words.

“I'll take over the North Rocks sooner or later. Messenger, you've no idea that the Hydra King actually came to provoke me with his soldiers a few

days ago. If it wasn't because I promised you that I won't dispatch my troops before receiving the resources, I definitely would've made a life-and-death struggle with them then and there! Now that I've received your resources, the Hydra King is surely no match for my clan!"

As his words settled, Liu Chai shouted his command at Gu Yu, "Get the army ready for battle, we'll dispatch troops to the Ascension Zone and cut off the head of the bald Hydra King!"

Yue Yao, who was hiding among the convoy, perspired out of shame in his heart as he listened to Liu Chai's impetuous statement. Liu Chai's dorky character left him with no words.

Right now, Yue Yao had accepted most parts of the description by the nine messengers when they returned to Nine Yao.

In his opinion, this battle was just in time for him to look into their strengths.

After two hours of preparation, the Army of the Player Clan straight away marched toward the Ascension Zone. In the meantime, the convoy followed behind them under the lead of the messenger.

As they reached the Ascension Zone, the Hydra King's Army of Demonic Snakes was ready in a battle array, waiting for their arrival.

"Bald Hydra King, how dare you provoke me with your army! I'm going to make you pay for it now!" Liu Chai looked at Hydra King from a distance and shouted furiously, forcing his way through the crowd and standing right in front of his army.

Blue veins stood out on the Hydra King's temples upon hearing Liu Chai calling him bald. He was not faking it, but actually really annoyed.

"You want to die? Just as you wish!" following Hydra's growling, the bed of Demonic Snakes held up their bodies and hissed at the army of players.

"Kill!"

Without further ado, the war broke out in an instant this time.

The Disaster Army began its performance once more.

Even though the players were using their own equipment, some of the players were actually armed with the equipment taken from the resources delivered by Yue Yao's convoy, which meant they must not do it as badly as their last act.

They had conferred with the Hydra King ahead of time.

Yet, the Hydra King paid no heed to that. As he said, his Army of Demonic Snakes had a strong reproductive ability and thus it was not a problem at all for him to lose some snakes.

In spite of that, more than half of the overall deaths were those of the players as they didn't mean to overdo it.

The acting was as real as it could be since the players were giving their lives to put on the show.

In the overall condition of the continuing battle, the players still had the upper hand during the battle. Liu Chai's face was taken over by an arrogant expression at the sight of this.

Of course, Yue Yao caught sight of everything, he couldn't help but nod his head.

Now that I have seen it with my own eyes, I have no choice but to believe that the Lord of the Mansion of the Dead is truly arrogant and foolish.

At the same time, Yue Yao was thrilled to see the players gaining an upper hand in the battle. Ultimately, they were all paving the way for him to be the future king.

Seeing the players' growing advantage, Liu Chai retreated to the messenger.

“Messenger, what do you think? My clan is performing quite well after getting your resources, right?”

The messenger of Yue Yao was blushing with shame. Just as he wanted to speak, a roar could be heard from the northwest.

“Bald Hydra King, I, the Rock Ghost King, have come to your rescue... let’s kill the Player Clan!”

Following the roar was a big army of Tree Demons appearing from afar, coming in bushes and stretching for miles.

The Hydra King bared his fangs in an instant the moment he heard the Rock Ghost King shouting.

Who the hell gives you guys the permission to give me a nickname!? And it’s such an awful name!

Yue Yao looked dignified upon seeing the Rock Ghost King. He turned to look at Liu Chai.

However, there was no trace of panic on Liu Chai’s face as he pointed at the Army of Tree Demons with the longsword in his hand.

“Just in time... warriors of my clan, let’s kill all of them!”

Yue Yao was secretly howling in his heart upon hearing that.

Are you a fucking pig!? It’s so obvious that you can’t fight against them! Retreat! You pig!

# Chapter 266 - Yue Yao Showed Himself

## Chapter 266: Yue Yao Showed Himself

Yue Yao grew anxious at the sight of the Army of Tree Demons encircling them from both sides.

He was at an utter loss for words, especially when he saw Liu Chai bursting with confidence.

This is definitely a boorish fellow, so boorish that he has no intelligence at all.

What surprised him more was that all the generals in the Army of the Player Clan actually complied by dispatching another force to charge toward the Army of Tree Demons. It seemed like they didn't have a capacity for combat awareness at all.

Under such circumstances, the players' position had switched from an advantageous one to an inferior one.

The players could feel a surging pressure as they were being attacked on both sides.

Therefore, they started acting again, performing different kinds of death one after another.

At this moment, it came naturally to the players to die as they were at a disadvantage anyway. There was no way they could win.

Since they actually gave their own lives in the performance, Yue Yao didn't discover any flaw in the plan at all. All he did was persistently give the messenger a wink, hoping that he would talk Liu Chai out of continuing the battle.



From Yue Yao's standpoint, these soldiers were his future subordinates. It's such a waste for them to die just like this. His heart ached so much that his face turned green.

The messenger finally got the signal upon receiving Yue Yao's winks. He instantly grabbed Liu Chai, who seemingly intended to rush forward and battle as well.

"Hey... my lord, hold your horses... you mustn't give in to your personal feelings. Now that the Rock Ghost King has joined forces with the HydraKing, we must retreat temporarily from this battle and bide our time..."

Liu Chai's face was congested with anger at his words.

"Retreat? Look how many of my clansmen have died, how could I retreat at this moment? I must kill, kill all of them!"

Both Yue Yao and his messenger were resigned upon hearing that.

"Lord, listen to me, you can't go on with the battle as the current situation is very unfavorable to us! We'll lose for sure if we were to continue! What we need is a long-range plan now!"

"No! I feel uncomfortable if I don't kill the two old fellows, the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King!"

Yue Yao's mouth was twitching as he felt an urge to choke Liu Chai to death.

He's fucking giving up his whole clan just to make himself feel comfortable?

All of a sudden, Yue Yao felt sorry for the Player Clan having such a leader. It's truly a blessing from the Great Emperor of the Underworld that they haven't gotten their clan killed yet.

"Lord, I'm your ally, why would I lie to you? You should really retreat now. How about this, we'll send another batch of resources, so can you just wait

until all your clansmen are equipped with arms?”

“I’ve listened to you last time, you told me to put up with it for three days and I did! Now you’re telling me to wait again, how can I stand with it!”

As he said that, he turned around and yelled in the direction of the battle zone, “Kill them! Behead the old crook Rock Ghost King and the bald Hydra King!”

Looking at Liu Chai getting ready to kill them by himself, the messenger immediately caught hold of him again, “Lord of the Mansion of the Dead, please... I’m imploring you, you really shouldn’t go...”

The messenger was tongue-tied at this moment. I used to think that I had a glib tongue, but I really have no idea what to do while facing Liu Chai’s stubbornness.

“Messenger, I respect you because you represent my future patron. But you can’t possibly stop me this time, I’ll not retreat in this battle!”

As his words settled, Liu Chai added, “We’ve got a very different standpoint because you’re not a lord, so naturally our ways of thinking about questions are entirely different! I believe if the other lords of the Land of the Nine Luminaries were here, they would’ve made the same decision as me!”

Yue Yao felt like crying upon hearing his words.

This dork is actually comparing himself to me and giving a speech that his way of thinking differs from the messenger as they’re talking from a different standpoint. Yue Yao had a strong urge to go forward and beat him up.

Noticing that Liu Chai was preparing to go into the battle zone, the messenger pulled a long face and turned to look at Yue Yao, who was standing among the convoy. He was really at his wit’s end.

After taking a deep breath to recover himself, Yue Yao walked out of the crowd and came over to Liu Chai, “Lord of the Mansion of the Dead, I think...”

“Here’s no place for you to talk! Get lost!” said Liu Chai with an ominous face as he pointed at him using his longsword.

The messenger was rendered speechless.

Yue Yao was stunned as he had long forgotten when the last time was that someone shouted at him.

His veins were standing out on his forehead and he clenched his fist tightly while silently soothing himself. This man is my future subordinate, future subordinate, look at the big picture...

“I...”

“What about you!? I said there’s no place for you to talk here! Who do you think you are, you’re just a guard!” Liu Chai thundered again.

“Shut up! I am Lord Yue Yao of the Land of the Nine Luminaries!” Yue Yao finally had an outburst of anger.

His stature increased in an instant and broke through his suit of armor, revealing his original appearance.

A look of panic crossed Liu Chai’s face at the scene before him.

“Are you really the Great Lord Yue Yao?”

“Yes, Liu Chai, command your clansmen to pull out quickly... you can’t let the battle go on!”

Liu Chai looked hesitant as he listened, “Lord Yue Yao, since you’re here, why don’t you join the battle with me and wipe out the whole army?”

“I’m telling you to retreat, are you pig-headed...” Yue Yao was about to lash out on Liu Chai, but he decided to hold his temper after some

consideration. All in all, this is my future subordinate, I have to save his dignity.

Otherwise, judging from Liu Chai's awful temper, he was really worried that Liu Chai would put up a desperate fight against him after being scolded.

Now that Yue Yao learned of Liu Chai's boorish behavior, he thought there was a very high possibility for that to happen.

"Liu Chai, you mustn't continue battling. Listen to me, I'm the king that will take over Beiqi in the future. Didn't you say you want to pledge loyalty to me? Are you going to disobey me now?"

In reality, Yue Yao had already thought of the idea of dealing with the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King by himself.

However, he had his own cause when he chose to disguise himself. Apart from investigating the background of the Mansion of the Dead's forces, another crucial reason was that he couldn't let others know that he stepped foot into Beiqi.

All in all, Lie Shan was still a boulder above his head. It would be impossible for Lie Shan to let Yue Yao go if he knew the latter had entered Beiqi.

As a result, before he had an idea of whether Lie Shan would return or not, he didn't dare take any risk, let alone blow up his cover.

If it was not for the messenger being thrown into desperation by Liu Chai's stubborn behavior, he never had the intention to reveal himself.

"But... but we can win!" Liu Chai seemed unwilling.

Yue Yao took another deep breath.

"Listen to me, Liu Chai, we need more time to consider the matter to see if we will win or not, but you can't continue the battle now!"

“Pull out your troops first. We have to take it slow since not all the resources have arrived. You have such a large army, there’s no need for you to worry about the chance of winning once the equipment is complete. Listen to me first this time and retreat!”

“Boss Yue Yao, I’ll listen to you this time since you’re the future king!” Liu Chai put on a sad face.

Yue Yao and the messenger heaved sighs of relief when Liu Chai was finally willing to compromise.

“Warriors of my clan, pull out!” Liu Chai made an order to retreat.

Seeing that the Army of the Player Clan began retreating, Yue Yao wiped the sweat off his forehead, nodded, and shrank back to a smaller size again.

“Liu Chai, don’t let the news that I’m at the Mansion of the Dead get out!” Yue Yao reminded him after pondering for a while.

“Why?”

“Don’t question! Just don’t spread the news!”

“Fine, as you wish, you’re the boss!” Liu Chai scratched his head, appearing to be simple and honest.

Although Liu Chai’s boorish behavior gave Yue Yao a headache, he was very satisfied with him. He was exactly like what the messengers described, easily controlled.

Soon after, the army of players retreated while being hunted down by the Armies of Tree Demons and Demonic Snakes, resulting in many casualties along the way.

After the players left, the Hydra King and the Rock Ghost King were sitting together drinking liquor with their arms around each other’s shoulders.

“Bald... I mean Hydra King, dude, how many shares of the resources do you get from the players?” the Rock Ghost King quickly bit back his words.

The Hydra King almost flew into a rage when he heard the word bald and he glared at the Rock Ghost King with an ominous face.

“You better forget that nickname so that we can remain old mates, or else we’ll no longer be friends!”

The Rock Ghost King nodded instantly.

“Slip of the tongue, just a slip of the tongue... tell me how many percent you’re getting!”

“15 percent, what about you?” the Hydra King asked in reply out of curiosity.

The Rock Ghost King slightly squinted upon hearing the answer, but in fact, he was secretly bursting with joy.

“Same, 15 percent... I’m so upset that the players get the largest share!” he sighed.

# Chapter 267 - Brothers Dividing Property

## Chapter 267: Brothers Dividing Property

After returning to the Mansion of the Dead, Yue Yao comforted the frustrated Liu Chai again. Soon later, he led the convoy back home and started to prepare for the next support of resources.

As soon as he reached the Land of the Nine Luminaries, Yue Yao quickly gathered his eight brothers and told them about his encounter in Beiqi.

Yue Yao's description was not much different than that of the nine messengers who first visited Beiqi.

Even if they were to suspect the sayings of the messengers, they would naturally believe the words of Yue Yao, a brother whom they had all grown up with.

Upon understanding the entire situation, they decided to fully aid the uprising of the Mansion of the Dead.

After all, except for giving out some of their resources, it could only benefit them for doing this. Without even a single soldier, they could take down Beiqi. The bargain was absolutely worth it.

Thereafter, a few more waves of resources were continuously sent to the Mansion of the Dead.

However, Yue Yao did not go along in the later trips because it might be risky for him to travel to Beiqi. After knowing the situation at the Mansion of the Dead, he believed fully in Liu Chai, so it was unnecessary for him to face the possibility of being discovered by Lie Shan.

The players were very fruitful for the following days.

Resources from the Land of the Nine Luminaries kept on coming and the players were on cloud nine. All the guilds managed to upgrade their overall power with the materials.

Nevertheless, things had not come to an end, they needed to continue their acting.

In later stages, the players even had a few more conflicts with the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King.

The arriving messengers were very satisfied and thought that everything was going according to their plan.

To them, with the increasing power of the players, the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King would soon be under their command. Following that, their chance to take over Beiqi was just around the corner.

...

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

During this period of time, all of the players had somehow turned into excellent actors and actresses. Every day, their only task was just to act in front of their enemies.

Not having to move a finger, they could get a lot of resources. They were somehow embarrassed to have received so many waves of support from the Land of the Nine Luminaries.

In the meantime, the players did not forget to improve their skills and abilities with the donated resources.

There were various kinds of resources. Many of the players who had been lacking spiritual materials took the chance to perform class advancement, whereas the other players sold some of the spiritual materials in exchange for soul coins. With the soul coins, they were able to buy upgraded equipment in the shop.



All of this was only the first step in Yin Xiaoqi's script because resources were not the only thing that the players needed.

In the following two weeks, wars broke out repeatedly in Beiqi, but Yue Yao in the Land of the Nine Luminaries was like an ant in a hot pot.

Under the attacks of the players, the Hydra King and the Rock Ghost King had become allies. Although with the resources from the Mansion of the Dead, they were able to maintain their advantage in combat, it did not have any practical help with their expansion of territories.

Six waves of resources were sent to them in total. Especially in the sixth wave of resources, Yue Yao had increased the amount threefold in order to speed up the increase of power of the Mansion of the Dead.

Yue Yao was not satisfied with the outcome.

Not only Yue Yao, but the other eight brothers were starting to feel anxious, too.

Even if they had endless resources, they couldn't be supplying them forever.

The nine brothers were gathered in the Dark Heaven Pavilion to discuss the next steps of the plan concerning Beiqi.

As the person-in-charge of matters regarding Beiqi, Yue Yao first voiced out his opinion. He indicated that they should continue the supply of resources to the Mansion of the Dead to grow the power of the Player Clan. That way, they could conquer Beiqi in no time.

Although his eight brothers didn't say it out loud, disagreement with his suggestion was written all over their faces.

The resources belonged to everybody, but once Beiqi was taken down, the victory would only be owned by Yue Yao himself.

As the eldest brother, His Excellency Xing Yao had no second opinion. However, the other seven brothers failed to agree.

“Second brother, I suppose Lie Shan won’t be coming back anymore. Let’s attack them directly!” third brother Ri Yao downed the wine in his glass and smacked it on the table while he bellowed.

“What if Lie Shan comes back then?” Yue Yao knew that they had been dragging this for too long, but he was not confident about launching a direct attack.

“I’ve already been to the Earth Breaking Clan’s camping grounds. The entire campsite has been evacuated, they won’t be back anymore. Second brother, stop hesitating and start taking action. Besides, even if Lie Shan were to return, you can just run back here. Lie Shan won’t dare step onto our land to find death for himself,” fifth brother Jin Yao gave Yue Yao the same advice.

Yue Yao felt irritated and was about to open his mouth to say something, but soon noticed his eighth brother Huo Yao banging on the table at the side.

“Second brother, we’ve been in all kinds of wars together for all these years. Why should we be afraid of Lie Shan? If we continue to drag on, it won’t bring us any advantages. How about this, if you’re not going, I’m going!”

As soon as Huo Yao’s words fell, the rest of the brothers fell into silence.

Their brother’s intention was very clear now. If Yue Yao didn’t have the guts to attack, he would, and if he succeeded, the position of His Excellency would no doubt be his in the future.

If his brother were to take action instead, where would he place himself then? Yue Yao’s face turned green.

“Alright. Since all my brothers have entrusted me with the position of His Excellency, it would be ridiculous if I stayed quiet this time. I’ll send the resources myself this time. I swear to annihilate the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King, then conquer the entire Beiqi!” Yue Yao clenched his teeth.

“Second brother, that’s right. Although Lie Shan is strong, you still have so many brothers behind you. As long as you can get back here in time, I doubt Lie Shan would dare to fight with all of us!” Xing Yao, who had remained silent, finally spoke up.

“I agree with my eldest brother. I’ll be taking the lead this time and I will definitely take over Beiqi!” Yue Yao nodded in agreement.

“Second brother, we are all brothers, don’t be offended. My words were a little too harsh just now and I apologize. I hereby wish you the success in defeating Beiqi and inheriting the throne of His Excellency!” eighth brother Huo Yao lifted his wine glass up in the air.

Seeing that, the other brothers did the same.

“We’re all brothers, how would I take it to heart!?” Yue Yao lifted his wine glass, too, while stomaching all his anger.

Ultimately, it was very risky. If Lie Shan were to return when he was attacking Beiqi, it would be hard to say whether he could come back in one piece.

However, if he was not willing to attack, his eight brothers were obviously unwilling to continue with the free supply of resources.

Faced with the dilemma, Yue Yao could only choose to risk his life for the throne. This would be his only chance.

After the meeting, Yue Yao started with the preparation of resources. Then he gave an order for the assembly of his army, ready for the battle with Beiqi.

Since he had already decided to fight and rule Beiqi, Yue Yao would no doubt bring along his army.

Whether Lie Shan would return, Yue Yao did not care anymore.

On top of that, if he really met Lie Shan and failed to come back, his army would be useless being left behind.

Yue Yao had already grown to accept the worst-case scenario. If he were to succeed, he would be the leader of Beiqi.

Especially after the blessings of the Great Emperor, his power would be immensely heightened. Even if he really had to face Lie Shan by then, it was not entirely impossible for him to escape.

After evaluating all the pros and cons, Yue Yao made the first step.

When everything was ready, Yue Yao led his 2,300,000 soldier army and headed toward Beiqi.

Apart from his jewelry in the Resource Warehouse, he brought along all of the other resources with him.

Since he had left the Land of the Nine Luminaries, they needed to be clear with the division of property even though they were brothers.

Nonetheless, goods like jewelry had not yet been divided among the brothers. Anyone with the need could use them. They could always divide up these treasures when he got back.

# Chapter 268 - We Surrender

## Chapter 268: We Surrender

On this day, a huge army marched forward with great vigor from the boundary of the Burial Grounds toward the Mansion of the Dead.

With the appearance of such a big army, the players were alarmed. However, after a short investigation of the army, they couldn't help but laugh.

Soon, the news of the arrival of Yue Yao's Army was widely spread among all the players.

Liu Chai, who had not gone offline for almost half a month, was now totally into his character. Immediately, he ordered some men to inform the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King to implement the second step of their plan. At the same time, he also brought along some of the players to welcome the future King of Beiqi.

Liu Chai was still a rash fellow in front of Yue Yao. Although a lot of his words were inappropriate, Yue Yao felt that he was an honest person and was very satisfied with him.

Despite that, Yue Yao rejected Liu Chai's invitation to the welcoming banquet held at the Mansion of the Dead.

Time was precious, so he needed to quickly defeat the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King before he was able to take over the power to rule the Mansion of the Dead. Only then could he accept the blessing from the Great Emperor.

To be enthroned as the King of Beiqi was vital to him. Ultimately, after strengthening his power, he would be able to at least escape from Lie Shan's grasp when he returned.

If he were to meet Lie Shan as a Fledgling Ghost Emperor, he would have no chance against him. Even though he had his eight brothers to support him, he might not even be alive to see them after it happened.

So, Yue Yao could no longer wait. He instructed Liu Chai at once to march toward the North Rocks. They should take over the North Rocks first, before advancing to the Ascension Zone, defeating the two largest forces in Beiqi.

Upon hearing that, Liu Chai's expression turned jolly. He immediately agreed and started to assemble the players, preparing themselves to follow Yue Yao's Army toward the North Rocks.

The players were very cooperative, too. After all, everyone would get a share of the resources, so they were more than happy to tag along.

The size of the army was huge this time. Along the journey from the north border of the Mansion of the Dead to the north, the army was shaped like a winding dragon.

Under the leadership of Yue Yao, his army emitted a menacing aura.

Such a movement definitely gave the Rock Ghost King a shock. When Yue Yao's Army arrived at the North Rocks, the Tree Demon Army was already standing their ground.

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

Staring at the Rock Ghost King not far away, Yue Yao's eyes shot out cold glares. In fact, the Rock Ghost King was merely a small trouble to him. The difference in power between them was very obvious. It would be as easy as pie for him to settle this.

“Rock Ghost King, you have been foolish and stubborn. Today, I will take over the North Rocks! Try and stop me if you can!”

With that, Yue Yao retrieved a trumpet from his waist and placed it on his lips.

As he was about to blow, he saw the Rock Ghost King floating in the air while approaching him.

Then, about 300 yards away, the Rock Ghost King stopped and looked at Yue Yao with a terrifying expression.

“You... are you the leader of the Land of the Nine Luminaries?”

Yue Yao’s expression turned cold before nodding his head, “I see that you’re pretty observant!”

“I have never offended you in any way... why are you here!?”

“The Player Clan at the Mansion of the Dead are my subordinates. Why don’t you tell me how you’ve offended me?”

“This... I really had no idea about this... besides, Liu Chai never mentioned that he’s your underling, otherwise, how would I dare to affront you!?” the Rock Ghost King said with much bitterness.

“Now that you already know, I will be taking over your North Rocks!” with that, Yue Yao lifted the trumpet again.

“Stop... Lord Yue Yao, we surrender. I willingly hand over the North Rocks and I plead my allegiance to you!” the Rock Ghost King spoke immediately.

Upon hearing that, Yue Yao was utterly shocked.

He originally thought that the Rock Ghost King would have sworn to fight until the death, but who knew that he would simply surrender?

“Are you really surrendering just like that?” Yue Yao asked suspiciously, still not believing what was happening.

“I know how powerful you are, Lord Yue Yao. If I were to fight with you, I will fall for sure. Why don’t I just surrender?”

Yue Yao was now a little depressed.

He never knew that his title would be so useful until now, but he had no choice but to hide his name previously since he couldn't be exposed. It was not much of his concern anymore at the moment.

Nevertheless, he was rather pleased with the Rock Ghost King's submission.

It was best to have conquered him without having to start a war.

“Alright, Rock Ghost King. You're really smart to have done that, but pleading allegiance is not as easy as it sounds. You know the rules, right?” Yue Yao said with his eyes squinted as if he was waiting to strike the Rock Ghost King down with thunder if he dared to object.

“Of course. Since I'm already your underling, Lord Yue Yao, I've no problem obeying the Soul Oath!” the Rock Ghost King agreed happily.

Truly, the Rock Ghost King didn't care.

This was what Tong Gua had told him. As soon as they boarded the Vibranium Pirate Ship, their souls would be bound to the artifact. In that case, the Soul Oath would not take effect no matter how many times they recited the oath. In addition, they wouldn't be bound to the Six Paths of Reincarnation.

Therefore, the Rock Ghost King calmly consented to Yue Yao's request without any hesitation.

Though he was astonished by the Rock Ghost King's decisive response, Yue Yao still believed that he surrendered due to fear. He was very pleased indeed.

“Alright, we shall put aside the Soul Oath first. Now, lead the Tree Demon Army to the Ascension Zone and help me conquer the Ascension Zone!” Yue Yao nodded with pleasure before turning to the Rock Ghost King and giving the order.

“Right away!” the Rock Ghost King smiled and obeyed.



“Lord Yue, isn’t this too hasty? Aren’t we supposed to kill to our heart’s content and force them to surrender?” Liu Chai asked angrily.

“Since they’ve already surrendered, why should we waste our energy? Besides, the Rock Ghost King has already pleaded his allegiance to me with his Tree Demon Army. This can help grow my army, too!” Yue Yao couldn’t help glaring at the reckless Liu Chai.

“Alright. You’re the boss, whatever you say!” Liu Chai sighed and appeared to be gloomy.

Yue Yao fully understood Liu Chai’s feelings at the moment. After all, the war that had been going on for half a month had finally taken an interesting turn, but Liu Chai did not get to move a muscle because the enemies actually surrendered. Frustration was all he could feel now.

“Liu Chai, we are on the same side. Growing my army is beneficial to you, too!”

After all, Liu Chai was the first person he had gathered under his wing. Yue Yao decided to give him encouragement.

Then, Yue Yao’s Army including the Tree Demon Army marched toward the Ascension Zone.

This time, Yue Yao was fully confident.

With the military strength on his hands now, seizing the Ascension Zone was no big deal.

After many hours on the road, the massive army finally arrived at the Ascension Zone.

Without further ado, Yue Yao blew his trumpet and his army stormed toward the Demon Snake Army in the Ascension Zone.

“Lord Yue Yao, wait... I, the Hydra King, surrender and plead my allegiance to you!”

Facing Yue Yao's Army that came in full fury, the Hydra King who was still trying to memorize his script jumped out of shock. He instantly rose into the air and flew toward Yue Yao as he shouted at the top of his lungs.

Yue Yao blew his horn as a sign of cease-fire.

“What did you say?”

“I surrender and plead my allegiance to you!” the Hydra King shouted again.

Yue Yao was completely confused this time. He had never imagined that he could overpower the two biggest threats in Beiqi without moving a single soldier.

# Chapter 269 - His Excellency Yue Yao

Chapter 269: His Excellency Yue Yao

Yue Yao was not prepared for the surrender of both the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King. It felt like punching a piece of cotton which exerted zero force in return.

Nevertheless, Yue Yao was very happy that they would yield under him. Since his influence in Beiqi had not yet stabilized, it would greatly benefit him to have more support.

Besides, he didn't believe that either the Rock Ghost King or the Hydra King would dare to play any tricks on him as they would have to recite the Soul Oath.

So, Yue Yao went back to the Mansion of the Dead with a complicated feeling.

This time, the Hydra King and the Rock Ghost King followed along, too.

After Yue Yao was led to His Excellency's palace, he cleared the underlings, then spoke to Liu Chai and the other two.

"I believe that you all are loyal to me, but we still have to follow the rules. Please begin the Soul Oath!"

"What Soul Oath?" Liu Chai was dumbfounded.

"You should just recite along with both of us!" Yue Yao didn't suspect the fact that Liu Chai had never heard of the Soul Oath before. In his eyes, Liu Chai was just a fool.

Liu Chai glanced at the Ghost Kings at his side and nodded unconsciously.

They didn't hesitate since they weren't afraid of the oath at all. They started to recite calmly...

“Under the witness of the Six Paths of Reincarnation, I vow to...”

Liu Chai followed along as well.

According to Liu Chai, he was a player. Any kind of soul allegiance in the game would not affect him. So, of course, he was not scared.

On the other hand, Liu Chai was pretty worried about the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King's soul allegiance, but it wasn't entirely hopeless. As long as Yue Yao died, all the problems would be solved.

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

The second step of their plan was to use Yue Yao to their benefit and then to finally kill him.

In terms of power, they would never be able to overpower an existence at the level of a Ghost Emperor. Thus, they had to outsmart him.

After the three of them finished with the Soul Oath, Yue Yao laughed with relief.

He never expected to overthrow Beiqi so easily.

The next thing he would do was to obtain the Great Emperor's blessing and become His Excellency.

“As of now, are there any other forces left in Beiqi?” giving it some thought, Yue Yao asked with concentration.

“Lord Yue Yao, there are two more forces left. One of them is the Demon Capital Army from the jungles of the Cliffs of Desperation, and another one is the Ground Wolf Army that has been living underground throughout the years!” Liu Chai answered.

“Your Majesty, these two armies are not to be concerned about. We’ve already possessed the ultimate power, they have no choice but to surrender. We’ll just look for them and make sure they submit themselves to you!” the Rock Ghost King continued Liu Chai’s words.

Although the Rock Ghost King didn’t care about the Demon Capital or Ground Wolf, the mastermind behind this plan had told him to ensure their safety for they would side with them in the future.

“Alright then, you should take off now. By the time I unite Beiqi, I can ask for the Great Emperor’s blessing!”

After listening to those words, Yue Yao felt so carefree that he couldn’t help laughing out loud.

...

Three days later, Beiqi was united. All the forces, be it powerful or not, were now under Yue Yao’s control and so he naturally became the ruler of Beiqi. The only thing left was the recognition of the Great Emperor.

Due to the existence of Lie Shan, Yue Yao could not tolerate any delay. Under the witness of the elders of various forces and all the players, he recited His Excellency’s Succession Code at the Mansion of the Dead’s center zone.

His Excellency’s Succession Code was no secret in the Underworld. In fact, all the lands had the same ceremony. The purpose of this was for the Great Emperor to detect the recitation of the code and thereafter grant his blessing to the successor.

After the successor passed the test and verification by the Great Emperor, he would be able to become His Excellency and hold the Yin Talisman which was exclusive to the larger domains.

Following Yue Yao’s recitation, everyone including the players could feel an invisible surge of force slowly oppressing them.

Cold sweat covered Yue Yao's forehead as he was extremely nervous.

The Great Emperor symbolized the Underworld's Supreme God.

They were the creators of the rules of operation though they weren't responsible for how the Underworld should run. Among the Six Paths of Reincarnation, they were truly the controller of the Underworld.

Time passed and the recitation of the code was halfway till the end. Then, an illusory brass clock appeared from the void.

It remained still but the ringing of bells could be heard clearly by all the living beings at the scene.

"Enter!" a long and vicious voice emerged.

Yue Yao was surprised when he heard the call. Following that, his body began to float in the air and flew into the brass clock.

In the blink of an eye, the surroundings changed and golden light rays flashed from the surface of the brass clock.

When all the movement stopped, the crowd noticed something. The brass clock, along with Yue Yao, had vanished into thin air.

"Where did he go?" Liu Chai asked curiously.

"I suppose he went to see the Great Emperor, but I'm not sure. I've seen the same thing before, but the former King of Beiqi said nothing after he came back. He only mentioned some tests and verification," the Rock Ghost King shook his head while he answered.

Liu Chai got even more confused after that.

Thus, the wait began.

...

Yue Yao found his body shuttling through a colorful tunnel. The surroundings twisted and turned as he noticed that his body was constantly deforming.

“Yue Yao!” the voice of the Great Emperor appeared.

“The almighty Great Emperor, I am the one they call Yue Yao,” Yue Yao instantly knelt down, but his figure continued to be misshapen. Although he was on his knees, he looked like an extended straw mat with many colors.

“I’ve seen you. You’ve indeed gained the ownership of all the territories in Beiqi, but you have not earned the recognition of these people!”

“Great Emperor, how can this be? All of them pledged loyalty to me!” Yue Yao lifted his head and shouted after having a great shock to his heart.

“Nonetheless, Beiqi has been without a king for some time. Since you’ve successfully conquered all the territories, you shall have the right to become His Excellency. Now, take the Heart Cultivation Test!”

Along with the Great Emperor of Dong Yue’s words, everything around him turned blank...

When he came back to his senses, Yue Yao heard the Great Emperor of Dong Yue’s voice again.

“Yue Yao, you have passed the Heart Cultivation Test. Go back now!”

Yue Yao was confused because he had completely forgotten what had just happened.

Regardless, he had already passed the test, so all Yue Yao could feel right now was happiness. He opened his mouth, wanting to express some gratitude, but soon he saw that the tunnel became extremely deformed. When everything became clear again, he found himself in the sky above the Mansion of the Dead.

In front of the shocking gazes from all the forces, the brass clock re-appeared. Accompanied with its slow and steady sways, thunderous bell rings resounded across the Land of Beiqi. All of them felt the shudder in their souls.

At that time, a cylinder of golden light materialized from the void and wrapped around Yue Yao.

Under the baptism of the cylinder of golden light, Yue Yao smiled ecstatically.

He could feel the loosening of his realm and the empowerment of his soul power along with the brushes of the golden light.

Rumble!

With a loud noise, Yue Yao's body surface was lit with golden fire.

The players who were observing Yue Yao's menu witnessed the scene and it caused an uproar.

“Holy shit, he's surpassed the Intermediate Ghost Emperor!”

“It must be a cheat by the Great Emperor. It's so cool. Don't tell me that he's the biggest boss in the game now?”

“I want a blessing, too, motherfucker. If we all could level up directly in the Ghost Emperor Realm, then we could level up a few hundred times at once!”

“Jealousy! Envy! Hatred!”

“Killing Yue Yao would surely drop materials that could cost a fortune! I'm so excited!”

“Someone please tell me which realm is this Great Emperor in? Is it a realm after the Ghost Emperor Realm?”



“The Great Emperor might be in a realm that hasn’t been unlocked yet. We will surely know when we get stronger. Everybody, be patient!”

“Yes, let’s kill this Yue Yao first before talking about any other realms. Let’s not reach for something that’s out of our grasp and just focus on growing bit by bit!”

...

Amid the player’s heated discussion, Yue Yao’s upgrade did not end. With another loud bang, his power was instantly upgraded to that of a Greater Ghost Emperor.

The Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King had seen these happenings before and appeared to be calm.

They had experienced it before and from Lu Yan, they heard that the Great Emperor’s blessing had no relation with the actual realm the person was in. As long as he hadn’t achieved divine status, he could be upgraded by two realms. Back then, Lu Yan who was stuck at the Intermediate Ghost King level also received a blessing from the Great Emperor and reached the Ghost King Peak. Since then, his power had grown so much that it was only half a step away from the former King of Beiqi who was a Ghost Emperor.

Because of this, many were crazy about being king. After all, an upgrade by two realms could hardly be achieved by years of cultivation. Also, simply becoming His Excellency could save them a lot of tough days.

In other words, under the feet of His Excellency were countless bodies of his competitors, and no one was an exception.

After the golden light disappeared, Yue Yao felt like he had been reborn. Endless power was brewing inside of his body as if he could break the sky and ground with a single punch.

Then, a triangular-shaped Yin Talisman which was shining with black luster slowly became visible before him.

With the utmost satisfaction, Yue Yao grabbed it and he could still sense the remaining breaths of the Great Emperor on it. He then kneeled down in the air and kowtowed toward the slowly fading brass clock.

“Thank you for your blessing, Great Emperor!”

The players below him started to chatter away in the chat channel, but no one seemed to be in a panic.

This was because helping Yue Yao to get stronger was also part of Yin Xiaoqi’s plan.

Apart from that, the existence of Yue Yao was indispensable in the war with the Nine Luminaries!

Therefore, the rest of the arrangements could only go on after his power increased.

At that time, both Yue Yao and the players were overjoyed.

Somehow, they could already imagine the moment when Yue Yao found out he was set up and happy smiles were written all over their faces.

...

Underworld, in the Great Hall of the Six Paths of Reincarnation.

A humongous, black sculpture stood in the Great Hall. At the palm of the sculpture’s hand was a brass-colored clock.

The sculpture was sometimes clear, sometimes blurry, and surrounding it were lines of different colors.

There was nothing special about the lines, but each and every one of them represented the Supreme Law that determined the structure of the Underworld. Within the lines, there was unlimited power of the law. Although the lines seemed to be only circling around the sculpture, innumerable thin space cracks were created.

“Was it her?”

There was no response as the voice echoed within the Great Hall.

“I sensed her breath, but I can’t be sure!” another voice sounded.

“The Underworld without her is not complete. Will she return?”

“I don’t know. Maybe she will and maybe she won’t!”

“If she isn’t here when the ones who left come back, what should we do?”

“Burn my life with fire and fight for her! As long as she exists, the Underworld will not vanish!” the voice said again.

“Feng Du, it seems like you’ve prepared yourself.”

“I see that you have, too!”

Then, the two voices disappeared at the same time. The Six Paths of Reincarnation returned to silence once again.

# Chapter 270 - The Beginning Of A Good Show

Chapter 270: The Beginning Of A Good Show

Beiqi, the Mansion of the Dead.

After Yue Yao became king, his heart was filled with arrogance.

He had been longing for this supreme glory for so long. However, there could only be one king in the Land of the Nine Luminaries. With his eldest brother Xing Yao there, he would never have this opportunity.

Now he had obtained the status along with an incredible power that he had yearned for.

At the time, Yue Yao was no doubt full of himself.

In the following days, Yue Yao learned the situations all around Beiqi through Liu Chai, the Rock Ghost King, and the leaders of all regions.

Above all, one issue got Yue Yao's attention.

The Death Clan that was continuously attacking from the East Side of the Underworld Sea.

Because of the happenings with the Land of the Nine Luminaries, the players had given up on the defense of the sea. This, in turn, led to constant ambushes by the Death Clan at the Liuli Coast, which caused considerable damage to the ecology of Beiqi.

When Yue Yao heard from Liu Chai that the Death Clan was one of the Sea King's forces, he could already sense a big headache coming his way.

Nevertheless, he would have to solve this problem since he had already become His Excellency of Beiqi.

In an instant, Yue Yao decided to visit the Sea King himself and resolve these matters through negotiation.

Little did he know that this was exactly what the players wanted him to do.

...

Barren Grassland at the Western border of Beiqi.

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

A resource convoy along with Yue Yao's Army, the players, and other forces in Beiqi marched from the Land of the Nine Luminaries.

To Yue Yao, this trip was vital because the latest batch of fresh resources was all his property, including various kinds of treasures.

After he became the King of Beiqi, the property was divided among his brothers. Of course, Yue Yao wouldn't just leave the treasures there. He chose to bring all of them to Beiqi.

Although the resources were very important, Yue Yao didn't lead the operation because he was never worried that anything bad could happen.

The Nine Luminaries and Beiqi were both on his side. Besides, the players, the Rock Ghost King, and the other forces had pledged their loyalty to him with their souls, so they couldn't possibly betray him in any way.

Under such a foolproof condition, Yue Yao went out to sea without any worries.

50,000 escort members moved toward the Mansion of the Dead on a path recently created along the Barren Grassland.

As the supreme commander of this escort team, Ghost General Mad Tooth couldn't stop scanning and observing the situation of his surroundings.

Although the escort this time would not easily fail since all the forces in Beiqi had already been overpowered and they would definitely not betray their new king, he still had to be careful. As Yue Yao said, there might be some other dark forces in Beiqi that had yet to surrender.

As they left the border of the Barren Grassland and arrived at the Burial Grounds, the sight in front of them instantly widened.

Mad Tooth let out a sigh of relief. If there was an ambush, the Barren Grassland, which was overgrown with tall grasses and weeds, would be the best choice. Now that they had left that area, the level of danger would automatically decrease.

Just as Mad Tooth waved his hand to ask the team to keep up, heavy footsteps were heard behind them coming from the Barren Grassland.

Mad Tooth immediately turned around to look at the direction of the Barren Grassland. Among the blades of wild grass, he saw countless silhouettes moving toward them.

When the silhouettes were finally visible, Mad Tooth's eyes narrowed. He was more than familiar with these people. They were the Fire Warriors of Lord Huo Yao, the younger brother of Yue Yao.

Mad Tooth was absolutely shocked by the scene in front of him. With a smack on his Chaos Earth Dragon, he hurriedly rushed toward the back of the escort team. He shouted, "Quick! Yue Yao Army... escort the resources to safety... the rest of us cover for them!"

In Mad Tooth's opinion, the resources were far more important than the escorts. So, no doubt they had to protect them first.

Nonetheless, at that time, many more silhouettes emerged from the floor cracks of the Burial Grounds ahead.

Without exception, they were all the Fire Warriors of Huo Yao's Army.

“How dare you! These are the resources of His Excellency Yue Yao. Your lord and His Excellency are brothers, how dare you rob us!” Mad Tooth roared at the Fire Warriors who were coming at them from all directions.

All Mad Tooth could hear at the moment was his madly beating heart.

There were at least a few hundred thousand Fire Warriors around them now. It would be a difficult task to break through the encirclement, so he was thinking he could scare them away with His Excellency Yue Yao’s title.

Actually, Mad Tooth had already imagined a few plunder scenarios in the middle of their journey, but none of those involved Yue Yao’s brothers.

“So what if they’re brothers? Can’t we rob you now?” a burly man in red armor asked and walked out from the crowd while holding his sword. Seemingly, he was the leader of Huo Yao’s Army.

“When Yue Yao finds out about this, he won’t let any of you go!” Mad Tooth was already panicking on the inside, but he held his ground, trying to intimidate the plunderers.

“Not a single soul will find out if all of you died, right?”

The burly man gave his sword a swing and the Fire Warriors charged toward the escort team.

“Supreme Commander Mad Tooth, you should leave now. Go back to the Mansion of the Dead and get reinforcements!” Chen Ziyu, who was one of the members of the escort team, shouted at Mad Tooth.

“Then, what about you all?”

“They are planning to kill everybody and leave no loose ends. Someone has to bring the news back! You’re the strongest one here, so you’re the only one who can make it out alive!”

With one punch, Chen Ziyu managed to drive off two Fire Warriors standing nearest to him.

While gritting his teeth, Mad Tooth glanced deeply at Chen Ziyu, turned around and ran toward the direction of the Mansion of the Dead.

It was obvious that this army had done all of their preparations before attacking them. It was impossible or even impractical for them to retreat along with all those resources.

Besides, Mad Tooth only had one thought in his mind right now, to bring the news back to Yue Yao.

“Where do you think you’re going?!”

The burly man who was the leader of the Fire Warriors jumped and pounced toward Mad Tooth.

Mad Tooth quickly reacted by turning his body around and blocked the incoming strike with his spear.

“Surround him, don’t let him run away. No one is allowed to leave here today!”

Obedying his orders, the surrounding Fire Warriors swarmed over and surrounded Mad Tooth.

As a counterattack, Mad Tooth reached out his hand and hit the Chaos Earth Dragon he had been riding on. With his spear up high, he wanted to lunge his way out.

However, the Chaos Earth Dragon fell a few yards ahead due to the intensive attack. With that, Mad Tooth was thrown off his ride.

Facing the endless attacks from the Fire Warriors, Mad Tooth fought hard to kill any approaching enemy. Despite that, it was not possible to break this circle.

Then, the players under the lead of Chen Ziyu and the Tree Demons rushed forward from the back. With the sacrifice of a large number of people, they finally met with Mad Tooth after storming their way in.



“Supreme Commander Mad Tooth, let me open a way out for you. Run, you must get out of here!”

“Okay!” Mad Tooth was so touched that he immediately agreed without further ado.

With the help of all the players, Mad Tooth managed to finally charge his way out of the encirclement, but right when they were about to escape, the leader of the Fire Warriors stood before them.

“Don’t you dare run away!”

“Get lost!”

Both of them went into combat.

At that time, Chen Ziyu shouted in the live chat channel, “Everybody, charge! Let’s finish this last bit of acting and help him escape!”

After listening to Chen Ziyu’s words, the rest of the players pounced toward the Fire Supreme Commander crazily to delay him and help Mad Tooth with his escape.

Without the obstruction of the Fire Warriors leader, Mad Tooth ran all the way toward the Mansion of the Dead without even looking back.

“Don’t let him escape, chase after him!” their commander bellowed as he continued to kill the players.

At that instant, a small group of Fire Warriors separated themselves from the encirclement and pursued Mad Tooth.

Seeing that, Mad Tooth increased his speed even more.

He knew that if he was ever surrounded again, he wouldn’t be able to get out of there alive.

...

After Mad Tooth could no longer be seen, the Fire Supreme Commander suddenly waved at Chen Ziyu who was still charging toward him.

“Stop, stop, stop. It’s enough. If you cut me again, I’ll definitely fight back!”

After saying that, the body of the Fire Supreme Commander gradually changed.

# Chapter 271 - The Sea King's Astonishment (Part 1)

Chapter 271: The Sea King's Astonishment (Part 1)

When Mad Tooth was too far to be seen, the Fire Supreme Commander's body gradually morphed back to his real shape. Accompanied by the disseminating black mist, Xiao Tian's face appeared.

Seeing Xiao Tian, Chen Ziyu smiled and put away his weapon.

The Fire Warriors around them suddenly joined the laughing party as well.

This was the second step of their plan, to provoke the relationship between Yue Yao and his brothers in the Land of the Nine Luminaries.

After Yue Yao officially became His Excellency, the players originally wanted to use a prop that was prestigious in the shop called the Mimic Card. It could easily create a conflict between Beiqi and the Nine Luminaries.

However, Liu Chai found out from Yue Yao that he still had a batch of treasures stored in his palace warehouse and wished to retrieve them.

This undoubtedly gave the players a new goal. Therefore, Yin Xiaoqi changed the script on the fly.

In order to rob this batch of resources, the players had done a lot of preparation. First, they deliberately got close to several of the commanders in Yue Yao's Army. From them, they found out that the younger brother Huo Yao had the worst relationship with Yue Yao among all of his brothers.

This piece of information was vital. Since the players already had the plan to cause some conflict, they naturally chose the one who would most likely take advantage of Yue Yao.

After this, Yin Xiaoqi also considered that the presence of Yue Yao would be a variable, fearing that there would be problems in the middle of the robbery. So, Liu Chai fooled Yue Yao to go negotiate with the Sea King in the Underworld Sea.

When all preparations were done, the players' plan was put to action.

The moment when the escort team set off from the Land of the Nine Luminaries after collecting the resources, the convoy's situation was updated by the players in the forum in real-time. The coordinates of the escort team and the distribution of men were completely transparent to their eyes.

With Yue Yao away, the plundering of the resources became an easy task to the players who had a huge advantage.

On top of that, the most important part of this round was to let loose a person whom Yue Yao trusted the most as this was exactly the key to creating a conflict. Thus, the scene where Chen Ziyu and the others pretended to save Mad Tooth from the encirclement was in order to light the fuse.

Having Xiao Tian there was to make sure that the act was more lifelike. After all, it was not possible to have an army with a few hundred thousand warriors running around without a Ghost General.

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

Yue Yao hadn't yet met Xiao Tian, so it was best for him to perform this task.

At that moment, the players who were roleplaying as the Fire Warriors with their Mimic Cards, turned their attention to the resources.

"Take it away. Nothing can be left behind, take the cart, too," with Wu Guoyi's words, the surrounding players began to unload the resources and threw them into their inventory.

With everything set, Wu Guoyi started to get the players to go toward the direction of the Barren Grassland.

This was because their mission wasn't over yet. There was another critical step yet to be taken.

...

Kuilong Ocean, Xin Mo Island, the Great Hall of the Mu Te Sea Nation.

The Sea King was looking at Yue Yao without saying a word.

He really wanted to laugh, especially after he heard from Yue Yao that he'd become His Excellency of Beiqi.

He and the Player Clan were old acquaintances. He believed the part where the Rock Ghost King, the Hydra King, and the other forces surrendered to him. But for the Player Clan to be loyal to anyone, he refused to believe that.

After all, what was the Player Clan? They were total psychos! In their eyes, the enemies' strength, whether strong or weak, didn't matter at all. As long as they were provoked, they would come at you endlessly like a virus.

"Yue Yao, you better go back. Come and find me when you have really taken down Beiqi!" the Sea King shook his head helplessly.

After gaining the power of the Death Clan, the Sea King's strength was now very close to the Ghost Emperor Peak. He had no fear of Yue Yao at all, not to mention that they were in his territory anyways.

"Sea King, I am already His Excellency of Beiqi!"

Seeing that the Sea King did not seem to believe him, Yue Yao pulled out Beiqi's Yin Talisman as proof.

The Sea King was shocked after noticing the Yin Talisman, but his expression remained weird.

The Player Clan is under him now? How is that possible!?

Even after Yue Yao had presented the Yin Talisman, the Sea King still had a feeling that something wasn't right.

If it was so simple to subdue the Player Clan, he would have taken all of them down when he invaded Beiqi back then. Therefore, he smelled something fishy about this.

“His Excellency Yue Yao, I believe you now, but could you tell me how you conquered Beiqi?” the Sea King couldn't help asking curiously after giving it some thought.

The purpose of Yue Yao's visit to the Kuilong Ocean was to resolve the crisis of the Death Clan's invasion. He had no intention to hide anything from the Sea King, so he told him everything. After all, it was never a secret.

After listening to Yue Yao's story, the Sea King laughed out loud.

Both Yue Yao and Hei Sui, who was standing at the side, got confused by the Sea King's laughter.

“Yue Yao, oh, Yue Yao. You are quite big-hearted,” the Sea King patted his thighs and appeared to be very delighted.

“Sea King, what do you mean by that?” Yue Yao frowned involuntarily.

“Do you understand each of the forces in Beiqi?” looking at Yue Yao, the Sea King chuckled as he asked again.

“Of course. After I became His Excellency, I learned about all of them!”

“Oh? Then, what do you think of the few clans in Beiqi?”

In his conversation with Yue Yao, the Sea King was trying to slowly bring the topic to the Player Clan.

“The Player Clan?” speaking of them, Liu Chai’s dumb face came into Yue Yao’s mind.

Thinking about it, Yue Yao decided that there was nothing to hide, so he spoke truthfully regarding his opinion on the Player Clan.

After listening to Yue Yao’s explanation, the Sea King let out a good laugh once more.

The Player Clan that Yue Yao had described was totally different from the Player Clan that he had met.

The Sea King knew how cunning the Player Clan was. They had used different maritime tactics to plunder his treasures and resources. Because of that, the Sea King could no longer bear it and launched a full-fledged war against Beiqi.

On the other hand, in Yue Yao’s description, the Player Clan was a clan of stupid, inflexible, and rash cowards.

At that moment, the Sea King was already sure of one thing.

This Yue Yao must have been fooled by the Player Clan!

Although he was not sure what the Player Clan wanted to do, the Sea King had a feeling that Yue Yao wouldn’t end well.

However, the Sea King was very glad to watch the infighting of Beiqi, so he smiled as he said, “His Excellency Yue Yao, I believe you now. Since we are not enemies, the Death Clan will retreat!”

“Thank you!”

After confirming that the Death Clan would not attack again, Yue Yao was relieved. With Beiqi’s current strength, it was not a smart move to go against the Sea King. It was best to negotiate for a peaceful settlement.

After a little more small talk, Yue Yao finally got up and left. The Sea King also sent him away politely.

...

After Yue Yao left, the Sea King, who was back at the Great Hall, hooted with laughter.

He couldn't hold it in anymore. In his opinion, this Yue Yao was a big fool and was about to be deceived while still feeling good about himself.

“Your Majesty, why are you so happy?” Hei Sui questioned cluelessly and curiously.

“You all know about the Player Clan, right? Oh, the clan that came to the banquet on Langya Island and ended up in a battle with us!”

“Of course we know. They are very strong indeed. Oh yes, Your Majesty. You mentioned before about them being the clan of Beiqi...” at that moment, Hei Sui and the others suddenly thought of something.

“Yes, they are my biggest enemy, but now Yue Yao is telling me that he overpowered Beiqi!”

A smile broke out on the Sea King's face.

“Lord King of Sea, what you mean is that His Excellency of Beiqi is about to be...” Hei Sui was stunned as he spoke.

At that moment, a few of the lords including Hei Sui understood all of a sudden why the Sea King was on cloud nine.

Ruling Beiqi without fully knowing the Player Clan, they couldn't help but mourn for half a second for Yue Yao. They knew that this fellow might be dead very soon.



# Chapter 272 - Outbreak Of Events (Part 2)

## Chapter 272: Outbreak Of Events (Part 2)

After settling the invasion problem of the Death Clan, Yue Yao galloped back in the direction of Beiqi.

He was very satisfied with himself at the moment. The Sea King was willing to withdraw his troops, which at least meant that he was still rather prestigious.

After entering the boundary of Beiqi, he skimmed toward the Mansion of the Dead, ready to see whether his treasures had arrived or not.

However, when he reached the sky above Mansion of the Dead, he noticed an uproar underneath him. A large number of people were gathering and it looked like they were about to go to war.

Yue Yao's heart tightened and he swiftly returned to the palace at the Mansion of the Dead.

Yue Yao's appearance suddenly attracted the attention of all the leaders of Beiqi's many forces.

Mad Tooth stepped forward and kneeled in front of Yue Yao.

“Your Majesty, our treasures have been robbed!”

Looking at the miserable Mad Tooth, Yue Yao's heart skipped, “What? Robbed!?”

“Under the protection of all forces, especially the Player Clan, only I managed to escape and return. All the other escort members were

annihilated. Your Majesty, you have to avenge them!” speaking that out loud, Mad Tooth couldn’t help but lower his head in reverence.

“Impossible... who did it? Are they looking for death!?” Yue Yao’s aura thickened while his face turned ferocious.

The treasures were his life savings. For them to be robbed now, Yue Yao could only feel anger rising up in his chest.

“Your Majesty, it was your brother Lord Huo Yao! He...”

Smack!

Before Mad Tooth could finish, Yue Yao already gave the ground a strike.

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

“Think very carefully before you say your next words!”

Yue Yao said slowly while staring fiercely at Mad Tooth.

Although Huo Yao was not the closest to him among all his brothers, they were still brothers. He wouldn’t believe that Huo Yao would do such a thing.

“Your Majesty, I swear with my life. It was indeed the Fire Warrior Army under Lord Huo Yao!”

“Swear with your life? Then, you shall die!” Yue Yao’s eyes were filled with only rage. He lifted his hand and was about to hit again.

“Your Majesty, don’t be rash. Let him finish talking first!” the Rock Ghost King and the others hurried forward to persuade him.

After taking a deep breath to calm himself down, Yue Yao withdrew his palm and asked again, “I’ll give you another chance. Tell me... who instructed you to say this!?”

“Your Majesty, I have followed you since I was a child... none of the things that I’ve said are false!” Mad Tooth, who had both his knees on the ground, clenched his teeth as he insisted.

“Your Majesty, I have also seen the Fire Warrior Army. They seemed to want to kill Mad Tooth to avoid any loose ends. They chased him all the way until the Mansion of the Dead’s border. But after we appeared, they stopped with their pursuit. The saddest thing is that only Mad Tooth escaped. The Player Clan, the Tree Demon Clan, and the Demon Snake Clan from the resource convoy didn’t make it back!”

Yue Yao turned his gaze toward the man who spoke.

This person was a subordinate he trusted fully. He was the captain of his army called General Crescent Moon.

Hearing what General Crescent Moon had said, Yue Yao fell into silence.

A while later, Yue Yao asked again, “How many people saw the attack of the Fire Warrior Army, and where were all of you when it happened!?”

“At that time, Liu Chai, the Rock Ghost King, the Hydra King, Demon Capital, Ground Wolf, and the other leaders of the Beiqi forces were drinking with us here, celebrating the unity of Beiqi. No one left during the ceremony. When Mad Tooth returned, all of us saw the Fire Warriors chasing after him...” General Crescent Moon answered honestly.

By then, Yue Yao had almost believed what Mad Tooth had said because General Crescent Moon would never deceive him.

“Mad Tooth, tell me every detail of the incident!”

“Yes!”

Then, Mad Tooth repeated the entire process, from the point where he collected the resources from the palace, escorted them along the Barren Grassland, and finally got ambushed by the Fire Warriors.

Yue Yao's expression was uncertain when he listened to Mad Tooth's narration.

No matter how much he wanted to deny it, the evidence was solid. All evidence was pointing at his eighth brother Huo Yao.

As he remembered the time when Huo Yao said he wanted to become His Excellency, Yue Yao suddenly understood why he had done this. Fury arose in his heart.

"Oh yes, why are you guys gathering the troops!? Where on earth is Liu Chai?" Yue Yao furrowed his brows as he looked around.

"Your Majesty, hurry and stop Liu Chai. He has brought his soldiers to the Barren Grassland, saying that he will avenge his dead brothers. We couldn't stop him!" General Crescent Moon pleaded on one knee.

"Nonsense!"

Although he was enraged, Yue Yao wasn't one bit doubtful of Liu Chai's actions.

Based on how much he knew Liu Chai, this behavior fit his character very well.

Nevertheless, Liu Chai's reckless behavior before he even discussed it with his brothers would make him appear very passive.

Thinking of this, Yue Yao's figure immediately flew up to the sky and sped toward the direction of the Nine Luminaries.

General Crescent Moon and the others followed behind Yue Yao.

Seeing this, the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King exchanged glances with each other calmly before smirks could be seen on their faces.

From the initial set up of Liu Chai's hasty character in Yue Yao's heart until the subsequent plunder event, the plan had proceeded in an orderly manner. The next thing they needed to do was to wait for the outbreak of events.

...

At the border between the Land of the Nine Luminaries and the Barren Grassland, a group of players were running in the direction of Beiqi. Numerous Fire Warriors were in pursuit of them from behind.

Just as the Fire Warrior Army was about to catch up with the players, millions of players brought by Liu Chai suddenly emerged from the direction of the Barren Grassland.

Then, a few hundred thousand of the escaping players abruptly changed their direction and charged toward the Fire Warriors.

A battle broke loose.

Faced with the army of players far exceeding their own number, the Fire Warrior Army was beaten until they started to retreat.

However, Liu Chai didn't stop. He ordered the players to chase after them and form a circle around them, besieging the group of Fire Warriors there.

The killing spree continued. Just then, a figure approached from the distant sky.

“Liu Chai, stop!”

Following that, the figure dropped from the sky and stood beside Liu Chai, holding his shoulder down with one hand.

“I'm asking you to stop, Liu Chai!”

At the time, Liu Chai's eyes were red, “His Excellency Yue Yao, they took our resources and killed my brothers. Why should I stop!?”

“I smell something fishy in this, let me understand the situation first. As long as I can prove that it's their doing, I will avenge your dead brothers and find myself justice, too!”

Looking at Liu Chai who was grimacing, Yue Yao was angry, too. Then, he instantly dashed toward the leader of the Fire Warrior Army, grabbed his neck, and lifted him in the air.

“I know you... General Fire, right? Now, I’ll give you a chance to explain yourself!”

“Cough cough... Lord Yue Yao, they invaded our camp, that’s why we were after them!”

Hearing that, a cold light flashed across Yue Yao’s eyes.

Right then, a few more figures appeared from behind and landed beside Yue Yao.

“Your Majesty, what this person said is totally unreliable. When Liu Chai departed with the Player Clan, we were all present. It’s impossible for him to have reached the Nine Luminaries and also attack the Fire Warrior Army’s Camp in such a short time. It’s ridiculous!”

The one who spoke was General Crescent Moon, who was most trusted by Yue Yao.

“General Fire, do you really wish to die? Speak the truth, my eighth brother Huo Yao ordered you to rob me of my treasures... am I right!?” Yue Yao was about to kill him.

Even though he was still considerate of his brother, Huo Yao’s actions were too much for him.

“Lord Yue Yao, it’s true that they invaded our campground first. We only went after them when we found out about it. I really have no idea about any robbery!”

Yue Yao shook his head in disappointment as he stared at General Fire.

All the evidence was conclusive, yet General Fire refused to admit it.

Liu Chai was at the Mansion of the Dead before he came with his soldiers after knowing the news of the plunder. General Crescent Moon and the others could prove his presence.

Besides, the fact that General Fire led his army into the Barren Grassland was the same as Mad Tooth described. Yue Yao was furious now.

Hack!

Without hesitation this time, Yue Yao broke General Fire's neck.

All his underlings were at the scene. If he remained indecisive after being bullied, he had no right to be His Excellency, not to mention standing tall in front of his subordinates.

# Chapter 273 - It Was Evident (Part 3)

## Chapter 273: It Was Evident (Part 3)

Witnessing General Fire's death, all the warriors of Huo Yao's Army took a step backward. This time, they were truly terrified.

Although Yue Yao had left the Land of the Nine Luminaries, his menacing aura continued to linger all over. None of the soldiers had the audacity to rebel against him.

"You! Step forward!" Yue Yao pointed at a Ghost General among them.

"Lord Yue Yao... we followed our enemy here and have no idea what treasures you're talking about!" the warrior explained nervously.

Split!

Not wanting to waste his time debating with the warrior, Yue Yao drew out a streamer and decapitated the man.

"You! Step forward!"

Following Yue Yao's order, another Ghost General stumbled forward. Just as everyone expected, none of his answers could please Yue Yao, and he was killed by Yue Yao on the spot.

"Great! All of you are very loyal. I'll have to personally speak to my brother to get an answer!"

Yue Yao turned to look at the many leaders of Beiqi who were at his heels.

He commanded, "Follow me to Huo Yao's military base in my homeland!"



Then, Yue Yao threw a glance at Liu Chai who was apparently still angry.

“Liu Chai, since you’ve been loyal to me, and your tribe members lost their lives protecting Mad Tooth and helping him escape, I’ll definitely compensate you for your loss! Don’t worry!”

“Lord Yue Yao, let’s head for Huo Yao’s military base. They won’t be able to refute it once we find the treasures!” Liu Chai yelled furiously.

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

“Yes! Let’s go!”

Following Yue Yao’s order, the troops marched toward the Land of the Nine Luminaries.

At that moment, Yue Yao was enraged. Despite not having a good relationship with Huo Yao, they were, after all, brothers. They had the same blood running in their veins.

However, he couldn’t take Huo Yao’s actions lying down anymore. Huo Yao seemed to have never considered their relationship as he committed such wrongdoings.

He had just been installed as His Excellency of Beiqi. In order to strengthen his footing, he had to handle this issue in a decent manner. If he swept this under the rug, his inferiors wouldn’t willingly submit to him. It would be just as though he had lost all authority being their king.

...

At the military base of Huo Yao’s Army.

Under Yue Yao’s lead, the millions of players finally arrived at their destination. Immediately alarmed, Huo Yao’s Army assembled, thinking that they were being blitzed by their enemy.

The warriors of Huo Yao’s Army were stunned when they saw Yue Yao.

“Huo Yao!” Yue Yao yelled and the whole military base was swamped by an impactful sound wave.

“Lord Yue Yao, Lord Huo Yao is probably in a meeting with the other lords at the Dark Heaven Pavilion. He’s not at the military base right now!” Huo Lang the Ghost King, the general of the military base, cupped his hands together as he reported to Yue Yao.

“Huo Lang, tell me honestly. Did you rob my assets? Have you hidden my treasures in the Resource Warehouse of your military base?”

Huo Lang’s heart skipped a beat.

He hurriedly explained, “Lord Yue Yao, that’s not possible! We don’t have the audacity to do that. Moreover, our Resource Warehouse is certainly not capable of containing your costly treasures!”

Seeing how hostile Yue Yao was, Huo Lang finally realized that things were not in an amicable state. Yue Yao was definitely not here to casually visit Lord Huo Yao.

“Open the door of your Resource Warehouse! I must search it!” Yue Yao glared at Huo Lang as he continued to push Huo Lang with his menacing aura.

“Lord Yue Yao... this... this doesn’t seem right. Lord Huo Yao hasn’t returned yet...”

“Go and get him now! Tell him that I’m looking for him! But I’ll have to search the Resource Warehouse now!” Yue Yao spoke as he beckoned Liu Chai and the team of players forward. They forcefully marched in.

Owing to Yue Yao’s presence, none of the warriors of Huo Yao’s Army dared to fight back. They could only watch helplessly as the foreign troops invaded their military base.

“Lord Yue Yao...”

“Save it! Get Huo Yao. Bring him here as soon as possible!”

“Yes!” Huo Lang had no choice but to agree to Yue Yao. He dared not disobey or rebuke him.

When the crew arrived before the Resource Warehouse, Yue Yao coerced the warriors into opening the door and commanded, “Liu Chai, bring them into the warehouse and run a thorough search!”

“No worries, boss!” Liu Chai answered immediately. He waved his hand and gestured his team of players into the warehouse.

When Yue Yao was about to enter the warehouse, a streamer of light streaked across the sky, “Second brother, what are you doing?”

“Eighth brother, I’m going to ask you the same question! What are you doing?” Yue Yao glared at the figure that was descending from the sky with an intimidating aura.

The stream of light disappeared as Huo Yao materialized beside Yue Yao.

“Second brother, I don’t know what you’re talking about. However, it’s very rude for you to trespass on my military base and enter my Resource Warehouse without permission! You’re completely ignoring my authority here!” Huo Yao scowled at Yue Yao defiantly and furiously.

“Tell me. Did you rob my treasures?” Yue Yao tried his best to stay calm before he continued questioning Huo Yao.

“Second brother, are you kidding me? Why would I rob your treasures? Didn’t we agree on dividing the treasures? Haven’t your subordinates taken away your share?”

“Fine! I’m not here to debate with you. Let’s wait for Liu Chai!” Yue Yao gazed at the Resource Warehouse, waiting for their return.

Confronting the aggressive Yue Yao, Huo Yao finally realized that something extremely offbeat was happening.

He knew Yue Yao very well. There was no fire without smoke. It was impossible for his second brother to invade his privacy and seriously do

something that would risk ruining their relationship.

He had an ominous hunch, suspecting that he must have missed out on something.

At that moment, Liu Chai and his crew continued to explore the Resource Warehouse.

When they arrived at the deepest part of the Resource Warehouse, Liu Chai ordered, “Brothers, take out all the resources you’ve robbed! The rest of you keep watch!”

Upon receiving the command, the players at the back quickly turned around to watch the door.

The players, who robbed the resources, hurriedly took out all of the treasures and stacked them in a corner of the Resource Warehouse.

This was the third part of their plan, to plant the stolen goods on someone else.

The players who robbed the treasures turned off the simulation after they finished their quest. They walked across the Barren Grassland and headed for the military base that was located in the Land of the Nine Luminaries. They made a feigned attack, and led Huo Yao’s Army to the Barren Grassland.

At that moment, Liu Chai, together with his troops, met up with the other players, and ambushed the warriors of Huo Yao’s Army who arrived at their heels.

Initially, they intended to wait for the arrival of General Crescent Moon and his forces, wanting them to witness the presence of Huo Yao’s Army at the Barren Grassland.

Their plan went smooth, despite the fact that the players didn’t expect Yue Yao to arrive at this crucial second.

It seemed like everything was predestined. They didn't expect their plan to end so successfully and so quickly. All the players were absolutely thrilled.

After the players took out the treasures, Liu Chai dashed out of the Resource Warehouse.

Both Yue Yao and Huo Yao grimaced, awaiting Liu Chai's arrival.

Then, Liu Chai hurried over. Once he left the Resource Warehouse, he lifted his gaze to look at Yue Yao.

“Lord Yue Yao, I haven't seen the treasures before, but there's a huge pile of treasures in the corner of the Resource Warehouse that look like they could be yours. You'll have to check it out on your own!”

Upon listening to that, Yue Yao descended from the sky and headed inside.

Huo Yao's heart skipped a beat.

This was the military's warehouse that stored their resources. It was impossible for them to keep their treasures inside the warehouse. Liu Chai's words had certainly alarmed him.

He followed Liu Chai at the speed of light.

When Yue Yao found the pile of treasures that was hidden in the Resource Warehouse, he was infuriated. He turned to look at Huo Yao.

“Eighth brother, I think you owe me an explanation!” Yue Yao raised his voice as he spoke.

“Second brother, I've been framed!” Huo Yao's face paled.

“Someone framed you? Are you going to tell me that my subordinates, the Player Clan, framed you? Are you going to say that they brought the treasures along and placed it inside your army's warehouse on purpose? Are you claiming that they are trying to put the blame on you?”

The Player Clan came from the Barren Grassland. Yue Yao was sure that they didn't carry any of the treasures with them. Thinking that he had successfully seized both physical evidence and the culprit, Huo Yao's rebuttal further enraged Yue Yao.

# Chapter 274 - Extremely Wronged (Part 4)

## Chapter 274: Extremely Wronged (Part 4)

“We’re brothers! This is just so disappointing. You’d better explain this!” Yue Yao was trying his best to contain his anger as he waited for clarification from Huo Yao.

As Huo Yao was confronted by Yue Yao, he raised his head to look at the huge pile of sparkling treasures and let out a sigh, “Second brother, believe it or not, I really didn’t send people to rob your treasures, but I’ll give you an explanation on this for sure!”

After that, Huo Yao turned around and walked out of the Resource Warehouse along the passage. As soon as he was out, he bellowed, “Attention all armies, assemble!”

Upon listening to Huo Yao’s furious bawl, the Fire Army moved immediately. Within seconds, all warriors assembled at the campground.

Soon after, Huo Yao levitated into the air.

“All members who entered the Resource Warehouse recently, step out!”

Seeing Huo Yao’s angry face, all the Fire Army warriors couldn’t help but tremble in fear. Still, a few hundred men stepped forward.

“Did any of you notice the extra treasures in the Resource Warehouse? Tell only the truth!”

Huo Yao’s confrontation caused the few hundred men who stepped out to fall into complete silence.

“Answer me, one by one. Those who dare to hide from me shall be sent to hell!”

Hearing that, all of them trembled once again.

“I did not see anything!”

“I did not see anything!”

“I did not see anything!”

...

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

After a few hundred people answered, one after another, Huo Yao turned around and looked at Yue Yao.

“Second brother, do you mind telling me why you’re so certain that my subordinates, the Fire Army, have robbed your resources?”

Yue Yao snorted coldly after hearing that.

“Then, you shall ask your subordinates the reason why they appeared at the Barren Grassland in the Land of Beiqi!”

“Those who went to the Barren Grassland, step out at once!”

After Huo Yao said this, almost a hundred thousand soldiers stepped out.

“Who’s the leader? Explain to me... why did you visit the Barren Grassland!?”

Huo Yao’s face went stiff after seeing so many of his men step forward. He even had a wild guess in his mind.

When he was absent, these soldiers secretly robbed the resources that were meant to be sent to Yue Yao.



“My lord... our leader was... by Lord Yue Yao...” a Ghost Commander stepped out at that moment, shaking in fear.

“He was in Beiqi to cut off my resources, do you think I should spare him?” Yue Yao replied coldly aside.

“You should!” answered Huo Yao right away, knowing justice was not with him. Then, he looked at the Ghost Commander and asked again,

“Tell me why were you in Beiqi then, did you really want to rob their resources?”

Thump!

Since he was sentenced with such a huge felony, the Ghost Commander was so shocked that he kneeled down immediately.

“My lord, there were intruders at the camp at the time. In order to know which forces they were from, we rushed out and chased them all the way to the Barren Grassland!”

“Intruders? From which force?”

“I can’t be sure, but... but they were very similar to the subordinates of Lord Yue Yao,” as he spoke, the Ghost Commander pointed at the Player Clan.

“Hahaha, my eighth brother, what an interesting guy you are. After all these equivocations, you’re saying my subordinates, the Beiqi forces are the hypocrites? You should’ve just blamed them when I asked you just now, why are you beating around the bush?” Yue Yao laughed cynically in anger after hearing that.

He brought the Player Clan here himself, so how could he not know whether they had the treasures on them or not.

“Second brother, before the truth is revealed, I think we should sort out our thoughts properly. If it really was my subordinates who robbed your

resources, I will not let a single one of them go, just to clear it out with you.”

“A few hundred thousand people, not leaving even one? How cruel you are. Not only are you putting the blame on them, but you even want to kill them!”

Huo Yao knew that he was not in a position to say much. Although he was equally mad as he heard Yue Yao’s words, he said, “Second brother, don’t be in a hurry, I’ll sort things out first!”

“Fine, I’ll wait for you!”

After settling Yue Yao, Huo Yao asked again, “About the intruders that you mentioned, did they enter our camp?”

“They did not, but they were a nuisance outside, so we chased after them.”

“Are the leaders of the Resource Warehouse here?” Huo Yao yelled again.

“We’re here!” exclaimed five leaders who guarded the warehouse.

“Did any outsiders enter the Resource Warehouse today?”

“My lord, the Resource Warehouse was closed for today, so nobody has entered it yet. The most recent visit was yesterday.”

Upon hearing this, Huo Yao’s expression turned worse.

All these facts miraculously pointed to the same fact. Thus, even he began to think that his own subordinates had robbed the resources.

Firstly, the resources were robbed today. Since the Fire Army’s Resource Warehouse is closed today, how could these resources just appear out of thin air?

At this moment, the most recent visitors to the Resource Warehouse, the players, were the greatest suspect. However, Huo Yao dispelled this thought at once.

If the Player Clan had entered the Resource Warehouse and tried to sneak the treasures in without anyone noticing, they must have a lot of inventory storage.

However, even he didn't have treasures like these, while his eldest brother only owned a small fifty square foot inventory storage ring. How would the Player Clan own these, being the subordinates of Yue Yao? Moreover, they needed to own a few of them to store all the treasures.

Thus, this theory was denied by Huo Yao almost immediately. Yet, the problem was here. Since the Player Clan had no inventory treasures and the Resource Warehouse was not opened today, how did those treasures get into the warehouse?

After sorting out his thoughts, Huo Yao was suddenly worried. Could it be that few of my subordinate lords colluded and robbed my second brother's treasures? Then, they hid this heist from me?

Nevertheless, based on his understanding of his subordinates and bodyguards, Huo Yao knew that they wouldn't dare do that.

The issue was caught in a dead-end. Questions in his head became more entangled, thus Huo Yao couldn't come to a sensible conclusion.

Yue Yao had the same hypothesis as Huo Yao.

However, they were in different situations. Yue Yao knew that he brought the Player Clan to the Fire Army camp himself.

So, his conclusion was totally the opposite. He thought Huo Yao was concealing the truth and his subordinates were forced to not admit their crimes.

“Eighth brother, have you made up your mind? How are you gonna explain this to me!?”

“Second brother, I think there must be a third force trying to frame me and ruin our relationship. They must have many inventory treasures for them to

rob your resources and sneak into my Resource Warehouse after that,” Huo Yao presented his own assumptions to answer Yue Yao’s question.

“Hahaha, eighth brother, I never knew you were such an excellent speaker. This incident couldn’t be more clear! Obviously, your subordinates are lying and you are the mastermind of this heist!”

“Stop talking about that! Other than the gods themselves, who else could have mastered the laws of space and invented such treasure in the Underworld? Could it be that some god wants to incite our relationship? If it really was an Underworld god, did they have to waste so much effort in destroying us?”

“Second brother...”

“Silent! I’ll take the treasures with me. You and I will visit our eldest brother and let him take care of this!”

When Yue Yao finished, he turned and looked at Liu Chai, “Send these treasures back with the others... I’ll return later!”

Rather upset, Liu Chai said, “Boss Yue Yao, you must win our reputation back!”

“Don’t worry, I promised to give you an explanation, so you will surely get one!”

.....

Dark Heaven Pavilion, Nine Luminaries.

This time, the nine brothers gathered, but each of them had a grim expression.

After listening to Yue Yao’s description and Huo Yao’s assumptions, without exemption, everybody thought Huo Yao lied.

However, they understood this brother too well. Although he was slightly grumpier, he would never do something that could potentially ruin their

brotherhood.

Jin Yao, the fifth brother, said, “Eighth brother, what you said was sort of unbelievable. We’re all brothers here, you can just admit it and apologize. Even though we are siblings, your explanation...”

“Fifth brother, even you think that I did this!?” Huo Yao bolted up, the anger on his face could not be concealed.

“If it wasn’t you, was it really an Underworld god?” Yue Yao glanced at him coldly.

“Second brother, stop pressuring me! I said that I didn’t do any of this!

“What do you mean? Still being so confident after committing these lowly crimes! Am I really nothing to you?” Yue Yao got up at once, too.

Suddenly, the atmosphere became very solemn. The two of them were so tense and serious, it was as if they could start a war at any time.

“Enough! Remember that you’re brothers!” Xing Yao slammed the table and hollered.

“Eldest brother, I do treat him as a brother, but Huo Yao doesn’t return the favor!”

“Fine, I understand this incident already. Eighth brother, I’m going to question you now, please tell me the truth. We’re brothers, so even if you did this, own it and nobody will blame you. We’ll just think of it as you’re temporarily blinded by profit. Everything will be fine if you correct your behavior!”

“Eldest brother, I said I didn’t do this. I really didn’t!” Huo Yao couldn’t help but shout out in frustration, with all his brothers still being skeptical.

Huo Yao felt extremely wronged. He hadn’t done anything, but all of his brothers firmly thought that he had. Wrath was boiling in his heart, so much so that an urge to kill began to emerge.

Yue Yao scoffed scornfully, “Eldest brother, until now, he still has no intention of admitting his wrongdoings. However, the truth is clear. It was either some Underworld god’s act or eighth brother’s, you decide!”

Hearing this, Xing Yao’s head ached badly.

He also thought that Huo Yao had instructed his subordinates to rob the treasures out of sudden greed. No god would need to waste so much effort to incite them, as the combined forces of the Nine Luminaries was unrivaled.

“Eighth brother, apologize now!”

“Eldest brother, I didn’t do this!” Huo Yao screamed in rage again.

“Eighth brother, if you still see me as the eldest, apologize to your second brother!”

“Fuck, if you want me to apologize for things I didn’t do, you’ll have to dream about it! And you, Yue Yao, fuck you and quit this brotherly nonsense if you don’t trust me!” Huo Yao utterly erupted in anger.

He felt extremely wronged, but then they wanted him to accept this frustration and apologize for it. It was simply unbearable.

At the thought of it, Huo Yao grew angrier and kicked the court table in front of him, before jumping onto Yue Yao with his fists flying.

“Yue Yao, how dare you frame me! This could even be an act which you’ve plotted and carried out yourself!”

“Eighth brother, you...”

Seeing that Huo Yao suddenly attacked him, the brothers became frightened and stood up at once.

Boom!

Yue Yao confronted Huo Yao’s attack with a powerful punch.

A strong air flow ripped through the air, toppling all the surrounding tables and chairs and sending them flying away.

# Chapter 275 - I Am A Player

Mansion of the Dead, Beiqi.

A silhouette glided down from the sky and entered His Excellency's palace.

This instantly caught everybody's attention. However, as soon as they saw the visitor more clearly, they began to panic.

Yue Yao was heavily wounded. His attire was completely tattered while blood stains remained on his mouth, making him look extremely feeble.

“Your Majesty, what's happened?” General Crescent Moon rushed up to support Yue Yao after seeing his condition.

Yue Yao's face turned even more hideous when he heard this.

Just now, he had completely severed ties with his brother, Huo Yao. Both of them fought mercilessly.

His younger brother, Huo Yao, was supposedly just at the level of a Greater Ghost King. He shouldn't have been a worthy opponent.

However, three of his brothers, Ri Yao, Chen Yao, and Mu Yao, were on Huo Yao's side.

According to them, Yue Yao couldn't give enough evidence to prove that Huo Yao had robbed him. On top of that, they grew up together. Therefore, they knew that Huo Yao wouldn't do such a thing.

The conflict was triggered, causing Yue Yao to fight against four brothers on his own.

As for the other brothers, including His Excellency Xing Yao, they merely advised them to stop. However, they didn't step forward to help Yue Yao.



At that instance, Yue Yao suddenly had an epiphany.

After he left the Land of the Nine Luminaries, he became distant with the other brothers. Although their relationships remained, they had to think for their own benefits. Hence, Jin Yao and the others refused to lend him a helping hand.

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

The eight of them were still a whole unit. However, since he was now the Excellency of Beiqi, he wasn't considered their family anymore.

Yue Yao was a little bit devastated and completely enraged. After that, he didn't hold himself back anymore. Even though he was fighting four of them at once, he didn't falter and was clearly the stronger side.

Under such a situation, something out of Yue Yao's ordinary expectations happened. His eldest brother, Xing Yao, gave up on stopping the energy blasts from both sides. Instead, he joined Huo Yao and the others to counter his attacks!

Although Xing Yao was still yelling at them to stop, he chose to stand by Huo Yao's side.

Since the eldest brother had made his decision, the others followed him naturally, even though they were unsure at first.

Xing Yao was still trying to stop the fight but Yue Yao felt that they were biased against him. After all, Xing Yao resisted his attacks, instead of stopping Huo Yao and the others.

Consequently, he lost, suffering a complete defeat.

Since they were brothers, Xing Yao did not kill him. He only sighed and asked him to leave.

In Yue Yao's perspective, the main culprit was Huo Yao. His greed tore their brotherhood apart, but the seven other brothers chose to stand by him

in the end. He could not accept this humiliation. As he came back injured, he was already plotting revenge in his mind.

He wanted Huo Yao to die a horrible death!

Yue Yao kept a solemn face when replying to General Crescent Moon, though, “We’ll discuss this later, I need rest!”

Then, he entered his room in the palace.

The people outside were rendered speechless, as they exchanged nervous glances with one another. General Crescent Moon’s face was full of sorrow and anxiety, but the Rock Ghost King and the leaders of the other forces appeared composed.

Liu Chai could not be happier.

This was because he just analyzed Yue Yao’s menu and discovered his current status.

[Yue Yao (Greater Ghost Emperor)]:

Character Details: Previous Lord of the Land of the Nine Luminaries. He headed to Beiqi after the discussion with his brothers and stole the throne of His Excellency of Beiqi.

Character Status: Heavily injured (worsening)

Even Liu Chai didn’t expect Yue Yao to return with such serious injuries.

Originally, stirring conflicts between the brothers was merely the beginning of their plan. Later, they would create a series of incidents to aggravate their disputes. However, things had already proceeded beyond their expectations.

Hence, Liu Chai immediately sent Yue Yao’s information to the forum.

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Dammit, our plan has gone astray. Aren’t we supposed to injure Huo Yao? Why is our Boss Yue Yao the one that’s injured instead? Call the director, let’s see what she can do. (laughing emoji)”

Watermelon Taro: “The scenarios are going off track, calling for the director. @Classy\_Lady\_Yin\_Xiaoqi”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “Boss Yue Yao was wounded? I can almost see an injured little yellow chick yelling, ‘I wanna become soul coins and experience points!’ (laughing emoji)”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “Should we just settle him? It’s a good chance after all!”

Peppa\_Boar: “It’s a good opportunity indeed. We planned to create conflicts between the nine brothers, but Boss Yue Yao is obviously being boycotted by the others right now. The script’s ruined! (laughing emoji)”

Assassin\_Creed: “Where’s the director? Come out and arrange some new scenarios. (laughing emoji)”

Classy\_Lady\_Yin\_Xiaoqi: “That’s it. It’s clear that the other brothers are being biased due to Yue Yao’s departure from the family. Yue Yao is worthless now. (sighing helplessly emoji)”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Classy\_Lady\_Yin\_Xiaoqi: “So director, what should we do now? (laughing emoji)”

Classy\_Lady\_Yin\_Xiaoqi replied to Crayon\_Shinchan: “I suggest that we just kill him. (sincere eyes emoji)”

...

The players allowed Yue Yao to ascend the throne easily, so that conflicts would happen between him and the other brothers in the Land of the Nine Luminaries. However, this crucial chess piece seemed to have lost his function already.

In spite of that, Yin Xiaoqi also provided a solution for this, which promptly changed the players’ attitudes.

Soon, a swarm of players began to move toward the palace.

The players had a simple goal – they wanted to kill him while he was weak.

Although General Crescent Moon had noticed the players' abnormal movements, he thought that the Player Clan was simply curious. Hence, he didn't dwell on it further.

Since Liu Chai had sworn allegiance with his soul and they were on the same boat, he assumed that their betrayal was impossible.

As General Crescent Moon was observing the players, Liu Chai and his gang opened the door to Yue Yao's room, before marching into it.

Their appearance shocked Yue Yao, who was treating his wounds. So, he opened his eyes abruptly and yelled, "What are all of you doing here?"

"Boss Yue Yao, who did this to you?"

"We'll talk about this after I'm done treating my wounds, get out now!" Yue Yao ordered strictly.

"I'll lead my men to seek revenge for you!" Liu Chai turned around and growled angrily.

Yue Yao panicked after seeing this, as he knew Liu Chai's personality well. If he declared so, he would really bring people to the Nine Luminaries for a battle with his brothers.

Although his relationship with his brothers had soured, it hadn't deteriorated to such an extent, where an all out war between the two lands was needed. After all, Beiqi's forces were no match for the Land of the Nine Luminaries by itself.

They still held on to their brotherhood. It would be totally different, though, if Beiqi sent troops first.

Thinking about this, Yue Yao forcefully stopped the cycle of soul power in his body and rushed toward Liu Chai.

However, as Yue Yao passed by the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King, an eerie feeling struck him. When he looked down, he saw that the Hydra King's hand had transformed into a huge python and bit him, while the Rock Ghost King's hands transformed into vines and entangled him.

Snap!

The python bit his chest and injected venom into his veins, causing Yue Yao's body to shiver.

Liu Chai then turned around and launched a fist at his face.

Thud! Yue Yao immediately fell onto the floor.

“How dare you betray me!” Yue Yao uttered, with a look of disbelief.

He had witnessed Liu Chai, the Rock Ghost King, and the others vow with their souls to the Six Paths of Reincarnation. If they ever betrayed him in the presence of the Six Paths of Reincarnation, their souls would disintegrate into dust.

Yet, the power of the Six Paths of Reincarnation didn't affect any of them even though they had attacked him.

Outside the room, players continued to throng into His Excellency's palace.

General Crescent Moon was taken aback by this and instantly yelled, “What are you doing? Retreat now!”

The players ignored him and didn't stop coming. A group of players even broke off from the crowd and charged toward him.

After Yin Xiaoqi announced the last option, the players knew it was time for the script to end. Their next task would be to reap their benefits.

Apart from the treasures that they brought back, Yue Yao and his army were useless to them. Hence, it was time to annihilate them from the Land of Beiqi entirely.

Countless players were swarming in and surrounding the palace.

This was their only opportunity since Yue Yao was heavily wounded. If they didn't succeed this time, there would be no second chance for them because it was impossible for them to defeat him after he had recovered his strength.

Groups of players constantly barged in. Then, all of them charged toward General Crescent Moon and started attacking Yue Yao's Army.

The sudden attack caught General Crescent Moon off guard, so he tried hard to flee and ran to His Excellency's palace. Perplexed, he wanted to ask Liu Chai what was happening.

However, when he entered and saw the scene inside the room, he was totally stunned.

At that moment, Yue Yao was kneeling on the floor with his body tangled by vines and pythons, completely immobilized.

They betrayed us!

The idea abruptly popped into General Crescent Moon's head, but the realization came way too late.

Battles had erupted in every zone of the Mansion of the Dead.

The warriors of Yue Yao's Army randomly wandering around were all attacked by the players in various ways.

At that moment, they finally revealed their true faces hidden behind their loyalty. They bit Yue Yao on his neck with a fatal attack.

Since Yue Yao was heavily injured and his soul power cycle was forcefully cut off, he was clearly too weak. Unable to retaliate, he could only struggle to defend himself from the Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King's attacks.

It was undeniable that Yue Yao, a Greater Ghost Emperor, was still strong even in this dreadful state. He snapped the Rock Ghost King's vines a few

times and tried to escape. Still, the Rock Ghost King hung on with all his might.

He didn't want to die and could never just respawn like the other players.

Under the motivation of eternal death, both the Hydra King and the Rock Ghost King tried their very best to restrict Yue Yao and prevent him from escaping.

However, the presence of General Crescent Moon undoubtedly gave the Rock Ghost King and the others a sense of danger. Luckily, the players had charged him from behind. In a flash, they surrounded General Crescent Moon and launched attacks at him.

All 2.3 million warriors were attacked by the entirety of the Beiqi forces. Since the number of their opponents was ten times more, their resistance was nothing but a useless fight.

Tonight, the Mansion of the Dead was destined to be sleepless.

Massacres played out in every zone.

Soul coins, experience points, equipment, and resources galore.

It might be the player's fiesta, but it was also Yue Yao's Army's epitaph.

When the first ray of sunlight rose from the East of Beiqi, everything had come to an end.

The Mansion of the Dead, being a safe zone, was restored to its initial status by the artifact. No corpses or bloodstains could be found on the ground, as though nothing had happened there.

In the Mansion of the Dead, Yue Yao was lying on the floor, teetering between life and death. His eyes were half-closed as he stared at the sunrise on the horizon, with an incredulous expression on his face, as if he was mocking himself.

At this painful moment, he suddenly understood everything.

His brothers had never betrayed him nor robbed him of his resources. Everything was a trap and he was just a chess piece that had stepped onto the board. The actions that he thought were right were nothing more than robotic movements controlled by the others.

Finally, only his death remained!

“Yue Yao, from the moment you wanted to own Beiqi, you were destined to fail!” Liu Chai couldn’t help but sigh, watching the half-dead Yue Yao.

Although they were enemies and Yue Yao was only using him, Liu Chai had regarded Yue Yao as a real person. Thus, he was slightly reluctant to kill him.

However, he knew that Yue Yao must die.

Otherwise, the players would never live a peaceful day.

“Can you tell me how on Earth you did this? You guys vouched with your souls!” Yue Yao spilled out his doubt on his deathbed.

The Rock Ghost King and the Hydra King exchanged glances and smirked.

Just then, several server announcements rang out:

[Server Announcement: the Rock Ghost King has officially become Beiqi’s NPC!]

[Server Announcement: the Hydra King has officially become Beiqi’s NPC!]

[Server Announcement: the Ghost General Demon has officially become Beiqi’s NPC!]

[Server Announcement: the Ghost General Ground Wolf has officially become Beiqi’s NPC!]

...



After listening to the server announcements, Liu Chai turned around and looked at the Rock Ghost King and the others in astonishment.

“How did you all do that?”

“We received the oaths from Tong Gua and swore loyalty to him long ago. From now on, we are truly from one family!” the Hydra King said with a grin, while holding Liu Chai’s shoulder.

“Hey, you still need me when you guys launch the elixir masterclass. This is a hidden plot activated by you, since now you’ve met the requirements,” the Rock Ghost King also pulled a grin.

Although he couldn’t comprehend what they were saying, Yue Yao could almost feel their joy.

“So this is the true face of yours, Liu Chai!” Yue Yao said weakly before coughing some blood out.

“Sorry, Boss Yue Yao, you are the one who intruded Beiqi first...”

“Save your breath. The winner wins and the loser dies, this has always been the Law of the Underworld... I understand!” Yue Yao’s condition deteriorated drastically and he seemed to be in a daze.

“Did you vow your soul to other people like them previously?” Yue Yao asked in his final breaths.

Liu Chai shook his head, as a big smile bloomed on his face.

“I’m different from them, I’m a player and not from around here so I’m not tied to the Laws of the Underworld!”

Just then, a ray of sunlight shone on Liu Chai’s face. Half of his face glowed with a faint halo, catching Yue Yao’s attention completely as he lay feebly on the ground.

# Chapter 276 - Legendary Sniper Black Lily

New York City, United States of America.

In the dead of night, when the hands on the clock tower converged at their zenith, chimes echoed throughout the city to announce that it was midnight.

It was pitch black on top of the clock tower where she was waiting.

In the distance, one could vaguely hear the pitter-patter of raindrops as they hit the glass.

Ding!

Emily flipped open her lighter cap and lit a cigarette. Then, she took a deep drag of it.

The faint light emitted by the cigarette illuminated a tattoo on her upper arms. It was as vibrant as the colorful markings of a venomous snake, a tell-tale sign that she was just as deadly.

As the embers of the cigarette flickered, she blew out a mouthful of thick smoke, her hand trembling unconsciously.

She felt a sense of déjà vu. Right now, her heart ached with melancholy and despair, just like when she had left her older brother five years ago.

It was a gloomy and rainy day just like this, and they parted at a public bus stop.

At that moment, she desperately wanted to ask the driver to stop the car or bash the windows to attract her brother's attention, so she could jump out and run toward him.

She wanted to tear down every single obstacle between him and her.

Her breath quickened at this thought, her eyes turned bloodshot and shivers wracked her body. She had brought herself to tears with her vivid imagination.

However, in reality, she merely sat there docilely. Their shoulders grazed past each other's, as she silently watched his silhouette become nothing more than a hazy outline and fade into the distance.

Read more chapter on [vipnovel.com](http://vipnovel.com)

After that, she walked on the road with no return. She had chosen this path herself, it was a journey with no detour.

Footsteps could be heard in the dark. As the sound gradually became audible, a silhouette slowly emerged and the surrounding street lights lit up.

A man with a beard approached from afar, holding a document folder in his hand. He was wearing headphones and seemed to be stepping in sync with the music.

A glimpse of sorrow crossed Emily's eyes as she saw this man draw near, she sincerely hoped that he would not come any closer.

Yet, she had no other choice, as this was her mission.

He was a killer!

This man was her mentor and had retired peacefully after a notorious career as an ace assassin. He was the one who taught Emily all her assassination techniques and made her who she was today.

He was a mentor and friend to her, but...

Emily slowly looked down. She rested her cheek on the cold buttstock of the gun and peered through her rifle scope, focusing her gaze on the man below.

Truth be told, with her prowess, she didn't even need the scope, but this was the last farewell to her mentor.

Bang!

A bullet swirled out of the barrel and landed point-blank on the man's forehead, which instantly exploded into a bloody shower.

She had equipped a silencer so the gunshot blast was quite faint, without alarming anybody nearby.

She took a look through her scope once again to check the fallen body on the floor below. Emily's lips quivered at the grotesque sight. Not long after, she took out a mobile phone from her pocket and dialed someone.

Beep... beep... beep...

After three rings, the call was connected, but only silence greeted her.

"Mission accomplished, the target is killed!"

"Good job, Black Lily..."

Before the receiver had even finished talking, Emily hung up. She then took her gun, called the Kiss of the Black Lily, placed it on the floor, and dismantled it at lightning speed.

Within two minutes, the complicated multi-structural sniper rifle had been broken down into individual parts and packed away in a cello case.

After doing this, she stood up quickly and climbed down the clock tower, with the cello case on her back. She used the uneven ledges of the walls to help her descend.

She immediately vanished into the darkness of the night.

After finishing this mission, Emily had earned another month of vacation but she felt lost. She had no idea where to go, or how would her future turn out.

Would she meet her death at the hands of some newcomers as her teacher just did? Or fail a mission and get arrested? Or maybe, she would die in some dark corner?

It seemed like any thoughts about her future were all related to death. Feeling pitiful, Emily's lips curled into a bitter smile.

She was a killer!

While walking, she suddenly felt uneasy. Her keen senses told her that someone was watching her from the darkness.

Her footsteps sped up right away and she broke into a sprint.

Bang!

A gunshot rang through the air, so Emily spontaneously jumped forward.

The shot had been precise, but Emily had quick reflexes. She might have avoided a lethal wound, but she sustained an injury to her calf. The wound was about the size of a goose's egg.

Knowing that there was another killer out there in the dark, Emily pulled the cello case before her without hesitation and hid behind it.

By doing so, she had obscured the killer's vision of her and thus made sure her attacker had lost sight of his target. She planned all this after deducting the killer's location from the direction of the bullet.

A silent stalemate ensued.

Other than the sound of raindrops hitting the floor, the surrounding plunged into silence.

As time went on, Emily knew her opportunity had arrived when the streetlights didn't light up.

She opened the cello case from the side, and swiftly assembled her sniper rifle.

Bang!

A gunshot echoed. This time, it did not hit Emily, but grazed the street light.

The sound of a bullet colliding with metal stirred the street lights to life again.

This time, the killer in the dark saw Emily clearly through his scope as she tried to assemble her sniper rifle. A crooked smile crept onto his lips as he aimed his gun directly at her.

Bang!

Bang!

Two opposing gunshots boomed out in unison. However, the bullets collided mid-air, bursting into a shower of metal shrapnel that scattered to all sides.

The killer was shocked.

This must be a coincidence!

Surprised by this turn of events, the killer suddenly had flashbacks about this female killer named Black Lily and all of her notorious rumors.

He immediately aimed at Emily again. Just when he was about to vehemently pull the trigger, he looked through his scope and saw a bullet appear in his line of sight, approaching and enlarging rapidly. Everything before his eyes went pitch black.

One bathed in light, while one was hidden in darkness. Despite being at a disadvantage, Emily still easily dispatched the assassin. This was her craft, and also the reason why nobody could surpass the Legendary Sniper Black Lily.

After eliminating the killer, Black Lily ripped a piece of her clothes off and quickly bandaged her bleeding calf. Then, she fought through the pain and sprinted away.

When she reached about a hundred yards away, Emily came to a sudden stop. Her calf had bled so profusely that it drained her stamina, hindering any further movement.

And just then, her cell phone rang.

Emily grabbed her phone from her pocket and tossed it into a drain beside her.

She knew that this assassination had been planned. After all, the only ones that knew her assassination and escape route was the organization.

Taking a deep breath, Emily willed herself to trudge on. Then, she noticed a building just ten yards away with a sign that read clinic.

She took a glance at her bleeding calf. She might risk exposing herself, but she could not be bothered by menial details anymore. So, she dragged her wounded right leg and limped toward the clinic.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The door swung open when she slammed on it, revealing a bespectacled man with blue curly hair who greeted her.

“Are you injured?” a man asked as he looked at Emily, surprised by her beauty and also by her bleeding right leg.

Emily nodded as she leaned feebly on the door frame for support.

Seeing this, he quickly helped Emily into the building and shut the door behind him.

...

“Hey, this is a gunshot!”

Emily’s eyes turned menacingly cold as she looked at the man who was treating her wound.

“Don’t... worry... I won’t tell anyone,” the man immediately reassured her. Even though his expression contorted in concern, he continued, “But your leg might not be saved...”

“I know that, now treat the wound and stop the bleeding so I can be on my way!”

“It’ll hurt, do you want to play a game to get your mind off the pain?” the man gestured to a virtual reality headset on the table.

“No!” Emily replied impassively.

“I think you should play for a while, there’s an egg-sized hole on your leg, it’s going to need some filling...”

“I said no!” Emily declined again with a serious tone.

She was a killer, so she was always vigilant. Playing a game at this moment would be risking her safety by putting it in others’ hands. She did not trust the man before her, so she refused his offer.

After half an hour of bandaging, the man finally finished treating Emily’s wound. Then, she stood up, preparing to leave right away.

“It’s just treated, don’t put force on it or else the wound might re-open!”

Emily didn’t reply. Instead, she turned around and walked toward the door.

It was dangerous for her to stay here and she had left her sniper rifle outside, so she had to leave as soon as possible.

She approached the door and just before she opened it, police sirens rang out from outside.

Emily’s expression instantly darkened. Then, she looked at the male doctor and quickly limped back into the house.

“Don’t worry, I won’t say anything!” the male doctor promised her again.



After Emily entered the house, the male doctor rushed to the door and pressed the cleaning button.

Immediately, the cleaning robot outside the house was activated. They wiped away any traces of blood outside in mere seconds.

Not long after, a knock came on the door. The male doctor calmly opened the door, even though his heart thundered in his chest.

The door opened and a middle-aged man stood on the other side. He was slightly plump but wore an extremely serious expression.

“Doctor Haier, did you hear gunshots just now? Or have you seen any strangers?”

“What? Gunshots? What happened?” Haier feigned shock and confusion.

“No, it’s nothing, have a good night!” the officer outside quickly deflected. They didn’t enter the house to investigate since they had a few other houses to inquire.

After he shut the door, Haier hurriedly went back inside the house. However, he discovered that Emily was hiding behind the door and clutching a dagger.

“They’ve left!” Haier muttered in exasperation.

He didn’t know why he had covered for Emily. If he had to think of a reason, it would be because of her exquisite looks.

Truly, this was her gift since the day she was born.

“Thank you!” Emily sighed in relief and thanked him.

“It’s okay, my name is Haier. What is yours?” Haier smiled as he stuck his right hand out.

Emily ignored him and merely limped to the sofa outside of the house and sat down, with her brows knitted together tightly.

Awkwardly, Haier followed her out. Then, he looked at Emily and said, “There’s a lot of policemen searching around outside, I guess you have to spend the night in here.”

Yet, Emily remained unresponsive.

“Does it hurt a lot? Do you need to play a game? There’s a really cool game that came out recently. Once you enter it, you won’t feel the pain from the outside world.”

Still, she did not reply to him.

After a few failed attempts at conversation, Haier felt crestfallen about the distant and stoic Emily.

Then, Emily finally replied, “Fine, give me the virtual reality headset!”

“Okay!”

A wide smile broke out on Haier’s face after his successful attempt to get a response out of her. He picked up the VR headset and swiftly handed it to Emily.

“I’ll help connect the computer... the game’s called Battle Online... the most anticipated virtual reality game of the year!”

Emily completely disregarded Haier’s words. After she put on the headset, the game interface appeared.

Anyone could tell that Dr. Haier was a game enthusiast, as the virtual interface was packed with gaming icons and a variety of other unknown special gaming software.

After scanning the icons, Emily’s eyes landed on Battle Online.

She could play any game, but since Haier strongly recommended this one, she would give it a try.

Hence, she selected the Battle Online icon.

It could be said that it was a total coincidence how the Legendary Sniper Black Lily embarked on her journey to become a Hunter Legend.

# Chapter 277 - Dream Eater

After Emily the Black Lily logged into the game, the opening animation greeted her.

She had a sweeping view of the scenery from above. There were abandoned buildings and barren lands, everything in her sight looked completely decimated.

Then the scene zoomed in. Vicious beasts prowled the land and lava erupted from the ground as screeching black gales whipped around her.

Numerous creatures were in a killing frenzy, murdering each other...

The scenery made her feel a sense of apocalyptic chaos.

Then, the title appeared...

[There is no peace in this world but an endless massacre, only the strong will survive!]

Roar!

A deafening growl boomed and the fonts of the title shattered into fragments, before falling away. In the background, a huge crack split the earth to reveal an enormous arm made up of lava and rocks, violently smashing toward her.

Since these scenes were too realistic, she broke out in cold sweat as the hand appeared to crash down on her.

Then, the animation suddenly switched scenes. This time, she found herself on an intergalactic starship.

When she was scanning her surroundings, a hologram at the main control panel was activated. It was a figure of a blonde woman.

“Commander, the Naraka Star, our previous home, is right below us. The war has decimated it but we’ve discovered the latest technology to rebuild it. It’s time for us to return and reclaim our homeland from these creatures!”

What should I do? She touched the control panel and felt its cold metallic finishing. Black Lily’s heart itched with curiosity now.

Also, she was surprised to find her numbed right leg had regained its sensitivity.

Everything in this world awed her.

“I’ve prepared three mech battle suits for you, please select one!”

As the artificial intelligence’s voice tapered off, the hoverboard beneath Emily’s feet activated and brought her inside the spaceship’s mech warehouse.

Swoosh!

Three sets of different colored mechs slowly emerged from the floor.

The introduction for these mechs followed shortly after:

[Lightsaber Mech (1 Star Difficulty)]:

Mech Details: Uses Lightsaber as the main weapon and suitable for close combat. It is equipped with a laser dagger and small-caliber ion gun.

Mech Specialty: Close combat, very high maneuverability.

Mech Upgrade Trend: Protective armor strength, lightsaber strength.

[Rechargeable Mech (3 Star Difficulty)]:

Mech Details: Ranged attack mech that can utilize various rechargeable weapons, ammunition depot, and equipment depot available in the mech warehouse.

Mech Specialty: Close, mid, and ranged combat, lower maneuverability, wide variety of weapons.

Mech Upgrade Trend: Ammunition depot upgrade, weapons upgrade (ammunition depot upgrade increases internal ammo damage and inventory space)

[Auxiliary Mech (1 Star Difficulty)]:

Mech Details: Auxiliary Mech, able to produce auxiliary tools such as Nano Mech Repairing Ball and control fields (Gravity Field, Repulsive Force Field, Mech Repairing Field), equipped with a lightsaber and small-caliber ion guns.

Mech Specialty: Well-balanced attributes, capable of close and ranged combat, mainly focused on providing support in combat.

Mech Upgrade Trend: Mech strength, portable production factory.

“Commander, please select your mech suit!” the spaceship’s AI requested.

Emily inquisitively inspected the three mech suits as her eyes skimmed across them. Soon, her eyes focused on a weapon strapped behind the Rechargeable Mech.

The silver, intricately-carved rifle shone with the colors of a rainbow under the light. It had a diamond-shaped scope that could focus accordingly based on the pupil’s activity, while criss-crossed black stripes decorated the barrel.

A cold primal feeling washed over Emily, as she had fallen for this mysterious sci-fi weapon at first sight.

Under Emily’s observation, the Rechargeable Mech began to turn so she could get a better look.

“This is the one!” Emily made a quick decision.

“Are you sure, Commander? You cannot change after selecting!”

“Yes!”

After Emily made her selection, the other two mech suits descended back into the warehouse while the Rechargeable Mech was elevated even higher. The surrounding platforms broke apart, as mechanical arms shot out to dismantle the mech.

“Lord Commander, please stand in the central loading zone, we will assemble the mech soon!”

Emily stood at the designated location, as the mechanical arms whizzed to life around her, busily attaching mech pieces on her. Then, a new menu floated before her.

[Please select the Basic Mech Transformation Options. Since you have selected the Rechargeable Mech, which is a ranged output, starting damage is sufficient, armor is recommended. It can prioritize the strengthening of maneuverability and mech strength, and follow up with weapons and ammunition depots!]

Emily was deep in her thoughts as she read the menu in front of her. It stated that it had 50 spiritual ores strength with more strengthening options below.

She had never played any games before and didn't know where to start. However, she was a sniper in reality, so the strengthening option seemed pointless to her.

Her eyes swept past the other strengthening options such as power sources and mech strengthening, before finally landing on the weapon strengthening option.

She clicked on it and the menu glowed in response to show the details of the strengthening.

[Dream Eater (Level 1 Growth Sniper Rifle)]:

Weapon Details: Made with Stellar Clan technology, this is a ranged combat weapon that can consume spiritual ore. Default shooting range 2.4 miles, total length 50 inches, rifle weight 15 pounds, rifle barrel 24 inches, attached with Stellar Diamond-shaped Aiming Scope (with night vision available), RRS sniper tripod, and 10 rounds of bullet capacity.

Default Weapon Specialty: Converts bullet heat to energy (increases damage by 10%)

Weapon Growth: Excellent

[Dream Killer (Level 1 Growth Machine Gun)]

[Desperation (Level 1 Growth Pistol)]

...

The menus of three different weapons appeared.

After some consideration, Emily clicked the strengthening button of the Dream Eater sniper rifle.

Light rays shimmered and the Dream Eater was upgraded to Level 2, making the body of the gun seem even more graceful.

After she witnessed the weapon's change, Emily was in high spirits. So, she clicked strengthening again.

“Commander, are you sure you want to level up the weapon again? Naraka Star is in danger, in the beginning stage...”

Emily ignored the AI's advice and wanted more strength. She only had eyes for this captivating Dream Eater now.

After continuous strengthening, her new Dream Eater had reached Level 5. Suddenly, the system showed a notification, “Insufficient spiritual ore, strengthening of weapon has failed!”



The Dream Eater had undergone a total transformation from its original appearance. Now, the rifle looked like a spitting venomous snake. No doubt, Emily's eyes sparkled with excitement.

At the same time, the AI's voice resounded again, "Commander, your mech is fully assembled and default strengthening is completed. Preparing to enter the battlefield, I wish you good luck!"

Just then, the hatch of the spaceship opened. A sense of weightlessness overcame Emily as she rapidly descended.

Her body zipped through clouds and nebulas, speeding up with each passing moment.

When she approached land, the boosters on her back activated. Flames shot out to slow her descent. After she had landed safely, the booster immediately detached itself.

[Blue Valley Ruins]

The name of her location appeared, before quickly fading away.

[Main Quest: Development of the ruins]:

Quest Details: Clear out every clan in the Blue Valley Ruins and use this zone as the first development center.

Quest Notification: Before dominating the Blue Valley Ruins Zone, respawn after death would be in a random location within the ruins.

[Server Launch Challenge Quest: Deadly Hunter]

Quest Details: During this quest, Hunting Points will be rewarded for each creature killed within the Blue Valley Ruins. The Top 1,000 players with the most Hunting Points in the server will be the winners of this quest.

Quest Notification: Amount of Hunting Points will be given based on the creature's strength.

Quest Reward:

1st place: Awarded the title (Deadly Hunter), 600 soul coins, 100 spiritual ore strengthening points.

2nd-10th place: Awarded 500 soul coins each, 50 spiritual ore strengthening points.

11st-100th place: Awarded 200 soul coins each, 20 spiritual ore strengthening points.

101st-1000th place: Awarded 100 soul coins each.

Remaining Quest Time: 9 days, 3 hours, and 29 minutes.

Beside the quest details was the real-time leaderboard of the players' Hunting Points.

Emily suddenly realized that this game had just launched its server less than a day ago when she looked at the Quest Notification menu.

Nothing was more important, though, than the realism of the game that had captivated Emily's heart.

She unconsciously took a step forward.

Although she wore a mech suit, her movements were not restricted. It was as if the mech suit was an extension of her body.

Just when she wanted another attempt, a noise from nearby attracted her attention.

She was standing on a small hill now, while the noise had come from below. She walked a few steps forward and saw a player in a black mech suit running for his life, with more than ten wolf-like creatures in hot pursuit behind him.

The player in the black mech suit held a lightsaber and appeared helpless against his pursuers. He occasionally turned back to slash at them, but the

wolf pack was too aggressive. Whenever he stopped, they would immediately swarm him.

After some curious observation, Emily reached for her Dream Eater on her back.

As she touched the weapon, a circuit of light streamed through the stripes on the barrel.

The diamond-shaped scope shot up automatically.

“Cool!” Emily was beyond satisfied with this sniper rifle.

She lifted the sniper rifle and aimed at the evil wolves below.

The rifle scope worked just like how it was described in the introduction. It began to automatically adjust itself based on her eye movements, giving her an enlarged view of the faraway wolf pack in mere seconds.

Bang!

A bullet shot out from the barrel but Emily only felt the slightest tension from recoil.

In the distance, a bloody bullet hole suddenly caved in on an evil wolf’s forehead as it was chasing after the player. Instantly, it collapsed onto the ground and ragdolled for a short distance.

Emily grinned. She widened her stance and rested her cheek on the buttstock to aim again.

Bang!

Bang!

...

One shot, one kill!

Emily, with her leveled-up sniper rifle, showcased her vicious killing prowess.

The hunt had awakened a predatory lust deep inside her. She was drunk and completely immersed in her sniper mode.

Over ten wolves were wiped out in the end, without a single missed shot.

Even the player who was being chased was terrified.

He looked at the limp bodies of evil wolves on the ground and was dumbfounded to find a bloody bullet hole through all of their foreheads.

“Damn, this accuracy is unreal!”

What surprised this player more was, other than the remarkable accuracy, the shockingly high damage that was inflicted.

This server was barely a day old and the players had to use all their power to defeat a single evil wolf. Even the weapon with the highest damage had no records of single-shot kills in the forum.

The player averted his eyes to the hill, only to see Emily strapping the sniper rifle behind her back as she turned to leave.

What a professional player!

# Chapter 278 - Bot-Like Player

Much to the satisfied anticipation of the American server players, Battle Online had officially launched.

The immense popularity of the game was mind-blowing. With its three main servers combined, the game attracted 23 million players on the day it was launched.

Naraka was undoubtedly the hardest to survive for all of the players. At the current stage, none of the players could last a full ten hours. Most of them were attacked and killed by monsters as they entered.

However, this didn't discourage any of them. Instead, they began to fervently discuss in the forums about various survival techniques in blissful agony.

This was because Battle Online never let them down. Just as how it had been promoted, it topped every other game in terms of replicating reality. Its realism attracted many players and kept them deeply engaged.

Its mech growth mode also made the game more interesting as most of them grew up with sci-fi themes. Many of whom had dreamed of one day operating their own machinery as a Mech Warrior.

A debate whether the American server's mech growth mode or the other server's physical growth mode was cooler had become a hot topic on the forum. Professional players posted their own analysis and argued over them with each other.

However, a recently posted video blew everyone on the forum away. Even the older players from the original server were shocked by what they saw.

[Desperate. Help! I offended someone I shouldn't have. Is this an aim-lock cheat? Officials should investigate it!]

Author: Skywalker

Content: Honestly, it's all my fault. We attacked an elite monster because we were a big group. But we were doomed because that legendary killer targeted us. She must've used an aim-lock. Didn't you promise us that this game has no cheaters? This game has only just launched, but we already faced a cheater with aim-lock. Please watch the attached video.

In the video, a group of seven were walking among the ruins of a city, and they appeared to be hunting for their prey.

Suddenly, a gunshot rang out. The leader of the group, walking in front, was thrown backward and fell heavily to the ground. His mech helmet had a perfect bullet hole.

[Player Parker was killed by Player Emily! It was a headshot!]

Everyone was stunned by this notification.

They knew that even if the mech was damaged, as long as the player inside was alive, the player would still be in the game. However, this death notification meant the shot had killed the player inside the mech, with a direct shot to the head.

Just then, a cracking sound pierced through the air as another team member fell to the ground.

[Player Luke was killed by Player Emily! It was a headshot!]

Once again, a single shot had punched through the mech and killed the player inside. The sniper's unbelievable skills shocked the rest of the team.

Everyone quickly scrambled for cover.

“Jack, Harry, prepare to shoot the raider at your 2 o'clock... Chris, Robert, on me... we'll draw her out!”

Upon hearing his command, two players pulled out their own Dream Eaters and took aim.

“On my command... three... two... one, fire!”

They immediately dashed out and sprinted toward Emily’s direction.

Splurt!

[Player Chris was killed by Player Emily! It was a headshot!]

As this soldier died, the two snipers who had locked their sights on Emily hiding in a ruined building, pulled their triggers at the same time.

However, she ducked, her cover shielding her from the two bullets.

Jack and Harry were nervous but stayed focused. They kept their eyes on the wall where she had hidden behind, waiting for her to reappear.

Emily’s three headshots had them severely traumatized.

Meanwhile, the other team members were approaching their target. A stand-off might be an advantage for them.

As they waited, Emily’s silhouette suddenly emerged for a split second before ducking back behind her cover.

Bang!

[Player Jack was killed by Player Emily! It was a headshot!]

This headshot utterly confounded the remaining sniper.

“Fuck, she must be a cheater, she’s definitely hacked the game! I was just about to take a shot when her head popped out, but she’d already fired a shot. Didn’t she have to aim? I want to report her!”

Harry’s growl rippled over the team’s chat channel. Everyone’s hearts sank when they heard this.

She could hit a target 400 yards away with a single headshot, without even aiming. A cheat was the only reasonable explanation for this.

“Dammit, get her first, we’ll report it later!”

Two soldiers had approached the ruined building and were climbing up the exterior wall using their lightsabers and daggers.

Meanwhile, Harry, who was waiting below, kept his eyes on Emily’s position. His heart thumped wildly in anxiety.

They had seven members working together. In mere seconds, four of them had already died. His gut went cold thinking about her unbelievable sniper skills.

Then, he saw Emily’s muzzle moving. Harry instantly tightened his finger around the trigger. If Emily moved a muscle, he would kill her.

Bang!

A gunshot suddenly rang out.

[Player Harry’s mech is damaged. Mech compartment ejection imminent!]

“I will fucking report this, she’s cheating!”

As he was ejected from the mech, Harry was in despair.

His target had shot him without even showing her head, although he never moved. He could not believe that this Emily could lock on him so precisely without aiming.

Still hurtling through the air, Harry suddenly saw Emily with a Dream Eater in her hands.

He realized Emily’s rifle was tracing his body’s trajectory.

Bang!

[Player Harry was killed by Player Emily! It was a headshot!]



Harry's eyes widened the moment he was shot in the head, clearly in disbelief. He was obviously falling yet he was still shot precisely in the head.

What kind of sorcery is this?

Now, five members of the team were dead. Meanwhile, the remaining two Lightsaber Mech soldiers had approached the top of the ruined building.

Emily stepped forward and glanced at the two soldiers, who were less than two yards away. She pointed the muzzle, pulled the trigger, and lowered her rifle in one fluid motion.

Bang!

One soldier crumpled to the ground. It was another fatal headshot. One shot, one kill indeed.

Now, the last soldier was extremely close to Emily. Leaning onto the lightsaber in his right arm, he leaped at her, ruthlessly swinging the dagger in his left hand at her.

Emily may have been unstoppable in a long-range duel, but now he was very near her. In close combat, the Lightsaber Mech would surely be the winner.

However, he didn't expect Emily to step forward and jump from the building.

The dagger missed her shoulder. Then, the scene turned dark.

Everyone who watched the video clearly saw that as Emily jumped off the building, she spun around, took aim, and killed him with a single shot!

The video caused an uproar in the forum. Nobody could explain this god-like phenomenon, extremely certain that it was a cheat.

Forum:

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Wow! The beginning was good enough, but that last instant-kill at the end – did she do that on pure instinct, or did she use a cheat? (surprised emoji)”

Watermelon\_Taro: “The casual players are shocked. Is this the birth of another supremely professional player?”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “I don’t know if she’s a cheater but officials, please ban her. She’s too scary!”

Peppa\_Boar: “I’m still shaking in fear. Is this a legendary shooter in real life?”

Invincible\_Loneliness: “Even I, despite having seen many professional players, am still stunned. I can’t imagine how frightening she would be in real life!”

Assassin\_Creed: “I guess she’s an actual ace sniper or one who works for an underground organization in reality. I can’t think where else she could have gotten her skills from. (shocked emoji)”

High\_Ping\_Warrior (Europe): “I’m frightened. She’s the big boss who’s put her real-life skills to use in the game. (shocked Evil King face.jpg)”

Star\_Universe (Europe): “I’ve reported this video already, let’s wait for the officials’ reply. If it’s not a cheat, I think she’s gonna start rolling!”

Reinhardt (Europe): “It’s not a bug, it’s the debut of the Black Lily of Death. I’m trembling in fear. This lady is the strangest of the strange, trust me, don’t mess around with her!”

Prince\_Charming123 (USA): “Too scary. I just checked the Hunting Challenge Leaderboard, this fellow should be the one in first place. (picture attached)”

[Hunting Challenge Ranking. Time remaining: 6 days 12 hours and 45 minutes]:

First Place: Emily (Rechargeable Mech). Hunting Points: 3932

Second Place: Cruise (Rechargeable Mech). Hunting Points: 1321

Third Place: Evans (Lightsaber Mech). Hunting Points: 1289

Fourth Place: Katie (Lightsaber Mech). Hunting Points: 1276

...

Roasting\_Chang'e\_While\_Hugging\_Jade\_Hare: "Fuck, higher than the first and second runner ups by three times! Cheater! Impossible!"

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Finally, we're not alone. Now there's a big boss who will be a worthy opponent for the cheater group in our zone. Of course, Hu He the Great Demon King is excluded, he's totally clueless. (laughing emoji)"

Yechen\_The\_Most\_Handsome: "I'm trembling. Luckily, I'm a close combat fighter. If I played against her in long-range combat, I'm sure I can't beat her even with all the luck in the world. (weak face emoji)"

Jedi\_Knight: "One shot, one kill. No bullets wasted. This is the debut of a truly epic player. I look forward to the godly war between the big bosses in the Individual Skills Battle!"

Yigit (USA): "I wanna know. Even if she used the aim-lock cheat, the damage wouldn't be this high, unless she leveled up her Dream Eater with all the resources she had."

Bible\_Apostle (USA) replied to Yigit: "I fear that it might be just as you thought. If I had skills like this, I would surely upgrade all my weapons and go fight all the monsters at much higher levels!"

...

Emily's performance had wowed her audience.

Whether it was any of the three servers, every player was stunned.

Even Ao Jian and his group were lost in deep thought after watching the video.

Emily's name had also made it onto the three main servers on the third day the American server launched. She was already burned into every player's memory.

Deadly! Obstacle-free sniper! Rampaging aim-lock monster! Grim reaper!

All sorts of nicknames began to emerge, and every one of them certainly proved Emily's superhuman sniper skills.

As the players waited, the officials finally made an announcement. Because of Battle Online's impeccable reputation, a few lines of explanation was enough to convince all the players.

Battle Online Official Announcement: "After deliberating over players' reports and feedback, we now officially confirm that Player Emily has not used any cheat codes. All of her sniper skills were using her personal abilities. In fact, this game is free from any cheaters, scripts, or any other hacking programs."

The official announcement evoked chaos among the players again.

This time, the bot-like player named Emily was instantly regarded as a highly Legendary Sniper.

# Chapter 279 - Even The Useless Players Could Become Gods

Blue Valley Ruins, Land of Naraka.

This land that had once nurtured the highly civilized and advanced Blue Valley Clan had lost its previous luster.

In this vast modernized city, most of the buildings were overgrown with vines and moss, while bloodthirsty beasts roamed the streets. It truly resembled a ghost town in some sci-fi movie.

In the Land of Naraka, the dominance of a clan was never permanent. Nobody could guarantee that their clan would stand forever in such a harsh environment. So, they had to kill and loot endlessly. At the same time, they must bulk themselves up to wipe out all other forces that could be a threat to them.

These were the central themes of Naraka, the harshest environment of all the realms in the Underworld. Brutal power is truth and the right to speak to the outer world.

From the rooftop of an abandoned high-rise building, a silver Dream Eater glimmered ominously in the fading sunlight.

Wind speed of 12 feet per second, from east to west. It was a wind of middling speed, blowing at a positive angle...

After adjusting the angle, Emily's sights immediately exceeded 1500 yards through her sniper scope.

In her sights, a silverback gorilla in broken armor was tearing up its prey and ferociously consuming it, as blood splattered everywhere.

[Silverback Demon Gorilla (Fledgling Ghost Commander)]:

Creature Details: A byproduct of accidental exposure to the Blue Valley Clan's radioactive substance, this silverback gorilla's body cells have mutated, altering its genetic sequence to give it extreme physical strength and defensive power.

Creature Status: Micro-growth. Its body constantly regenerates, thus, it needs a large amount of food for sustenance.

Bang!

The sound of a gunshot broke the still air. A bullet spun out of the barrel and arched toward the gorilla's head, under the influence of wind speed and gravity.

Splat! The shot landed precisely on the forehead, causing it to tumble backward, almost falling to the ground.

Provoked, the silverback gorilla growled in anger. It turned around and scanned its surroundings furiously with its eyes.

This was the first time she had encountered a Ghost Commander. Emily was stunned by its resilience.

So far, this creature had demonstrated the strongest resilience amongst all the others she had encountered. It was still moving about normally after being shot in a vital spot.

Still, Emily's expression didn't change at all. Years of stalking and killing had trained her to keep a steady head.

She adjusted her rifle slightly, before firing another shot.

Bang! The bullet hit the wounded gorilla on the same spot on its forehead. Instantly, the wound collapsed and tore up its skin, and blood started to gush out from the bullet hole. This enraged the beast. It thumped its chest angrily as it looked around for its attacker hidden in the shadows.

Just as Emily was about to fire her third shot, the silverback gorilla turned and fixed its eyes on her, 1500 yards away and all.

Bang!

Again, the shot hit the same spot, and a mist of blood exploded from the silverback gorilla's forehead.

Growl!

As the silverback gorilla roared, it hopped upward and reached for the roof of a building beside it. It leaped from one building to another, moving at incredible speed toward Emily.

Realizing that she had been discovered, Emily did not panic. She tapped her chest once and an ammo storage cartridge popped out.

She took out three special blue bullets, removed the magazine carefully, and loaded the three special bullets into the slot.

[Armor-Piercing Bullet (Beginner Level Special Ammunition)]:

Item Details: Special ammunition purchased at the shop, 20 soul coins per bullet.

Item Effect 1: Level 1 penetration (Target defense decreased by approximately 10%, maximum value limit 100)

Item Effect 2: Bullet damage increased by 20% (this damage is affected by weapon).

Ka-ching!

Ammo was now locked and loaded. Take aim and fire!

Her shoulder jolted back hard from the rifle's recoil, as the bullet flew out of the barrel, leaving two vortex trails in its wake.

Bang!

The silverback gorilla was advancing too fast to dodge the shot and was hit directly.

Argh! The creature cried out in pain as it fell to the ground.

This time, Emily had not aimed for its forehead. Instead, she had shot it dead center in its right eye.

The armor-piercing bullet penetrated the silverback gorilla's right eye, straight into its brain. Milky white brain matter seeped out from its right eye, as it screamed in agony and rolled around the ground in pain.

Unmoved, Emily looked through her scope again, searching for other parts on the creature where she could inflict extensive damage.

She was fully aware of her own dire situation. All her resources had been used up to upgrade her weapons. If these powerful creatures were to get too close, she would not stand a chance. Her only effective strategy was to kill them from a great distance.

Even after losing an eye, the silverback gorilla could still see well. Thus, it remained a danger to her.

Growl! The gorilla roared into the sky, sending a huge shockwave rippling outward, as it flailed about on the ground.

Bang! Another armor-piercing bullet shot into the silverback gorilla's mouth this time.

Rawr!

This shot had a devastating effect. The silverback gorilla began to vomit blood, spitting out half of its tongue that had been sliced off by the armor-piercing bullet.

She only had one armor-piercing bullet left. Emily's expression became increasingly somber.

This powerful creature's endurance was beyond her. Ordinary recharged bullets had no effect on it, so she had to make sure she finished the creature off with this last bullet.



The distance between them was now about 700 yards.

The silverback gorilla seemed to sense her deadly skills in long-range combat. Suddenly, it turned around and flailed its limbs about as it moved backward toward Emily.

Seeing this, Emily pulled out her magazine, swapped her last armor-piercing bullet with charged bullets, and slid the magazine back into her rifle.

Ka-ching! Her rifle was loaded.

Ready, aim, fire!

Bang! This shot hit the back of its head and disrupted its balance, causing it to stumble and almost fall.

Emily's lips curled upward slightly. She adjusted her aim for another shot!

Bang!

The bullet hit the wound on the Silverback gorilla's forehead again. This time, it penetrated the back of the creature's head, as it let out a deafening cry.

Gauging the distance with her eye, Emily quickly pulled out her magazine and slid the last armor-piercing bullet into the chamber of her rifle.

Dynamic Vision Device activated!

The mech revved up, as the outline of the silverback gorilla's movements reflected off Emily's eyes.

Her last armor-piercing bullet. No mistakes were allowed with this shot!

Bang! The muzzle flared.

The bullet passed through the wound made by the previous four shots, penetrated deep into the silverback gorilla's brain, and collided with the

other armor-piercing bullets that had been shot into its right eye. This intense impact turned the silverback gorilla's brain into goop.

Now, it was less than 200 yards away from Emily. Five more seconds and it could have a chance to fight back!

However, it crashed to the ground, kicking up a cloud of dust as it fell heavily.

[Server Announcement, Player Emily skipped 76 levels and killed a Beginner Ghost Commander level creature, the Silverback Demon Gorilla, activating an exclusive reward: one customized weapon!]

This time, the three main servers went berserk again.

No one expected any player to kill a Ghost Commander Level creature seven days into the server's launch. And to top that, she skipped 76 levels. This could have been deemed a divine miracle to the older players, since it was an achievement even elite players like Ao Jian had never won.

Forum:

Watermelon\_Taro: "How scary is this sniper? I can understand the skip-level creature killing part. Back then, Ao Jian also skipped tons of levels to kill creatures. But this is a freaking 76 level skip. Are you kidding me? (shocked emoji)"

Prince\_Charming123 (USA): "Only snipers could be this badass. If other players upgraded their weapons, they wouldn't even know how they'd die. However, the Rechargeable Mech is the hardest to control among all mechs, and those that have a sniper rifle as their main weapon is even harder. Sniping requires all factors such as light, wind speed, rain, etc., so please don't choose rashly or you'll definitely regret it!"

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "They used to say assassins kick the most butt, but now things have changed... I'm crying for casual players like us, can the officials please strengthen our kind."

Assassin\_Creed: “Also, no one has learned the Prajñā Scarification at the current stage. If the distance of the Prajñā Scarification is infinite, and I locked the Sniper Legend from 1000 yards away, then her headshot would have been a reverse headshot. In conclusion, assassins are the daddies of all other classes. (laughing emoji)”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Assassin\_Creed: “If Greater Mages had forbidden skills, an epic war between the players would begin, and the world of gaming would be destroyed by this. The expansion packs would be fast-forwarded to the chapter where we rebuild our home. (laughing emoji)”

Junior\_Captain\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “What the hell are you saying? I say the soldiers’ defenses are the best. No matter if it’s the Prajñā Scarification or forbidden skills, even when the world’s gone, we’ll still be here for eternity. (laughing emoji)”

Jason (Europe): I checked the American server’s current class data. She must’ve used all of her resources to upgrade her weapons. If she were at the same level, I guess one sword would take her out.”

Apocalypse (USA) replied to Jason (Europe): “The problem is, no one can get near her. (begrudging emoji)”

Jason (Europe) replied to Apocalypse (USA): “Put it this way, the American server’s Rechargeable Mech aces in long-range combat. But, then shockwaves from a single missile could kill her if she keeps upgrading her weapons like this.”

Apocalypse (USA) replied to Jason (Europe): “Sounds about right. (Shining eyes emoji)”

Junior\_Captain\_Of\_Demolition\_Officers: “I think only the killer couple can match her at the current stage.”

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Hu He Demon King: I don’t know what you guys are fighting about. I need a train to house all the ghost commanders I’ve dug up. A beginner level Ghost Commander is not even worth my effort. I’m done. Time to dig for some gods. (laughing emoji)”

...

Five days later, Emily's performance shook the whole forum again.

Besides admiring her superhuman skills, the topic of whether her extreme style of distributing her resources was right or wrong was hotly debated by the players.

Soon, players who selected the Rechargeable Mech in the American server began to emulate Emily's strategy of dumping all their resources into upgrading their sniper rifles, trying to skip levels and kill creatures.

Unfortunately for them, they failed tragically.

When they tried to emulate her initially, the forum on the official website was flooded with negative reviews about the Rechargeable Mechs using sniper rifles as the main weapon. Naraka players said that it was the most useless class among the useless classes.

After all, ordinary people would never be able to operate an awesome weapon like a sniper rifle so easily.

After numerous attempts, many players eventually gave up trying to upgrade their sniper rifles. They switched to other weapons that were easier to use such as rechargeable hand grenades and machine guns.

It could be said that skip-level creature killing became an unreplicable legend in the Land of Naraka.

It was then that the players finally realized something.

There were no real useless classes. As long as you were skillful enough, a useless class could become a legend, and even a god!

# Chapter 280 - The Black Lily Of Death

Emily never thought that killing this powerful creature would have earned her a hidden reward.

A game menu immediately appeared in front of her and a system notification popped up.

[Please select a customized weapon: (1) Close Combat Weapon (2) Long Range Weapon]

Emily immediately tapped the second option.

[Long Range Weapon custom options: Bow and arrows, Stealth weapons, Firearms, Energy aggregators...]

After numerous selections, a template of a white sniper rifle appeared before her. There were many parameters and recommended schemes beside the template. There was also a feedback column at the bottom.

Emily knew her way around sniper rifles extremely well, so she ignored all the recommendations and began making her own configurations. She made it based on her personal favorite weapon in reality, The Kiss of the Black Lily.

At this moment, Emily was like a kid in a candy store, rather than a ruthless killer.

...

Meanwhile, at Tong Gua's forge in the Beiqi Mansion of the Dead...

A shirtless Tong Gua was pounding a piece of fine cold spirit ore with a hammer in his right hand.

“Fuck, why isn’t she done yet? She really thinks she’s making an artifact!” Tong Gua felt restless as he glanced up at the number of repeated parameters.

This was the first time he had faced a customer with such a complicated request. If it were other players who were customizing their weapons, he would have probably completed their request by now. However, this time was different. This was an order from Lu Wu, and he had been instructed to build it in the given amount of time.

He thought that it was almost done, but he realized that this customer’s weapon configurations were all her own. None of his recommendations had been considered. In fact, she ignored them completely. This greatly exhausted Tong Gua as he could only modify the spiritual ore’s purity and shape bit by bit.

Clang! The helpless Tong Gua had nowhere to release his frustration and anger, so he vented his resentment on the spiritual ore.

Once Emily was done setting her sniper rifle’s parameters, Tong Gua could finally speed up his forging.

Tong Gua’s powerful forging skills were undeniable, as he pounded relentlessly on the spiritual ore, gradually bending and twisting it into the form of a black sniper rifle.

When his work was almost done, Tong Gua prepared to throw the rifle into the forging oven for enchantment.

Suddenly, additional feedback from Emily came in again, “Make the rifle parts modular. I must be able to disassemble the rifle quickly at any time, and reassemble the parts differently into another weapon.”

This left Tong Gua utterly dumbfounded. He stared at the already-formed sniper rifle template and felt the urge to kill someone.

Wouldn’t this mean he had to do it all over again?

All he could feel now was anger, endless anger. This player better not come to the Mansion of the Dead or else I will show her the meaning of true happiness!

However, Tong Gua realized that there was a problem. Since he did not know anything about firearms, how was he supposed to forge all the different components?

Tong Gua was stuck, having no idea where to start. Suddenly, multiple drawings appeared in his mind as he heard Bei Li's voice.

“Follow these blueprints! After you've strengthened it with the enchantment, pass it over to me!”

Barrel, muzzle brake, optical pupil-focusing sights, sensor assembly, laser rangefinder, grip, buttstock, magazine, barrel, bullet box, bracket, rifle groove, trigger cocking lever, various high-precision screws, bolt, hammer, firing pin, safety, locking mechanism, recoil spring, hammer, iron resistance, shell hook, ejector, magazine...

Tong Gua almost killed himself when he saw the blueprints. All these just to make one weapon? And not multiple weapons?

Tong Gua looked glumly at Xiao Tian who was lying on his bed and scrolling through the forum. Resentment began to fill his eyes.

Xiao Tian noticed Tong Gua's resentful stare and turned around quickly, “Boss Tong Gua, don't look at me like that... I don't know how to do this!”

“Why don't you learn? I can teach you. As the saying goes, learn a skill for a better tomorrow...”

“No no no! I'm too dumb. I don't have enough talent to forge anything. It's better if I don't ruin your reputation!”

“I don't care...” Tong Gua said grudgingly.

Still, the task had to be completed. Tong Gua took out a few more cold pieces of spirit ore and threw them into the forging oven, as the hammer in

his hand started pounding once again.

After two hours of relentless pounding, all the components for the weapon were finished and assembled. Tong Gua was so exhausted that he lay still on the ground.

“Anyone here, please receive the parcel!”

As Tong Gua finished speaking, a ray of light swept over, and all the firearm components on the forging table disappeared.

“Not bad. As a reward, here are 200 soul coins for your trouble. Kindly check and accept them!” Bei Li’s mischievous voice rang out.

Tong Gua had recently gotten into a lot of debt while playing cards. He could not even afford Wood Spirit wine and was anxious to earn money to pay off his debt. This reward of 200 soul coins immediately made Tong Gua’s anguish disappear.

...

After collecting Tong Gua’s weapon components in the Artifact Channel, Bei Li put on a serious expression and adjusted the frame of her glasses as she readied herself to give the sniper rifle components a second round of enchantment. This would make its performance more suitable for the mech and optimize the parameters of Emily’s customized weapon.

After everything was done, a weapon with a deep black metallic luster appeared.

[Unnamed Level 1 (Growth weapon)]:

Item Details: Produced by Tong Gua’s Forge. An Epic Level sniper rifle that has gone through two degrees of enchantment, designed by an unknown expert. There are 32 internal components that can be disassembled and assembled into a new type of firearm. (Available after 80th Level)



Item Level: Epic Growth type. (Can be reshaped by the owner's shooting style)

After looking at the weapon with satisfaction, Bei Li sent the weapon to Emily's personal channel with a nod.

Lu Wu took out his little book and wrote Emily's name in it.

There was now an additional member in the Gifted Level players book. Lu Wu couldn't help but feel happy.

The reason why Bei Li made the gun herself this time was because both of them recognized Emily's talent and ability. They also felt that she had great potential.

...

[Game Notification: Your weapon has arrived. Kindly receive and check it out!]

Emily, who was still dreaming about customizing her own weapon, immediately opened her channel and removed the sniper rifle excitedly.

Her gaze was instantly drawn toward a lily that was outlined in black on the buttstock.

It looked as if it was blooming and wilting at the same time.

A black light surrounded the body of the gun and the black lily appeared to be constantly changing its form under a stream of light. It was so beautiful that Emily fell in love with it at once.

Click!

A clear mechanical sound was heard as she pulled on the trigger.

What a great weapon! This feeling reminded her of her lost gun, the Kiss of the Black Lily.

She then removed the gun magazine and tried loading it in order to get a better feel of it. To her surprise, she found a purple bullet inside with a black lily engraved on it.

[Black Lily (Special Bullet)]:

Item Details: A free gift that's included with the customized weapon. This limited edition item cannot be repurchased once depleted.

Item Effect: Damage is tripled, with Level 5 penetration (50% disruption, Upper limit set to 10,000 points).

(Attention: Since the Underworld exists in real life, the disruption has an upper limit. For example, the beginner's level bullet-proof vest, even though it has 10% disruption, can only have a maximum of 200 defense points. Another example is the Ghost Emperor Level biological data that has a defense of 10,000 defense points. It's obviously unrealistic to use a beginner's level bullet-proof vest to break a 10% defense, hence the upper limit is set.)

The effect of this bullet shocked Emily.

What an amazing concept of triple damage!

She thought about the frightening power of this gun, combined with her killing style which was mainly head and neck shots that caused critical damage. If these are all tripled, with an addition of a 50% disruption, then I would be unstoppable!

Emily punched the air in excitement. With the bullet, she believed that one shot was enough to beat that silverback demon gorilla that she had previously encountered.

This bullet was a work of art, so Emily felt reluctant to use it.

After much thought, she didn't place the bullet back into the rifle magazine, but into her channel instead.

This would be her deadly friend in the future.

[Game Notification: Please name your customized weapon!]

The appearance of the game notification stunned Emily for a moment. Then, the corner of her lips then curled up into a smile:

“The Kiss of the Black Lily!”

[Naming Successful. This weapon has been named: Kiss of the Black Lily]

Now that the naming was done, Emily opened her shop menu and clicked on the weapon forging menu. She placed Kiss of the Black Lily on the upgrade column and placed her Dream Eater on the right side.

[Confirm disposal of weapon? Once confirmed, Dream Eater will be turned into spiritual ore (experience points) and will be absorbed by the Kiss of the Black Lily. As a result, the weapon will be permanently destroyed.]

Confirm!

After clicking on the confirm button, Dream Eater began to break down. It turned into multiple rays of light and rushed towards the Kiss of the Black Lily.

Bang!

The right column turned into a pile of black ash as rays of light encircled the Kiss of the Black Lily, automatically upgrading it to Level 24.

Emily’s eyes were filled with excitement as she watched the Kiss of the Black Lily become even more beautiful.

After removing the weapon, Emily disassembled and then reassembled the components.

After an hour of disassembling and reassembling, Emily became familiar with the weapon inside and out.

She reassembled it once more before loading it with rechargeable bullets. Her heart pounded with the desire to kill.

It's time to test it!

Creatures within Emily's 1,000 yard radius immediately became her target.

One shot, one kill!

At that moment, Emily seemed like the God of Death, using the Kiss of the Black Lily to send kisses of death to creatures within her radius.

The most critical damage could not be harvested so easily.

The unbelievable effectiveness of Emily's shots shocked even Lu Wu, who was watching behind the scenes.

Emily had now really become a black lily, exuding a deadly fragrance and filling everyone with fear.

# Chapter 281 - Potion Master Trial

Chapter 281: Potion Master Trial

The Mansion of the Dead, Beiqi.

In stark contrast to the grueling survival mode in the Land of Naraka, the lives of the players in Beiqi had slowly regained normalcy after the death of the short-lived king, Yue Yao.

Lu Wu had tried to recruit Yue Yao before, but he had his own principles. Thus, he stubbornly refused Lu Wu's invitation.

Since he couldn't return to the Land of the Nine Luminaries and his army had also completely perished, it was undoubtedly a shocking trauma for him. In his eyes, the players were his arch-nemesis, so he'd never surrender or join their side, even in death.

This immensely disappointed Lu Wu, but he remained merciless.

The rules of the Underworld stated that the victor would be king. Furthermore, Yue Yao had discovered Lu Wu's existence at that time. Since they could not co-exist, there was no need for him to continue living.

After Yue Yao had passed away, the overall strength of the players in Beiqi was elevated again. The destruction of Yue Yao's Army gave the players a special title as a reward, so they were all greatly satisfied.

After everything had returned to normal, the players had a huge variety of activities to entertain themselves, other than farming monsters to level up like usual.

After the Rock Ghost King had become an NPC, it'd be safe to say that the entire Land of Beiqi would be under the players' control soon.

Their next step would be to declare an all-out war against the Nine Luminaries.

That day, all the players suddenly received a game notification.

[Game Update Announcement: A new life character class called Potion Master is unlocked.]

Potion Master (Life Character Class):

Character Class Details: This class does not clash with the player's main character class. After officially becoming a Potion Master, the player will obtain its unique special skills.

The description of the five main basic skills of the class:

[Potion Crafting (Beginner's Level)]:

Skill Details: The main skill of Potion Master. The player precisely calculates the uses of each spiritual material and refines them together to craft a potion with a stronger effect.

[Spiritual Material Spirituality Identification (Beginner's Level)]:

Skill Details: After mastering the skill, the players can identify the spirituality value of each spiritual material, as well as discern the difference between similar-grade spiritual materials. After leveling up, the player can observe the spirituality condition (dehydration, depleted soul aura, overnourished, and others).

[Spiritual Plant Cultivation (Beginner's Level)]

[Spiritual Plant Grafting (Beginner's Level)]

[Spirituality Purification (Beginner's Level)]

...

The first life character class was unveiled to a cacophony of excited screams from the players.

Meanwhile, in the safe zone of the Mansion of the Dead in Beiqi, a gigantic tree-like structure suddenly appeared next to Tong Gua's Forge. There was a huge board plastered across it.

[North Rocks Potion Crafting Society]:

**Building Details:** In the Potion Crafting Training Society, all the players above Level 80 can apply to advance into a Potion Master. After passing a series of tests, players will officially become a Potion Master and obtain a Potion Master menu. (Application to advance into a Potion Master would open regularly.)

**Building Functions:** Potion Master advancement, purchasing Potion Crafting Furnace, Potion Master class upgrade.

**Building Owner:** The Rock Ghost King (Mid-stage Ghost King NPC)

The unveiling of the Potion Master life character class instantly attracted a huge number of players' attention, especially the peaceful players that hated battling and preferred spending their leisure time nurturing plants and flowers. Thus, a swarm of people immediately thronged the North Rocks Potion Crafting Society.

However, contrary to their expectations, it was not easy at all to advance into a Potion Master.

Even in the Underworld, only very few people could become a Potion Master. After all, it was not really a game. Only players that were truly gifted could walk down this path and persist for a long time.

Actually, it was quite easy to craft potions if one followed the preset template correctly, even the measurement artifact for potion-crafting could be set properly. The players merely needed to collect enough ingredients and click start to easily begin the crafting process.

However, if the players did not adhere to the template settings perfectly, they would be stuck in a dead-end, while over-reliance on the template would remove the ability to innovate recipes in the future.

Since Lu Wu wanted to mold the players into an actual talented clan, he had to naturally make a trade-off there.

Hence, instead of forcing them to use the potion crafting templates, he allowed the players to practice first. He only provided them the technology and information required, so that the players could experiment on fusing the spiritual materials with a stable value.

With such a harsh and stringent education method, Lu Wu believed that a large number of genuine Potion Masters could be born in the future.

They would need to rely on their own effort to grow and create new formulas, as well as learn to revise and improve many existing recipes.

A myopic and limited selection of spiritual materials based on the template would only restrict their innovation, so Lu Wu swiftly abandoned the idea.

He was highly expectant of them, so he would never try to limit their potential.

At that moment, all the players suddenly received a trial quest notification that was announced by Lu Wu.

[As the Potion Master class that is revealed this time is a life character class with an extremely high level of difficulty, it will only be open for 10,000 players to apply. Do you want to join the Potion Master advancement trial?]

When the players saw that there were very limited spaces, all of them bitterly lamented that the officials wanted to bully the fragile players.

However, Lu Wu still provided a clear explanation in response to their dissatisfaction.

He stated that the trial was the first, so there would be many more in the future. He also further emphasized the extreme difficulty in playing a life



character class like Potion Master.

Even though the players were endlessly complaining, they were still highly curious about this new life character class.

Alas, something else caused all of them to gape in bewilderment.

Everyone that clicked to participate in the Potion Master Trial immediately received three dictionary-thick books that were sent by the system.

[Medicinal Herbs Identification (Complete)]

[Beginner's Level Potion Master Guidelines (Simplified)]

[How to Craft Potions with the Highest Efficiency (Simplified)]

It was also followed by a game notification:

[The Potion Master advancement trial will be held in three days. Please read through these books carefully, they will have decisive importance on the results of the trial.]

In the forum:

Crayon\_Shinchan: “Fuck! I want to play a game but it makes me study instead! I surrender my sanity to the devs of Battle Online! You guys are too impressive! (kneeling down emoji)”

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: “I want to kill someone! Who would've guessed that I would one day still have to memorize these three thick books to death, even after graduating from school? Bastard devs, have a taste of my spear! (knife dripping with blood.jpg)”

Roasting\_Jade\_Hare\_While\_Hugging\_Chang'e: “I extremely despise studying, but I also want to advance into a Potion Master. What should I do? (bawling emoji)”

Watermelon\_Taro: “The weakest noob like me finally has his chance! A pauper will finally turn into a noble! I'll burn the midnight oil and drown

myself in these three books, I accept this challenge! (bright eyes emoji)”

Albus\_Dumbledore: “Bastards, how dare they force me to study! Why don’t they place another condition that only a PhD student can advance!”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Albus\_Dumbledore: “Shh, shut up! Don’t let the officials see your message, they might actually do it! (laughing emoji)”

Assassin\_Creed: “All players will claim that they won’t study even if they starve to death or have no games to play! (exasperated emoji) But when all guilds announced that they are recruiting players to become Potion Masters and offer sky-high salaries and premium-grade treatment, I’m sure everyone will rush head-first at it! (okay sign emoji)”

Fabulous\_Fancy\_Elements: “As someone with a PhD in chemistry, I’m definitely picking this class. Come at me, you trash! (crazy threatening eyes emoji)”

Science\_Freak: “Fuck, I absolutely love this. I can even experiment like mad in a game? When I saw that the official announcement said that the potion crafting is full of uncertainties and a mystery potion can help increase 100 levels, I was beside myself with excitement! I’m going to study like there’s no tomorrow for the next three days, I’m going to do this! Once I’ve made my mind, not even Jesus can hold me back!”

...

After the announcement, the players were filled with an ambiguous mixture of joy and uneasiness. The players who hated studying especially almost fainted from the immense shock.

Hence, the players started to make endless attempts, from harsh threats and soft coaxing to coy persuasion and cute acts. By hook or by crook, they desperately wished the officials could alter the contents of the trial this time.

Clearly, they were merely banging their heads against a brick wall, as the officials would never grant them their wish.

In fact, this time, Lu Wu did not even give them a reply.

Thus, the loud whining and grumbling from the players gradually calmed down.

One player concisely summarized the contents of the Potion Master Trial:

“My parents constantly nagged me to study more since I was young, so that I can be someone successful in the future. However, I ignored all their advice, until one day, I became addicted to a game called Battle Online. Only then, I realized that my parents’ words were not wrong!”

# Chapter 282 - Changing Fate By Studying

## Chapter 282: Changing Fate By Studying

The day after the announcement of the Potion Master Trial, a strange atmosphere surfaced around the Mansion of the Dead.

It seemed like each and every one of the players was carrying a set of thick books and lowering their heads as they diligently studied the pages with solemn expressions. Their eyes seemed to be blazing with determination, desperately wanting to reach for the sky.

Even the interactions between the players had strangely altered.

Passerby A: “Brother, where are we going to level up today?”

Passerby B: “I’m not going, stop disturbing me while I’m studying!”

Passerby A: “Brother, I discovered an island at the Void Ocean today, there might be treasures there!”

Passerby B: “I’m not going, stop disturbing me while I’m studying!”

Passerby A: “Brother, we haven’t cleared the Instance Dungeon today, let’s head out now!”

Passerby B: “I’m not going, stop disturbing me while I’m studying!”

...

An even more laughable fact was that some of these players extremely abhorred studying when they were students in the past. However, all of them had transformed into studious and diligent little darlings, merely to

advance into a Potion Master. They would even occasionally gather in groups to discuss the contents of the potion crafting books.

According to a certain player, if he had studied so diligently in school, he could have entered Harvard with ease.

The players had no option but to dip their heads in their new textbooks and study seriously since the officials were so uncompromising. After all, there was no shortcut to achieve it. If they really wanted to become a Potion Master, they could merely study industriously and nothing else.

Thus, a huge number of players had given up on their daily activities such as killing monsters, collecting spiritual materials, and fishing. They had completely dedicated their hearts and minds to studying, diving deep into the sea of knowledge.

A player even recorded these happenings and edited them into a video, before uploading it to the country's most popular video game website, which garnered great attention from other netizens who fervently discussed it online.

[There's no future in playing games. Look at us, high-quality players from Battle Online. We only love studying here. (bold emoji)]

In the video, the figures of the players could be seen reading studiously in every corner of the Mansion of the Dead. Some of them were even clustered in groups and arguing their heads off until their faces were flushed with anger, simply because they had conflicting views on the book contents. It was as though these players were a faculty of academics.

Players who had never played Battle Online were understandably flabbergasted by this unusual sight.

Sword\_Dance\_In\_Red\_Dust: "I've always heard that Battle Online was very evil, but I'm completely impressed this time. Studying in a video game, isn't it simply seeking pain? (laughing with tears emoji)"

MC\_Player: “Shudders. Is this game so scary? How did it make all these passionate players study so obediently?”

Lazy\_Cancer\_Patient: “Splutter! I was drinking water when I watched the video, so I couldn’t help but spat out a mouthful of liquid! Isn’t this too amazing? During their school days, these stupid students with poor results abandoned their education because they were addicted to video games. This is really my first time seeing all these video game addicts so immersed in studying. As expected, Battle Online players defy all our common sense. (kneeling emoji)”

Terrain\_Changing\_Mighty\_Sword: “Can we say that Battle Online is forcing the standard of domestic video game players to change? Hahaha!”

Spring\_Water\_Commander: “This rocks! How did Battle Online manage this feat? My curiosity is killing me...”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Spring\_Water\_Commander: “Hi, just a Battle Online player passing by in the comments. Don’t speculate or doubt us, we’re merely trying to enrich our knowledge and polish our virtues. (laughing emoji)”

...

Compared to the avid discussion happening in the external forums, the exchange in the Battle Online forum was even more heated.

This time, the contents no longer consisted of a miscellaneous collection of meaningless ramblings about the game contents, but was completely covered with posts about questions or opinions from the players regarding the potion textbooks.

With nearly 30,000,000 players competing for just 10,000 spots, the acceptance rate was even lower than applying to be a government agent.

However, this didn’t discourage the players. In fact, all of them wanted to have it a go because everyone was equal. They were all starting from zero without any basic fundamental knowledge about it.

However, these complex and difficult potion crafting books tormented the players terribly. Many players would have hit a dead end if they didn't discuss the content with one another.

Thus, everyone was united in their feelings toward the Battle Online devs – they wanted to kill all of them!

The players simply couldn't comprehend what the expectations the Battle Online team had when they cherry-picked these three complicated encyclopedias to torture them. While perusing the boring pages and pages of words, the players became so drowsy that their souls had left their bodies.

One thought lingered in every player's minds. If they have so much leisure time, why don't they invent some game settings that can help the players improve?

A fact that pained them even more was that the content of these books was quite reasonable and logical. Actually, some players with medical knowledge found that much of the information in the books could be applied in real life.

Even though they couldn't find spiritual materials in real life, they could relate to some of the viewpoints in the books.

Thus, all of the players came to the conclusion that the devs of Battle Online were all terrifying monsters.

It was because the knowledge and information that appeared in the game spanned across different fields, from the previous battle skills that could be applied in real life to the situation now. Time and time again, the developers of this game implemented settings that were curiously realistic.

Hence, the players gave the devs of Battle Online a nickname, the Wicked Mob. It meant that each and every one in the dev team was wickedly intelligent.

The players were painfully helpless in the face of the Wicked Mob, hence they could only be forced to study diligently.

Undoubtedly, a group of players had also become truly engrossed in studying during these three days.

At first, they forced themselves to read the pages, because they didn't believe that these books would be too difficult for them.

However, they were utterly mistaken. Even though there were only three books, the contents were so vast and all-encompassing that the players felt they couldn't finish them entirely even in a few months' time.

These passionate players became truly immersed in the process. By following the instructions in the books and using the spiritual materials in the game, they even slowly started to practice crafting potions.

However, the results were a complete mess. Without extensive experience or necessary knowledge, it would be impossible to successfully craft potions with mere luck.

Needless to say, overexcited people like these had always existed throughout history. While most of the players gave up on further experimenting, a few adamant players continued to make multiple attempts.

On the third day, some players managed to craft an elixir from fire, causing a shockwave of surprises in the Battle Online community.

[First Grade Green Elixir (Low-quality)]:

Elixir Details: Beginner's level elixir. It has too many impurities, so there is a risk when consuming it.

Elixir Special Effect: 30% probability of permanently increasing strength attribute by one point, with a 70% chance of being poisoned and losing 5 health points every second. The maximum amount of strength attributes that can be increased by this elixir is 10 points. After that, the player would be immune to the elixir and it will have no effect anymore.



Potion Master Mark: Feng Xiaoqi (Player)

The emergence of the elixir sent the entire gaming community into a frenzied furor.

It was because they discovered that the elixir crafted by a Potion Master actually had a permanent effect.

No matter what, this meant that the future of a Potion Master was limitless!

Elixirs with the ability to permanently increase attributes were priceless. Furthermore, as the Potion Master's level increased, they would surely be able to craft elixirs with stronger and more powerful effects.

The appearance of this elixir even stunned the players that were leveling up by farming monsters as they doubted the future of a Potion Master.

Instantly, they moaned and groaned in exasperation, lamenting the fact that they had missed such a golden opportunity to become more powerful.

Hence, a huge congregation of players hastily swarmed the Mansion of the Dead at the last minute, trying to join the group of players studying to change their fate.

The sounds of people studying echoed endlessly in the Mansion in the Dead, never ceasing even in the night.

Leveling up, Instance Dungeons, and exploration... none of these were of any importance to them anymore.

At that moment, all the players wanted to do was study, not even the Heavens could stop them!

# Chapter 283 - A Trial That Caused One To Self-Isolate

Chapter 283: A Trial That Caused One To Self-Isolate

Mansion of the Dead, Beiqi.

After an arduous three-day studying extravaganza, the day of the trial finally arrived.

All the players shared a common understanding of how tormenting and painstaking their three-day journey was. In order to be ahead of tens of millions of players and qualify as Potion Masters, they had all abandoned sleep and food, while burning the midnight oil to study under the dim light in the Mansion of the Dead.

The entire place was shrouded in a solemnly studious air. Under such a conducive environment, the players labored through the pages to learn the basic fundamental skills regarding becoming a Potion Master.

Finally, the day to reap the results of their assiduous efforts was here.

While waiting, the players couldn't help but feel extremely nervous, just as though they were taking their college entrance examinations in high school.

Lu Wu personally requested the Rock Ghost King to be the judge and members of the Wood Spirit Clan to assist him for each trial, so that he could select the most gifted player from the 10,000 applicants.

Initially, the Wood Spirit Clan refused the offer as they had an irreparable feud with the Rock Ghost King.

However, the Rock Ghost King went to the Wood Spirit Clan's territory and personally apologized to them. He even released the souls of the deceased

Wood Spirit Clan people as an act of apology. All in all, it was done so that the trial could be held smoothly.

Lu Wu had always been greatly troubled by the feud between the Wood Spirit Clan and the Rock Ghost King. After all, they were from the same faction. However, after he found out that the Rock Ghost King actually set the souls of the dead Wood Spirit Clan members free, all of his worries were resolved instantly.

With assistance from Bei Li, all the souls received a mark from the artifact, allowing it to create new living bodies for them to enter.

Thus, all of them were revived successfully!

The joy of the reunion dampened the intense hatred they held for the Rock Ghost King. Ultimately, all misunderstandings and conflicts were rectified, as their relationship began with renewed civility and peace.

Thus, the Wood Spirit Clan cordially accepted the offer to assist the Rock Ghost King in the trial this time.

After all preparations were in place, the Potion Master Trial officially started, while the players trembled with anxiety.

[Server Announcement: The Potion Master Trial officially begins now. All applicants please stand by, as you will be transported to the Trial Arena in five minutes!]

The players did not have any unusual movements, even after hearing the game notification.

Their eyes were still firmly fixated on the books in their hands, hoping to squeeze in the information of a few more pages, hoping that it might prove to be useful in the exam later.

The entire group of players behaved similarly, hastily trying to read and memorize more in the last few moments, five minutes before the start of the trial.

Ten... nine... eight...

When the transport process was activated, the players' bodies immediately transformed into streaks of light, before disappearing from the spot and transferring to the Trial Arena.

Suddenly, a roar of bitter screams reverberated through the air.

“Ah! Please let me study a while more, just one more page is enough!”

“I want to study, please let me read for a while more!”

“I'm done for, I'm doomed! I'm too nervous so I've forgotten the information on the page of Spiritual Material Compendium Three. I'm done for!”

...

Lu Wu was greatly amused when he saw the players' expressions.

However, since he had announced that the trial would be held three days later, he would not go back on his words. Lu Wu wanted to select the creme de la creme of the players that had exceptional potion crafting abilities.

After all, the shorter the time frame was, the easier it was to identify the talented ones among the less gifted players.

After officially entering the Trial Arena, the players realized that their surroundings were shrouded in complete white, except a table that was placed in front of each of them. The table was laden with a huge assortment of spiritual materials of different levels as well as a purple potion-crafting furnace.

[Rule Notification: The trial duration is six hours. Players will be ranked according to their score, the players in the top 10,000 rankings within six hours will become Potion Masters!]

Score Corresponding to the Potion's (Elixir) Grade:

First-level Elixir (First-stage Potion): 10 points.

Second-level Elixir (Second-stage Potion): 30 points.

Third-level Elixir (Third-stage Potion): 120 points.

Fourth-level Elixir (Fourth-stage Potion): 600 points.

...

(Note: Elixir and potion are both divided into 10 levels and 15 stages. Stage one to two are at the beginner's level, three to four are at the intermediate level, five to seven are at the advanced level, eight to nine are at the master's level, while stage 10 is at the divine level. The Rock Ghost King's standard is placed at the fifth to sixth stage.)

After the players had learned about the trial, another game notification instantly popped up again.

[The trial officially begins now, all players are advised to wisely use their time to craft elixirs!]

When they heard that the trial had commenced, the players hastily rushed toward their respective crafting tables with all the spiritual materials on them. Without any hesitation, they started to identify the quality of the spiritual materials and try their best to remember the recipes from the books as well as the instructions on refining the spiritual materials.

During the trial, the players would not be able to open their personal channel or peruse their books. Everything on the line depended purely on the memories in their minds.

Moreover, much to their disappointment, the players couldn't utilize their analyzing ability in the Trial Arena.

Thus, some of the players were completely flummoxed.

The spiritual materials came in all kinds of colors – purple, red, yellow, and many others. The players couldn't simply identify any of the spiritual

materials that were on their table.

What is this shit? Some of them broke down in despair, overcome with the urge to smash the table before them.

Without the ability to use their analyzing abilities, the players could only rely on the images that they recalled in their memories to identify the mysterious and baffling materials. A portion of the more talented players had even learned to identify the spiritual materials according to their unique herbal scents.

In mere moments, the vast gap in skill level among the players started to materialize.

The second step required them to ascertain which spiritual materials could be crafted into powerful elixirs after refining them, which was a crucial step in the crafting process.

Since all of the players were considered amateurs at this point and couldn't measure the ingredients properly, Lu Wu had specially prepared an electronic scale for them. It would be extremely useful for measuring the weights of the materials needed. (It would be akin to bringing a calculator to the college entrance examination.)

If there were mistakes in measurements, the spiritual materials might clash and become incompatible with one another during the crafting process, thus failing to create an elixir.

Half an hour passed swiftly, as some of the more skilled players had already measured the correct amount of necessary spiritual materials to craft the elixir that they wanted, using the electronic scale.

The next and most essential step was none other than the potion-crafting.

This process had the most extreme difficulty, as it was further subdivided into three different steps. In the beginning, control of fire was of crucial importance. The player had to constantly observe the condition of the melted potion mixture and adjust the flame accordingly. They also had to be

wary of the sequence of adding the materials, as each of them needed to be brewed for a different amount of time.

The final step was the condensation or the potion coagulation step. Luckily, the last step had the lowest difficulty. If the previous steps were done perfectly, there should not be any problems at this stage.

After an hour had gone by, only about a hundred players from the tens of millions of participants had successfully crafted First-level Elixirs with poor quality. Meanwhile, a majority of them failed completely on their first try.

What they would be tested on at this stage would be their mental acuity.

It was crucial for a Potion Master to maintain a calm attitude and mindset when crafting potions. After all, they would need to use many spiritual materials for each crafting process. Needless to say, spiritual money cost soul coins, which cost real money!

Thus, without a steady heart and unyielding perseverance, it would be impossible to progress as far as a Potion Master.

A surge of contempt broiled in many players' hearts at this moment.

Not only did they have to relive the harrowing moments from their school exams, they also felt completely absurd, as though they had become a sort of researcher who was despondently trying to invent new weapons.

This stringent and taxing difficulty brought many players with weaker mentality onto the verge of tears.

In the second hour, the more agile and nimble players had already crafted eight to nine times already, while the slower players had only managed to do it once or twice. Meanwhile, the players who lagged behind were still permanently stuck at the spiritual material identification step, slowly slipping into a state of despair and exasperation.

# Chapter 284 - The Art Of Explosion

Chapter 284: The Art Of Explosion

The Potion Master Trial was still going on...

Into the third hour, the players who were trapped in the first stage threw all caution to the wind and decided to just abandon the identification step. They started to stuff all types of spiritual material into the crafting furnace, hoping that lady luck would smile down on them.

It was highly similar to blindly selecting answers to multiple choice questions they couldn't answer.

However, potion crafting was not something dependent on luck.

Doing so might cause a serious explosion due to the conflict between different spiritual materials with dissimilar brewing time.

It would be pointless to tackle the problem blindly, as the furnaces repaid their lazy approach with a blast of fire and ashes on their hair.

Meanwhile, the Rock Ghost King was acting as the judge after receiving complete authority over the Trial Arena. He was meticulously scanning the players, searching for those that were extremely talented.

After three long hours of observation, a certain player's actions grabbed his attention.

His approach was vastly different from the majority of the other players.

The trial had proceeded beyond half its allocated time, but the player still had not started crafting potion. He was still calculating and measuring the



spiritual materials, at the same time placing the measured materials aside in their respective piles.

The Rock Ghost King was not intrigued by his different and leisurely crafting process, as he was not the only one taking his time measuring. Some players were still at this stage, too. However, the Rock Ghost King was amazed that the player had prepared spiritual materials for more than ten different elixirs.

It was important to note that the trial result was heavily dependent on the players' scores.

The safest route would be to pick a recipe which one was most comfortable and confident with, then repeatedly crafting the same elixir. After all, the only thing that mattered was the total score. However, this player actually wanted to craft dozens of different potions with different spiritual materials and brewing processes.

Surely, this would greatly increase the difficulty, which would immensely hamper his goal to strive for a higher score.

Unless he had absolute confidence in himself!

With that thought in mind, the Rock Ghost King shifted his gaze onto the spiritual materials meticulously measured and categorized on his station. Then, he activated his analyzing ability as he scrutinized the materials.

[First-level Sumeru Elixir Formulation: Sumeru Plant 500 grams (3% deviation), Dragon Fruit 330 grams (3% deviation), Frosty Spiritual Root 220 grams (5% deviation).]

[First-level Yin Yang Marrow Washing Elixir Formulation: Nine-tip Spiritual Fungus 120 grams (4% deviation), Summer Dandelion 60 grams (6% deviation).]

[First-level Cleansing Potion Formulation: Dustfall Fruit 809 grams (7% deviation), Spiritual Water Lily 700 grams (5% deviation), Virtue Fruit Peel 550 grams (18% deviation).]

...

The Rock Ghost King was stunned as he stared at the spiritual materials that were placed according to their formulations on the crafting station.

Even though the measurements of dozens of different spiritual materials were not too similar, the player could perform such an impressive feat after merely studying for three days. In the Rock Ghost King's eyes, this was no doubt a mind-boggling achievement.

More shockingly, this particular player actually didn't use the electronic scale provided by Lu Wu at all. Every spiritual material was weighed and measured with his own hands, putting them into neat piles after cutting the extra parts away.

The difference between each spiritual material was less than 10%, so the player could measure the ratio with just his hands. The Rock Ghost King firmly believed that the player had already far exceeded the level of a beginner.

Hence, the Rock Ghost King was filled with anticipation as he thought of something said by Lu Wu previously.

The potential of the players is limitless!

After four hours, this particular player finally stopped measuring and gathered the ingredients in his hands into a final pile after refining them.

The last pile of spiritual materials piqued the Rock Ghost King's interest again.

[Second-level Netherworldly Frost Elixir Formulation: Stem and Leaf of Comet Flower Plant 320 grams (21% deviation), Yellow Dragon Fruit 1400 grams (23% deviation), Fracking Water 2300 grams (33% deviation), Green Leaves and Spiritual Earth 388 grams (21% deviation).]

Holy shit! Second-level elixir formulation? He's a total genius! The Rock Ghost King was beside himself with excitement.

The player actually attempted to craft a Second-level Elixir only after studying for three days. Even though the deviations were huge, the Rock Ghost King was still filled with hope for the player's explosive results.

Now that there were only two hours left, the player swiftly began to act.

He brought one of the piles of herbs to the crafting furnace, lit a fire, and started his first crafting process.

After ten minutes...

Bang! A cloud of black smoke gushed out from the furnace while the furnace quaked violently.

A notification that showed that the crafting had failed appeared above.

However, the player's expression remained unchanged. With a calm and collected manner, he took another heap of spiritual materials to the furnace for his second attempt.

Bang!

Bang!

...

The expression of the Rock Ghost King, who was originally filled with expectations for the player, grew increasingly awkward.

There was less than an hour left, yet the player kept failing. Furthermore, the processes would fail each time without even proceeding beyond halfway because he had mishandled the concoction, causing the furnace to vomit dark fumes and spew fire.

The Rock Ghost King felt extremely uneasy as he stared at the five remaining piles of spiritual material on his crafting station.

He initially thought that the player was exceedingly talented and had unlimited potential. However, he was merely a defective genius and failed

too terribly.

Bang!

Bang!

Yet, the crafting failed consecutively, as the furnace ceaselessly burst into flames.

It was important to note that that was a sign of a complete failure. Most of the time, even if the crafting process was not successful, the furnace would remain fine. Clearly, this player had achieved the worst possible outcome for every attempt he made.

The Rock Ghost King felt immensely disappointed, as though he was watching a brainless pig crafting potions.

Soon, each and every one of his attempts failed miserably, until he had only one formulation left – the second-level elixir formulation. Nevertheless, the Rock Ghost King had lost all expectations for the player.

Despite the unsuccessful attempts, the player's attitude and mentality remained very positive. In the face of failure, the player calmly proceeded without being taken aback, even until the last group of herbs.

For the last time, he commenced the brewing process based on the information stored in his memory. He first added the Comet Flower Plant into the furnace. After it had liquefied, he put in the Yellow Dragon Fruit, Fracking Water, as well as Green Leaves and Spiritual Earth...

Next, he concentrated on controlling the flame. Under his meticulous coordination, the potion in the crafting furnace began to amalgamate steadily.

The Rock Ghost King was pleasantly surprised when he saw the progress. Thus, he calmed his nerves down and began to observe the player with interest again.

One minute... five minutes... ten minutes...

Soon, half an hour had passed in the blink of an eye. As the potion gradually coalesced, the Rock Ghost King's originally placid heart was ignited with fiery passion again.

The crafting process was almost done, but to his surprise, the player still hadn't made any errors. His control on every aspect of the potion crafting was impeccable. Hence, the Rock Ghost King couldn't help but be excited again.

It's almost done, it's almost done!

Unlike the player's placid demeanor, the Rock Ghost King was very thrilled at the prospect of his success. After all, he might be witnessing the unprecedented birth of a Potion Master with limitless potential.

As time ticked on, it had entered the most crucial moment of the crafting process.

The potion had slowly condensed into pellets the size of ping pong balls, and would surely be formed into elixir pills.

Bang!

Suddenly, a loud explosion reverberated through the air. The crafting furnace shook violently, as thick black smog spouted from its chimney and wafted through the air.

The Rock Ghost King was rendered speechless, evidently dumbfounded by the outcome.

The Rock Ghost King was thoroughly flabbergasted, as he couldn't understand how it had failed.

Clearly, the mixture would have turned into elixir pills after the fire was slowly put out? Even if the process had failed, the mixture would have turned into powder instead. So, how did the player manage to cause his furnace to burst into flames, again?

# Chapter 285 - An Explosive Life

The Rock Ghost King was extremely perplexed by how the player could wildly mishandle the last portion of the process.

His brewing process had been flawless the entire time, until the very last stage. It was even the easiest step, as he merely needed the mixture to condense and coagulate it into pills. Yet, how did he set his furnace on fire again?

In order to investigate the cause of the problem, the Rock Ghost King immediately contacted Lu Wu and requested him to test the player again.

After receiving the feedback, Lu Wu instantly looked up the player's background information.

[Nie Feng (Male)]:

Character Details: Nie Feng, male, Han Clan, Dragon Nation Party member. Born on the 10th of September in 2293 in Indigo City, Tiankui Province. On the day he was born, a factory near his house had a huge explosion. According to the artifact's calculation, the cause of the explosion was tightly intertwined with the birth of Nie Feng.

In 2300, the sewage tank in Nie Feng's primary school exploded...

In 2306, Nie Feng passed his exams with flying colors and placed first in his entire school. Thus, he was accepted to the leading high school in Sangharama City. However, on the day of his enrollment, the school had a peculiar explosion incident...

...

After he graduated from Capital University, his impressive results and spectacular talents helped him enter the government's Special Research Group A.

In 2315, while he was researching the new G-missile, he made a mistake and caused the missile to misfire, causing an explosion. Luckily, there were no casualties, so he merely received disciplinary action by receiving a warning.

In 2316, his error in handling caused a massive explosion in Group A's research laboratory, resulting in 23 deaths. Although he survived, his blunder cost him his job as he was subsequently kicked off from Special Research Group A.

Due to pressing circumstances in life, he searched high and low for job opportunities. Eventually, he settled down as a shop assistant in an herbal medicine shop.

...

Lu Wu was completely flustered when he perused the player's shocking history.

In short, this unfortunate child had led an explosive life. The countless explosions had undoubtedly colored his canvas of life with bold striking colors, adding a literal bang to his already interesting life.

Thus, Lu Wu could understand why the player was so calm in the face of the endless explosions. No doubt, he was completely used to them!

However, it was important to investigate why this bizarre phenomenon would occur with him.

Lu Wu decided to tackle the issue personally. He activated his artifact to thoroughly analyze the player's soul. To their great astonishment, a trace of the Law of Darkness could be found in his soul.

Even though the trace was so faint that it was almost indiscernible, the artifact still managed to uncover it from its scan.

But only Underworld gods could use the power of the Laws of Darkness.

This swiftly piqued Lu Wu and Bei Li's interest. The only thing that they were certain about was that the player must have been an extremely powerful deity in the Underworld if he could master the Laws of Darkness. However, the baffling question that even Bei Li had no answer to still remained – how did he escape the Underworld God List and reincarnate into the living world?

After a few moments of contemplation, Lu Wu conveyed a portion of the person's information to the Rock Ghost King.

The Rock Ghost King jumped in surprise when he read Nie Feng's details.

Originally, he had the intention to accept the player as a disciple and properly nurture him into a talented player. However, it was clear from his background information that he was completely incompatible with potion-crafting. After all, the most taboo and unwanted thing to happen in crafting potions was explosions.

No doubt, this was a piece of disappointing news for the Rock Ghost King.

The person possessed immense talent in identification and manipulation. However, his soul's nature was absolutely incompatible, hence it would be difficult for him to walk down the path of a Potion Master.

When the trial had concluded, a game notification and the player scoreboard were displayed simultaneously, officially marking the end of the first Potion Master Trial.

[Game Notification: The trial has officially ended. The successful players are as follows...]:

First Place: Nie Feng, 120 points.

Second Place: Lu Xigua, 120 points.

Third Place: Wu Hao, 110 points.

...



The players' eyes were firmly plastered onto the scoreboard, as they restlessly scrolled down to find their names.

Surely, this trial had disheartened many players but many of the more successful ones were overjoyed when they received their new title.

However, one player was clearly confused by the surprising result.

He was none other than Nie Feng.

Logically, his potion-crafting attempts were a complete failure. How was he ranked first?

Thus, he hurriedly gazed into his crafting furnace.

The Rock Ghost King was equally perplexed as he saw Nie Feng throughout the entire process and witnessed him failing miserably. How is he at number one?

Confused by the results, the rock Ghost King also stared into Nie Feng's furnace to investigate what had actually transpired.

When the dense asphyxiating smoke dispersed away, an onyx black pill was silently resting in the ashes.

[Explosion Pill (Third-level Elixir)]:

Elixir Details: Mid-stage elixir. During the crafting process, a mild Law of Darkness' power is imbued into the mixture. It coalesced with the spiritual materials and caused a strong rejection response, but the elixir is successfully formed due to the Potion Master's precise handling and exceptional control.

Elixir Features: Unstable and explodes easily!

Damage Effect: After the elixir detonates, it will cause 3000 damage points to all beings within a 50 yard radius. It has a 30% chance of causing persistent health loss. (10 health points every second for one minute.)

Potion Master Seal: Player Nie Feng.

When the Rock Ghost King saw the elixir pill, he was so shocked that blood almost gushed out from his mouth.

An elixir pill was actually formed from the explosion?

Even though he had spent tens of thousands of years crafting potions, this was the first time he ever saw such a bizarre phenomenon.

More unbelievably...

The player could actually craft a third-level elixir after only studying for three days. If he had not witnessed it with his very own eyes, the Rock Ghost King would never believe such a ridiculous event actually happened.

From the elixir's information menu, it was clear that the player's steady manipulation was crucial in stopping the elixir from completely disintegrating and allowing it to form into an elixir pill instead.

His execution was flawlessly concise, even under such distressing circumstances. This revelation greatly moved the Rock Ghost King. He truly felt that the sky was the limit for this player's potential. No doubt, he would definitely become a great Potion Master in the future.

Luckily, the player managed to successfully craft a third-level elixir to help him attain his qualification as a Potion Master. Otherwise, the Rock Ghost King believed that he would, by hook or by crook, force Lu Wu to allocate another spot exclusively for him.

However, the Rock Ghost King still had not been informed about the trace of the Law of Darkness within the player's soul and was on cloud nine, celebrating his success.

Lu Wu and Bei Li exchanged glances that were tinged with schadenfreude when they received streams of feedback from the Rock Ghost King, claiming that the player was a rare genius and he wanted to take him in as his disciple.

His future as a Potion Master might still be undecided, but his explosive ability was surely second to none. They could only weakly hope that the Rock Ghost King's heart was ready for the mind-bogglingly explosive revelation.

Lu Wu purposely didn't clarify it because he wanted to see if the player could create unexpected surprises in the future.

He might be able to create a third-level elixir now, but could he concoct a fourth-level elixir? Or a fifth-level one? Or perhaps an elixir with an even higher level?

If he could successfully stabilize the potion and condense them into pills with the aid of the trace of Law of Darkness within him and his exceptional talent in potion-crafting, Lu Wu firmly believed that he could certainly have a bright future as a Potion Master.

Even though he would walk down a different path as the other Potion Masters, Lu Wu was thrilled. After all, he wanted innovation and creativity, which was why he didn't implement preset templates in potion crafting.

Lu Wu was still fully supportive of this promising player.

Until one day, when the Mansion of the Dead would explode with a thunderous bang...

# Chapter 286 - April Fool'S Event

With that, the Potion Master Trial officially ended.

After that, the players had an unlikely newfound hobby – studying.

The players knew the great value of becoming a Potion Master. It was a job that could turn the poor players' lives completely upside-down.

Many major guilds were fervently recruiting Potion Masters by offering sky-high pay and premium treatment. Many players were green with envy when they saw these lavish conditions provided.

Changing one's fate by studying was indeed a bona fide reality in Battle Online.

In order to achieve the qualifications of a Potion Master in the next trial, many players would bury their heads in the three required books and diligently study them for days even weeks on end.

Studying for happiness had become a widespread motto among the players.

...

One day, the players encountered a peculiar occurrence when they went online to log in to Battle Online.

They couldn't log in at all!

The players were in a daze, as they simply couldn't enter the game, no matter how many times they tried the icon. The screen remained stuck at the character selection and would not progress any further.

Furthermore, it was not a unique experience. Every other player had also met with this troubling issue.

In an instant, the Battle Online forum was bombarded by furious players as they restlessly asked what was happening.

Confusingly, the officials who were usually very proactive suddenly became unresponsive and silent, despite the barrage of questions hurled at them.

Was the game hacked? Did the system crash? Had Battle Online finally gone bankrupt since it didn't earn enough profit?

Endless speculations filled the forum, but the players grew increasingly worried as they pondered more about it. Everyone almost broke down psychologically from the harrowing thought of losing the game.

They gamers were used to the alternate reality of their in-game life. When they couldn't log in at all, they were exceedingly distraught, as though they'd lost an important piece of themselves.

Without wasting any more time, each of the players sprang into action and began searching for news about Battle Online's company in the outside world. Some players even prepared to set up a crowdfunding page to help salvage the company.

All the players were united as one in this uncertain time, faced with the unsettling probability that the game may forever disappear. Everyone hurriedly exhausted all means in real life to inquire about the game's circumstance, while some newspaper company directors even posted on the front page to ask the public what had happened to the Battle Online company.

Wu Guoyi, astonished by the news, hastily dialed Lu Wu to find out if there were any problems with the company.

Obviously perplexed by the overwhelming reaction from the masses, Lu Wu merely said something ridiculous when he took the call.

“Happy April Fool's Day!”

Wu Guoyi's racing heart finally calmed down when he heard that it was merely a prank. However, he still made the middle-finger gesture at Lu Wu through the phone to express his intense contempt at this childish stunt.

After a few hours of frenzied uproar in the forums, a post from the officials finally put everyone at ease.

[You can still enter the game! Today is April Fool's Day, please look at the bottom right corner of the log-in screen!]

In the post, a picture that was magnified three or four times was displayed. On the corner of the image, the option to log in was written in a deceptively minuscule text.

When everyone found out the reason, the wildfire of rage swept across the gamer community.

Knight\_Of\_The\_Abyss (Europe): "I almost donated my annual salary to the game because I thought the company was going under. I'm going to leave a bad review! (angry emoji)"

Watermelon\_Taro: "I'm depressed, I'm depressed. The usually serious officials actually pulled a terrible prank on us. If today wasn't April Fool's Day, I'd smash everyone in the Wicked Mob for being so naughty! (murderous eyes emoji)"

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "This impressive feat. Come, come, come. Wicked Mob members, please surrender yourselves here. My hammer would like to have a word with you!"

Crayon\_Shinchan: "You robbed my three precious hours of studying time! Don't you all from the Wicked Mob know that studying gives me joy? I strongly insist on compensating me for my lost time, you need to at least pay me 10,000 soul coins! (laughing emoji)"

Invincible\_Loneliness: "I was so scared. Fuck you! Screw you devs from the Wicked Mob!"

...

Everyone finally heaved a sigh of relief when they found out that it was a consequence of the officials' wicked hoax.

This incident also made the players realize the significance of Battle Online in their hearts. They dearly wished that the game would persist for posterity, hence the post to suggest the opening of top-up path sprung up like mushrooms after a rain.

This time, they stood on the apex of morality, seeming extremely adamant and confident. They acted as though the opening of the top-up path was for the smooth operation of the game, and not for their selfish gains to become stronger.

Of course, their nonsensical request was immediately ignored by Lu Wu.

What money for the top-up path? The only good thing you can do for me is to make more soul coins for me! The top-up path is a temptation from the devil, I'll never implement it!

After discovering the tricky method to log in to the game, countless players excitedly clicked on the icon to enter their beloved game.

Yet, another occurrence left them gaping in astonishment after that.

[You are suspected of using hacks, such as bots... since this is your first offense, your personnel channel and equipment menu will be cleared as a punishment.]

A murderous rage was instantly ignited in the players who saw the message.

Everyone outside the Mansion of the Dead was wearing the beginner's equipment from the time when they first started playing the game. Evidently, no one was spared from the thievery.

The fruits of their months of labor, such as different types of high-level equipment, vanished into thin air in an instant as though their accounts were completely looted.

Even though they knew that the officials were pulling their legs again, the players could only grit their teeth and endure the mockery.

When they finally earned some money, they opened the shop to buy a set of proper equipment to wear.

To their dismay, the screen showed that their current soul coin amount was zero!

Then, a game notification appeared again.

[Game Notification: Sorry, your account was looted by a hacker and all your soul coins are lost!]

This phenomenon threw the entire forum into chaos again.

One of the players even found the customer service number from the official webpage and wanted to provide some feedback on that recurring issue by messaging them.

However, the chat with customer service left him in utter shock. When he uploaded the screenshot of the exchange onto the forum, all the other players who saw it were torn between disbelief and amusement.

Naughty\_Shrimp: “Customer service lady, I strongly request the officials end the April Fool’s Day joke right away. Please send this feedback to the game devs, please. Help us out here, thanks!”

Customer Service Attendant: “No!”

Naughty\_Shrimp: “Miss, must you be so stubborn?”

Customer Service Attendant: “Yeah!”

Naughty\_Shrimp: “I’m reporting you to the higher-ups!”

Customer Service Attendant: “Are you an idiot? You don’t have their numbers anyway and there are no ways for you to report me on the official website. Who are you reporting me to? (roll eyes emoji)”



Naughty\_Shrimp: “You... you are behaving too foolishly!”

Customer Service Attendant: “Apparently, I just unlocked the forum title limit, do you want to have a taste of something harsher? (laughing emoji)”

Naughty\_Shrimp: “Holy shit, please forgive me, please!”

In retaliation to the ruthless officials, the players began to act cute and beg, screaming that they didn't want the April Fool's event to go on any longer. They merely wished to have their equipment and soul coins back.

However, the outcry quickly subsided.

The players realized that even without the powerful equipment, their skills and levels were still intact.

They had merely lost the outer appearance of donning the equipment, but their attributes remained unchanged. It was as though their equipment had turned invisible.

After reaching the conclusion, the players tried to open the shop and opened a few healing potions, testing to see if they actually still had their soul coins despite the zero number displayed on the screen.

It turned out that the purchase actually went through.

Their soul coins had merely turned invisible.

The players collectively uploaded the photo of Tong Gua showing the middle-finger gesture in the forum in response to the officials' immature joke.

Needless to say, other than pranking them, Lu Wu would naturally give the players some April Fool's benefits as well.

When it turned 8pm at night, another server announcement appeared.

[Server Announcement: Happy April Fool's Day! From now to midnight, other than the one-time-use items, everything else in the shop will be free!

However, the items must be returned afterwards! (Items bought during this duration cannot be discarded, but trading is allowed!)]

The sudden benefits implemented by the officials instantly quelled the burning anger broiling in the players' hearts.

They were clearly in seventh heaven after reading the announcement. They kept praising the Online Battle officials in the forum for putting the players first and lauded them as the leading example of the gaming industry. In mere seconds, it seemed as though they had forgotten how furious and livid they were in the morning.

After the event began, all the players were absolutely thrilled at the prospect of spending unlimited soul coins in the shop.

Everyone immediately purchased the strongest equipment from the shop and wore the dazzlingly impressive armor on their bodies.

They would wear one and buy three more sets of outfits, while wielding a weapon and buying ten more to keep in the inventory.

They fervently took screenshots to keep as memories, so that they could show off to the future newcomers that they had been wealthy and had tons of powerful equipment before.

Even the usually unattainable items, due to their exorbitant price, were instantly affordable for everyone. The entire Beiqi sky was filled with flying silhouettes of the players, roaming free in the air while flapping their newly purchased wings.

All kinds of wild and humorous antics were born from this event.

Some would sell ten purple pieces of equipment for one soul coin, and would even throw in more free gifts if the buyer purchased more. They were so generous, they might as well have sold the items by weight. The players even held a flying competition. The participants would need to fly from the Mansion of the Dead to the Liuli Coast and the fastest flyer would receive 1,000 pieces of purple equipment.

In short, the April Fool's event allowed players to go overboard with their ridiculous horseplay.

Only when the clock struck twelve at midnight, the frenetic celebration would come to an end.

However, the players had not had enough of it. They thronged the forums, begging the officials to hold these events more frequently. After all, four hours of manic skylarking seemed a little too short.

Then, the officials made another announcement again.

[Official Announcement: The event for all players to activate a random limited hidden character class is now here!]

No doubt, the players were beside themselves with excitement when they saw the announcement. Compared to the items in the shop, hidden character classes and inherited character classes were the rarest things the players truly desired.

With hearts throbbing in anticipation, the players swiftly clicked on the announcement post.

However, only a maddening sentence was written in it...

“April fools!”

# Chapter 287 - Two White Phantoms

Once again they played into the hands of the mischievous officials. All the players were gritting their teeth in anger.

The most furious ones gathered together and made a post in the forum.

[Your players are in a bad temper now... they can no longer play the game with satisfaction!]

But it was quickly obvious that Lu Wu wasn't going to bat an eyelash at the protests from the players.

As a result, players who were left with nowhere to vent had begun planning to stir up trouble.

This time around, they formed small groups and began heading toward the Land of the Nine Luminaries.

After all, Beiqi was inhabited by their own men. It would be inconvenient if they were to fight for creatures there, so the Nine Luminaries naturally became their preferred objective.

As for the Sea King, he was still in the midst of growing. It was not the best time for harvest.

However, the slogan that the players came up with to battle projected extreme boldness and confidence, indicating that they were doing this to avenge their former king, Yue Yao.

Such a brazen slogan had brought the players together. It could be said that this time around, they had done it with good reason.

The successive commotion and the act of pillaging from the players had left the remaining brothers of the Nine Luminaries alarmed.

...

Land of the Nine Luminaries, Dark Heaven Pavilion.

The eight brothers seemed a little quiet. Fifth Brother Jin Yao and Ninth Brother Tu Yao were still chucking wine into their mouths.

Bang!

Out of nowhere, Jin Yao slammed the wine glass down on the table ferociously.

“Second Brother is dead. Don’t you all have anything to say!”

“Fifth Brother, we all had a sense of propriety when we made the shots last time. Although Second Brother was heavily injured, it doesn’t mean that he’s dead!” Third Brother Ri Yao said with a long face.

Jin Yao felt a sudden surge of anger washing over him when he heard this. With a furious kick, he overturned the table in front of him.

“Every force of Beiqi is currently fighting in his name to avenge him, yet you still insist that he’s not dead. We are true brothers, how can you all live with this!?”

“Eighth Brother, we definitely had a sense of propriety when we made the shots. Second Brother’s death seems odd!” His Excellency Xing Yao piped up.

“Propriety? I’ve questioned Messenger Yue. He told me that all the forces of Beiqi had sworn their allegiance to Yue Yao, there’s no way that they would betray him. So how about you all try explaining how Second Brother died?”

“Perhaps when he was heavily injured and making his way back to Beiqi, he came across an enemy as strong as Lie Shan...”

At this moment, Huo Yao's heart sank. Although he and Yue Yao had a fight, it was an impulsive move. Now that he knew Yue Yao had passed away, he couldn't help but be filled with remorse. After all, they were brothers that grew up together.

“The main problem that we're facing now is that the forces of Beiqi are constantly harassing our lands. We have to settle this matter at once!” Xing Yao's words left everyone in silence yet again.

That was because they had no idea how they should deal with the constant infringement and harassment of the Beiqi forces on a small group basis.

After all, the forces of Beiqi were there to avenge Yue Yao, their brother. The eight brothers felt guilty about his death, so they simply had no thought of sending troops to grapple with the forces of Beiqi.

However, it would be unrealistic for them to leave the assaults from the forces of Beiqi unresolved.

“Oh right, is General Crescent Moon of Yue Yao's Army still in Beiqi? Shall we ask him to bring the army back first?” Ri Yao asked.

“I've sent Messenger Yue to Beiqi once, but all he got in return was General Crescent Moon informing him from the faraway city gate that Yue Yao's Army vowed to never return to the Nine Luminaries. On top of that, they planned to fight us till their death!” Jin Yao spoke.

Upon hearing this, the brothers felt another headache coming.

“How about one of us head to Beiqi and take over the throne of His Excellency then comfort the forces of Beiqi?” Ri Yao voiced out his opinion.

“We should sit tight for a bit. The forces of Beiqi are currently in a hostile state. After all, it's not easy to make peace with war. In the end, Second Brother didn't even get to hold on to the throne for long...” Xing Yao said as he sighed and shook his head.

“What should we do now, though? The forces of Beiqi are still coming regularly!”

“Let’s hold them off, but we won’t take the initiative to strike first! After all, they might end up being our subordinates in the future!”

The remaining few brothers nodded in agreement with Xing Yao’s decision. It was clearly the best option for them at this stage.

...

The players naturally would have no idea what Yue Yao’s brothers had in mind.

However, they also found that each of the strongholds was being too conservative in the face of their attacks.

The players weren’t stupid and quickly figured out the reason behind this.

Obviously, this was related to the death of Yue Yao.

This made the players even more unscrupulous. In any case, everything would be fine if they kept shouting, “Vengeance for His Excellency Yue Yao!”

The players had moved their hunting grounds from Beiqi entirely to the Land of the Nine Luminaries.

Not only that, but the players from Beiqi had also realized that the area was superabundant in spiritual ore. Some of the spiritual ore that was looted and sold in the Transaction Center topped the sales. Most of the buyers were the newer players from the Land of Naraka.

This truly had the players coming up with more ways to make a fortune. Their strategy was to harvest a great supply of spiritual ore.

In the face of the repeated assaults from the players, several armies under the Nine Luminaries were in distress.

On top of that, due to the invasion from the forces of Beiqi, they had lost several small strongholds along with quite a few men and a good deal of supplies. Sadly, their superiors had made it clear that they were to only defend and not initiate any attacks.

This decision had left them feeling suffocated. As they watched the players provoking them from the outside, they were filled with the urge to rush out and fight them.

...

Land of the Nine Luminaries, Hills of Moshui.

This time around, the players found another small-scale stronghold and had started various harassments.

It was a joint operation of several major guilds. They intended to remove this stronghold that was situated close to Beiqi and plunder them bare.

In the face of the violent attacks from the players, the door to the stronghold soon tumbled, as the soldiers standing guard behind it had no other way but to battle face-to-face with the players.

At this very moment, right at the entrance of the stronghold, Sun Qi the dog, who was accompanying the members of the guild, sensed a familiar resonance that continuously came from inside of the stronghold.

The feeling was wonderful, just like a mother welcoming a traveler home.

“No! My mother would never play games with me!” Sun Qi spat as he suddenly snapped himself back to reality.

However, the type of feeling that lingered in his heart made him feel extremely uncomfortable. He hesitated before turning his head back to Gu Yu.

“Boss, I would like to go in and see my mother... no... I mean I’d like to go inside and search for whatever it is that’s tempting me so much!”



Gu Yu was astounded by what he said, but then he glanced at the stronghold that was about to be taken down and gave him the green light.

“Fine, go... and don’t die!”

“Okay!”

After getting Gu Yu’s permission, the dog skipped happily like a rabbit, keeping his movements extremely agile as he made his way to the inside of the stronghold as fast as he could.

Under the support of twice the attributes, the soldiers stationed at the entrance of the stronghold could only watch as Sun Qi made his way into the building.

He went sniffing all around the stronghold and came to a stop right before a wooden house. That familiar scent was no doubt coming from there.

After giving it a thought, the dog relied on his lean body to squeeze through a crack that led to the inside of the wooden house.

Everything around him was pitch-black. He sniffed the air subconsciously. That familiar scent was getting denser as if it was right in front of him.

All of a sudden, a pair of dark-green eyes lit up in the darkness, causing him to jump back in shock.

At this time, a bright green dot of light, sparkling and translucent, appeared in the wooden house, dispelling the darkness and illuminating the surroundings.

Sun Qi was very familiar with green dots like these. They were exactly the same dots that would appear when he used his skills.

Then he saw a snow-white spiritual deer hunching on the ground not far away, bound by several iron chains. At the moment, it looked dispirited and very feeble.

“Another White Phantom!” upon seeing the spiritual deer, he instantly recognized what it was.

When it heard Sun Qi’s shout, the White Phantom slowly turned its head and was slightly surprised to see the little dog. Then, its eyes gradually turned to disgust as it let out a soft cry.

“Yee...”

Sun Qi caught the look of disgust in the White Phantom’s eyes, making his mood turn sour as he stomped his claws down on the floor, “What do you mean by giving me that look!? Do you want me to save you or not?”

The White Phantom continued to stare at the dog for quite a while, then let out another cry, “Yee...”

Sun Qi fumed and cursed when he saw this. Fuck! It’s fine if the players laughed at me, but you and I are the same species. What rights do you have to despise me!?

Right then, there was a sudden movement behind the wooden door. The door was violently smashed into pieces and there stood Gu Yu.

“Hahaha... dog, so that’s your mother!?”

When he saw the two White Phantoms inside the house, where one was bigger than the other, Gu Yu couldn’t stop himself from bursting into laughter.

The players that had finished off the stronghold heard the commotion and popped their heads in to see, resulting in more fits of laughter.

# Chapter 288 - The Evolution Of Sun Qi The Dog

After yesterday's looting battle, the players once again received a large portion of spiritual ore.

The spiritual ore didn't prove to be as useful as other spiritual materials to the players from Beiqi. After dividing them among the major guilds, they decided to put them up for sale in the auction channel.

Due to the fact that cross-server purchases were now available between the three large servers, most of the spiritual ore was basically bought by mech players from Naraka with rather high prices after negotiation.

Cross-server purchases was a game function that Lu Wu had considered installing to complement the resources between each zone.

This proved to be extremely beneficial to the overall development of the players.

However, there was a small price to pay for cross-server purchases. Players had to fork over an additional 10% handling fee for every item purchased across servers.

This was equivalent to Lu Wu receiving two broker benefits, which consisted of the fees from the items sold by players through the auction and another batch of handling fees from the players' cross-server purchases.

Because of this, his number of soul coins went through the roof. Now, a lot of the proposals on the game construction could once again be inserted into their agenda.

...

In Beiqi, at the Mansion of the Dead.

Sun Qi was staring wide-eyed at the White Phantom in the form of a spiritual deer.

“You can talk?” the little dog directed his question at the White Phantom.

“Duh! We are of the same species... of course you can understand what I’m saying!” the White Phantom rolled its eyes at him in disdain, the look of disgust in its face didn’t falter in the slightest.

“I was the one who saved you, why are you acting all high and mighty!?” Sun Qi instantly felt unhappy when he had to deal with such an arrogant White Phantom.

“I am your senior, and I’m also a pure-blooded White Phantom. You’re just a little cross-bred White Phantom. How can you possibly compare with me? Plus, isn’t it supposed to be your noble job in saving me?” the White Phantom kept its haughty face on.

Sun Qi regretted saving this unreasonable White Phantom.

After giving it another thought, he decided to stop reasoning with the White Phantom. Instead, he questioned the doubt deep in his heart.

“Do you have a way for me to evolve more quickly?”

This problem had been bothering him for quite some time now. He had always wanted to get rid of that body of a little dog that made him grind his teeth and bitterly hate. The second-order evolution wouldn’t start until Level 150. Now that he had seen the real White Phantom, he didn’t want to wait any longer.

Moreover, it would truly be a comfort to Sun Qi if he could fulfill his hopes by evolving into a noble White Phantom that took the form of a spiritual deer. Even in his dreams, he would fantasize of transforming into a snow-white spiritual deer, jumping and running about in the wilderness. Sadly, here he was still, stuck in the form of a weak white puppy.

“It’s easy. You’ll eventually evolve when you grow up!”

Sun Qi was left speechless.

“By the way, doggy, haven’t you already been taken in by a tribe and domesticated into a mount?” the White Phantom looked around at the players who passed by as concern etched into its eyes.

“You’re the mount!” he retorted by lifting his paws and stomping ferociously on the ground. He showed his fangs to the ruthless deer.

The words of the White Phantom made him recall the unpleasant memories back on the European server. The thought of the players using stickers of him in the forum had also surfaced in his mind, making his blood boil instantly.

“What a pity... back then the tribe that locked me up had plans of turning me into a mount as well, but I’d rather die than submit to them. It seems that being the noble pure-blood that I am, still has way higher awareness than you!” the White Phantom stated, clicking its tongue.

At that moment, Sun Qi was filled with the urge to charge forward and tear the White Phantom into shreds.

Just as he was about to flip out, the White Phantom suddenly piped up, “The noble part of me would never be in your debt. However, you still saved me... so, I will help you evolve!”

Sun Qi, who was leaning forward and getting ready to pounce, suddenly slammed on his brakes and somersaulted before sending himself sprawling to the ground.

He picked himself up, his eyes shining brightly, “You can really help me evolve?”

“I, the noble one, will of course help you, the younger generation of mixed-bloods!”

“Come here then, what do I have to do!?”

He instinctively ignored the White Phantom's last few words about him being a mixed-blood.

All he could think about was evolving as soon as possible. After all, he was sick of being in the form of a white puppy!

“Bow your head before me and accept my blessed heritage to you as your elder!” the White Phantom stood up and lifted its head elegantly.

Endure!

This temporary compromise is for my evolution. All this is to get rid of this body of a dog!

After some heavy contemplation, Sun Qi came face to face with the White Phantom and lowered his head.

The White Phantom saw this and a trace of satisfaction flashed across its eyes. Then it lifted its head up and let out a long cry, as spiritual rain composed of green light dots swiftly poured down onto the heart of the Mansion of the Dead.

This instantly captured the attention of the players. All of them stopped in their tracks and started to watch or even film the scene.

While standing in the middle of the spiritual rain, greenish White Phantom Inheritance Spiritual Words appeared out of the puppy's body one after the other.

At that moment, a game notification appeared as information on the inheritance began to digitize with the help of the artifact.

[Game Notification: You have unlocked the hidden terms for a class development and hereby awarded with Inherited Memories from the White Spirits (White Phantom)!]

[Game Notification: Class development commencing...]

His eyes brimmed with tears of excitement when he saw the game notification. At that very moment in time, he knew that he was finally bidding farewell to the dog's form.

There was not a trace of reluctance in his heart, but instead, he was only filled with overflowing joy.

That was because he was fed up with being a dog. Even if he turned into a spiritual deer, it was still ten thousand times better than being a little white puppy.

During the inheritance process, he realized that his Attributes Menu began to fluctuate, gradually rising and falling. He could also feel his body expanding slightly.

Am I going to evolve soon!?

By referring to the White Phantom in front of him, Sun Qi started to imagine what he would be like after his evolution as excitement poured out of his heart uncontrollably.

Many of the players learned through the forums and other channels that their comrade the dog was about to evolve. They immediately headed for the heart of the Mansion of the Dead, wanting to see for themselves what he'd look like after the evolution.

A tinge of regret struck the surrounding players when they realized the dog was evolving. After all, they had long fallen in love with his form of a white puppy. They couldn't get used to the sudden change.

The inheritance process lasted about half an hour. The green misty spiritual rain that was freely pouring away had gradually dispersed. The White Phantom looked frail as it stopped chanting.

“We owe each other nothing now!”

Sun Qi heard it. Instead of opening his eyes, he called out the Attributes Menu and started studying.

Player: Sun Qi (Level 121, 26%)

Character Class: White Phantom Spiritual Beast (Form 2)

Details on White Phantom Spiritual Beast: A unique and treasured Yin Spiritual Beast of the Land of Beiqi. The blood of a Divine Beast flows within its veins. When its life is near its end, it would seek out a secret hideout and leave its Life Inheritance behind to be inherited by destined underworld creatures.

Class Specialty: Growth of attributes increases by 100% for every increase in level. Its blood carries healing effects. In Levels 150/180/200/220, it will grasp the corresponding Inherited Skills.

Stage Two of Character Class: Healing effect increases by 50%. Stage two Healing Chain ability acquired.

[Healing Chain (Talent Ability)]:

Skill Effectiveness: Lock on a target as the healing source and unleash the healing power onto it. When the health of the player reaches 100%, the healing effect will automatically be transferred to the next target, forming a healing chain effect. (Healing chain can connect up to 30 players.)

Seeing that he had truly evolved, Sun Qi was overwhelmed with excitement as he finally opened his eyes slowly.

Huh? Why is my point of view still at such a low level?

He suddenly had a bad feeling. He lifted his claws to take a look, but to his horror, they had not turned into deer hooves.

Sun Qi instantly panicked and turned to question the White Phantom, “Have I really evolved? Has my form changed?”

The White Phantom nodded indifferently, “Uh huh, you’ve evolved and transformed!”



Sighing a breath of relief, he trembled as he opened the Character Interface, followed by a wail that escaped from his lips.

At that moment, the Character Menu showed that he still remained his original form of a white puppy. The only distinct difference was a tiny pair of deer antlers right on top of his head.

“Pfff! Hahaha, congrats little doggy. You have successfully evolved, and your new look is the bomb!”

“He’s no doubt still our beloved dog, he’s even grown antlers after evolving. He surely looks promising and will definitely make a difference in the future!”

“Our dog has grown antlers. In the future, his charges will be more lethal than ever, not to mention he’s handsome! Perfect!”

...

As he listened to the comments made by the surrounding players, Sun Qi glared at the White Phantom before him with eyes full of resentment. Then, he slowly laid down on the floor, gazing at the blue skies and began to sob.

My dreams of getting a new life and becoming noble... they’re gone, they’re all gone!

# Chapter 289 - The Smoking Gun For Cheating

Beiqi, Mansion of the Dead.

The 10,000 players who had acquired the new character class of Potion Master were all gathered outside the North Rocks Potion Crafting Society as they waited for the door to be opened.

Contrary to Tong Gua's style, the Rock Ghost King operated on time every day as he barely strayed from his routine.

As the clock struck eight in the morning, the door of the society opened.

The players who were waiting took turns to enter with anticipation written all over their faces.

The building where the Rock Ghost King occupied was quite different from Tong Gua's Forge. It had its own interior space with a size equivalent to two football fields where it could easily fit all the players.

It was then that the Rock Ghost King's silhouette emerged. Facing the players, he spoke, "Today's mission will be the same as yesterday's... chapter recitals in the morning and potion crafting practical sessions in the afternoon. I hereby declare that all of the potion crafting materials have to be self-prepared from today onward. But, of course, you guys can go ahead without any preparation, it's just that my spiritual materials are all sold at market price."

The players' expression barely changed as they heard his words.

After all, those Potion Masters who were present mainly had support from the major guilds and the consumption of spiritual materials was not an issue for them at all.

The Rock Ghost King nodded with satisfaction upon seeing the players' reactions.

Speaking of spiritual materials, nobody had more supply than he did since he owned the Tree Demon Army.

However, he had to earn his daily bread as well!

Now that the Rock Ghost King was just inches away from being upgraded to a Greater Ghost King, he was hard-pressed for soul coins. Hence, why would he let go of such a good opportunity to earn money by offering them free resources? Right now, the Rock Ghost King had his eyes on the players' soul coins.

Lu Wu was, of course, being informed of this deal and granted his permission under the condition of him taking 80% of the profit.

This somehow gave the Rock Ghost King a considerable heartache. Nevertheless, he was left with no choice since Lu Wu was the one who set all the terms and conditions.

For those who intended to upgrade their realms, Lu Wu's authorization for the exchange of soul coins to soul power was mandatory. Therefore, he swallowed his reluctance and accepted the unfair agreement.

...

The 10,000 players who were now officially Potion Masters would have an additional 30 crafting books to memorize on top of the three fundamental books.

Such a huge pile of potion crafting books had left the players dumbfounded.

Realizing the value of a Potion Master, they chose to bury themselves in their studies as they were unwilling to give up their hard-earned character class.

In fact, the reason for them being here was one of the rewards of being a Potion Master. This was the first Potion Master Training Course initiated by

the Rock Ghost King which allowed them to learn from him for a month.

During this period of time, the Rock Ghost King would coach them on various potion crafting skills. Although the players were gifted, the guidance of an experienced teacher would somehow save them a lot of detours.

The Rock Ghost King spent half of his day briefing them about the things to be done, then left the Potion Crafting Training Society and went for a drink with Tong Gua.

Meanwhile, the players didn't cause him much trouble as all of them took the initiative to learn with their full heart and soul. This was for their own benefits after all and the effects of their learning were indeed obvious.

The Rock Ghost King reappeared in the Potion Crafting Training Society that afternoon.

The afternoon classes were the highlights of his day where he would supervise the players' potion crafting processes and point out their mistakes on the spot.

Being granted authorization for this building, the Rock Ghost King was much the same having a full 360-degree overview without blind spots whereby the maneuvers of every single player could be observed thoroughly. This made it easy for him to have his eyes on all of them at the same time.

As the potion crafting class started, the players took their potion cauldrons and hurriedly moved to the right, keeping a distance from the left side of the room.

The reason was simple. There was this player named Nie Feng on the left side and he basically had the entire left side to himself.

Nie Feng was now considered famous among the Potion Master players as they dubbed him the Bomberman.

Despite his great talent as well as his awe-inspiring comprehension and mastering of various spiritual materials, there was one thing that remained unchanged. Without exception, a cauldron blast was almost a certainty during his potion crafting process.

A few sessions of potion crafting classes together with him had successfully left the players traumatized.

The situation basically went on this way for days.

Just as everything went well with everyone crafting their own potions, a sudden deafening bang resounded from Nie Feng's potion cauldron. This startled the players around him who were concentrating on controlling the heat. Their state of mind wavered, followed by a succession of explosions where all the potion cauldrons were blown up as if a chain reaction was triggered. It was a rather spectacular scene!

The Rock Ghost King was having headaches over this as well. He completely gave up after trying to teach him patiently a few times.

With that, he got back to Lu Wu with the problem. Lu Wu then asked Bei Li to divide the internal space of the North Rocks Potion Crafting Society into two zones after figuring out the root of the problem. The barrier between the two sides was transparent. It only blocked the sound transmission. Subsequently, this solved the issue of Nie Feng being too noisy with all the chaos he created.

For this potion crafting practical session, the Rock Ghost King had picked a book at random and selected three types of first-class potion recipes for the players to try on.

Soon, the players began to get busy with their work.

Moving around the room, the Rock Ghost King pointed out the players' handling errors from time to time, just like a teacher putting up his stern poker face.

All the players gratefully took his advice without any resentment.

The corner of his mouth twitched as he glanced up at the left zone halfway through the potion crafting class.

He saw nothing but plumes of billowing smoke filling up the room as if it was on fire. The smoke was so dark and thick that it had enshrouded almost everything, including Nie Feng's figure.

The Rock Ghost King was rather frustrated upon encountering partially-gifted players like Nie Feng. He felt that it was totally beyond his ability to guide him and he was just so burned out from fruitless teaching methods.

He then shifted his gaze to the players on the right side. Seeing them starting to master the skills, he felt a tinge of gratification in his heart.

Just then, the Rock Ghost King felt that something wasn't right.

He could clearly observe the players' movements since he was using the granted permission. Among all these players, this time he happened to spot two players with the exact same operating style, which he had missed previously.

The whole process seemed to be resembling a projection mapping. After taking a closer look, the Rock Ghost King was surprised to discover that both of them had even weighed out the same amount of spiritual materials.

He was somewhat freaked out of his wits. There was no way this was a coincidence.

Having that in mind, the Rock Ghost King watched attentively once again.

"I'm such an idiot, Murphy. I ruined the cooking last time and now my clumsiness is going to mess up this whole potion crafting stuff, too!"

"It's okay. Just do as I do. Everything's going to be fine!" Murphy answered Little Pomelo in his heart while he was skillfully weighing the materials.

It was then that the Rock Ghost King's silhouette abruptly appeared in front of Murphy and stared at him with an odd expression on his face.

Murphy was taken aback and he instinctively took a step back.

At the same time, the Rock Ghost King noticed that Little Pomelo, who was also crafting her potion, stepped back as well.

Something fishy is going on!

Being aware of the problem, the Rock Ghost King turned away with a snort. Murphy heaved a sigh of relief and threw himself into his work again.

He didn't let them off the hook, though. He immediately reported to Lu Wu that something was wrong with these two Potion Master players.

After receiving his feedback, Lu Wu merely mentioned that he was aware of the situation and asked him to brush this aside.

How was it possible for Murphy and Little Pomelo's tricks during the potion crafting process to escape his eyes?

Apart from this, they had been doing the same thing during the Potion Master Trial as well. They were basically cheating throughout the entire process by taking advantage of their special soul-sharing feature.

The Trial Arena was considered a self-enclosed space to other players, but it did not work for the twins who shared the same soul. They could still feel each other's presence.

Murphy did most of the process whereas Little Pomelo was just following his steps. Even for the past three days prior to the trial, Murphy was the one who took the effort to study. Little Pomelo, on the other hand, took her own sweet time idling around.

Nevertheless, Lu Wu could only turn a blind eye to them since this was a gift for their souls.

# Chapter 290 - The Cobra Squad

The United States, Third District Military Base.

Dozens of military trucks were driving into the military base in succession after they were inspected by the soldiers.

On an empty square in the military base, crowds of workers had gathered to help unload the goods from the arriving transport trucks.

At the side of the square, a fully-armed platoon of twenty men were lined up neatly. They were watching their commander as they waited for his order on the new mission.

There was a logo of a spitting cobra printed on the right arm of these soldiers. They might have been small in number, but their statuses were unusual. They were members of Cobra, one of the top special forces teams in the entire United States.

The comprehensive qualities of the Cobra Squad members made the team extremely ferocious. They often succeeded in turning the tide in many of their special operations. They were the pride of the Third District Military Base.

“Do you know what those are?” their commander pointed at the goods that were being unloaded as he questioned the soldiers before him.

“No, sir!” the soldiers replied in unison.

“That is your new mission!”

“Sir, do we need new equipment for this mission?” the squad leader, Johnson, asked curiously.

“Yes, you won’t be able to complete this mission without this new equipment!”



The commander was smiling merrily, but the soldiers seemed to feel otherwise. To them, their current equipment was good enough to handle any special operation. A change of equipment would require time to adjust. After all, they were not a bomb squad, decapitation was their main execution. They didn't need large weapons that had such wide lethal impacts.

After the dozens of metal boxes were unloaded, the commander waved his hand and indicated for the squad to follow him into the base.

Under their curious gazes, the workers opened the metal boxes to reveal the gaming pods inside.

The squad members looked stunned by the sight of the gaming pods. They didn't understand what they were looking at.

“Sir, you're not seriously asking us to use these for our new mission?” Johnson asked with a strange expression.

“Of course not, didn't you all sign up to be part of the X-Force? I submitted all of your information and your team has passed the audit. Someone from the upper management will be arriving soon to verify your comprehensive capabilities. This upcoming mission is for your preparation, I need you to play this game so you can train and strengthen your fighting abilities through it!”

“We're playing a game?” The entire Cobra Squad was stupefied.

“Sir, game simulations are for rookies, is this training enough to strengthen our capabilities prior to the appraisal?” Johnson voiced his squad members' concerns.

To them, a game simulation might help with their training, but it was too easy for the battle-seasoned Cobra Squad. It would not be effective at all.

“This game is different, you won't be disappointed. Go and give it a try!”

Hearing this, the Cobra Squad accepted the mission even though they felt perplexed. They waited for the operating staff to set up the gaming pods and fill in the nutrient solutions.

After everything was assembled, they took off their armor and entered the gaming pods curiously.

When their bodies were almost covered by the nutrient solutions, the commander's voice rang, "Remember, don't operate alone. Fight as a team and train well!"

Hearing this, Johnson broke into a smile and gestured okay to the commander.

As their vision went dark, their rigid bodies loosened up and they entered the game.

...

Three days later, in the Blue Valley Ruins.

Members of the Cobra Squad were moving forward slowly in half-squat positions with their guns raised.

After entering the game, five of them chose to focus on close combat, another five chose auxiliary combat, while the remaining 10 focused on ranged attacks. This was a perfect combination for the entire squad as it allowed them the agility to attack and defend nimbly.

They finally understood why their commander said this game could train them.

The brutality of the game's terrain was way beyond their imagination. Within three days, every team member had died more than three times.

They were very impressed with the authenticity of the game. The physicality was so real, even the trajectory of a bullet and the possibility of it being intercepted in the game was comparable to that in the real world.

Initially, they thought that this game simulation was a hi-tech product invented by some random research center, but after meeting other players in the game, they realized this was a game for any civilian.

This really shocked them because they couldn't understand how civilian technology could be more developed than the military's.

After they realized that it was impossible to survive this world with their individual capabilities alone, they added each other as friends in the game and finally assembled together.

This had strengthened their team's overall strength greatly. After all, they had always fought as a team.

At this moment, the squad was moving forward slowly in a V formation.

Johnson raised his left fist suddenly. The squad stopped moving immediately with their guns aimed in front of them as they scanned the surroundings ahead of them, waiting for their prey to show itself.

They could hear footsteps getting closer.

Johnson gestured once more and the squad split into two teams to take cover to their left and right sides.

Then, a player with a lightsaber leaped out from a side alley and appeared before them. Trailing behind the player was a tall, rotting corpse.

Seeing that the player was rushing toward them, Johnson bent his right arm slightly and pressed his forearm to the ground. Advance! His squad members nodded at once.

As the player leaped past them, Johnson had already launched his attack. The right arm that was holding the lightsaber tightened as the player pounced from the hiding place and hacked at the walking dead's legs.

As the zombie limped forward, Johnson's left hand had retrieved a short dagger from his waist to stab the zombie's abdomen. He then landed on the ground and rolled away from the zombie.

Bang! Bang Bang!

Bullets could be heard firing intensively, riddling the zombie's body immediately with holes. It fell to the ground with a crash.

"Thanks!" shouted the player, seeing that the chasing zombie had been killed.

The Cobra Squad members stood up to greet the player back, but they did not speak anything more. They merely continued moving ahead.

To the players, this might just be a game, but to the Cobra Squad, this was a test and a training session.

For training purposes, they communicated using tactical hand gestures instead of the game's live chat channel as this convenience would not be available for them in real-life scenarios.

"Hey, you guys shouldn't continue in that direction. The Black Lily's hunting ground is just ahead, you'll be killed!" the player couldn't help but notify them as he saw the direction the team was moving toward.

"The Black Lily?" Johnson hesitated and turned to the player.

"She's at the top of the leaderboard... I suggest that you avoid her territory, she won't go easy on any of you!"

"How many people does she have?" Johnson frowned and asked.

"She's alone! But you won't be able to handle her!" the player advised kindly once more.

Johnson and his squad laughed as they heard this.

To them, no matter how great a professional gamer was, in terms of handling gunfire or fighting in close combat, they were no match for the real life Cobra Squad.

Moreover, they had fought other players previously and it was always a crushing victory for them. It would not be a problem for them to fight someone beyond their current levels.

“Thanks!” Johnson nodded in appreciation, then he waved again in command and his squad continued moving forward.

Seeing this, the player couldn't help shake his head regretfully.

He wouldn't hold out hope on their survival.

# Chapter 291 - Double Kill

Although they didn't see the Black Lily as a threat, the previous player's reminder did make them realize that there could be an enemy hiding in the dark anywhere at any time. They began to scan their surroundings to prevent being ambushed.

While levels could give a player powerful attribute boosts, the Cobra Squad believed that they could completely get the better of this gamer known as the Black Lily.

It would not have bothered them even if her level was higher!

Now, on top of an 18-floor-tall building 500 yards away from the team, Emily was sunbathing lazily, biting a cigarette she bought from Beiqi.

When she was done smoking this one, the corner of her lips curved upward. She reached for the Kiss of the Black Lily and looked through her scope to search for her new prey.

She scanned through the buildings, and the Cobra Squad appeared in her sight.

Prey!

Even though they were players, the rule of this area was the law of the jungle. Players were not only competing with hellish creatures but also with fellow players. Emily had completely adapted to this principle. This was her hunting grounds, any trespasser would receive no mercy from her.

The barrel pointed from one player to another, looking for its next kill.

Usually, snipers would take out the long-range damage dealers first to lighten the pressure. Emily, however, had absolute confidence in her own skills, so she pointed her rifle at the warrior nearest to her.

She squinted her left eye slightly as her pointer finger slowly applied pressure on the trigger.

Bang!

The charged bullet drew a blue streak in the air, accurately piercing the head of the soldier.

[You have killed Player Rocky! Critical Damage!]

Simultaneously, a red number -1823 appeared on that player's head.

Rocky's sudden death shook the squad, but their battle senses were keen. Realizing that there was a sniper, they immediately spread out and sought cover.

Looking at the damage on the mech, Johnson had a grave expression on his face. He quickly signaled to his team that there was a sniper at their two o'clock and asked them to provide cover fire.

They nodded and proceeded to spread out.

Knowing that there's a sniper aiming at them, they avoided showing themselves and began to move more discreetly.

When the team was well dispersed, Johnson held a fist up, signaling them to attack.

Ten members who swapped their weapons for sniper rifles appeared all together at once, aiming their guns in the direction of the shooter, and providing cover fire for their teammates who were going to move forward with Johnson.

Johnson swiftly led three melee and three supports to the nearest abandoned vehicle.

When Johnson's crew reached cover, the ten snipers squatted down concurrently.

They indubitably had the right idea to assist Johnson and the melee characters to close in on the target by providing cover. However, their target had already vanished.

Realizing that the enemy sniper might have changed her position, the snipers signaled to each other.

Finally, they decided to split into teams of two, each providing cover to a certain area of the building.

Receiving Johnson's command again, they reappeared and began firing at once.

Bang!

-1923

A blood-red number appeared again. It was another critical double damage. Another Cobra Squad member was killed immediately.

However, this helped the Cobra Squad snipers to determine Emily's new position. Before she could reload her next round, the remaining nine took this opportunity to shoot at her.

Nonetheless, Emily was already down. She held her rifle and rolled on the ground to her right.

Click! Emily pulled the reload trigger, a blue bullet shell was ejected from the side of the barrel, and she loaded a fresh round in.

She looked up without hesitation, took aim, and fired!

Bang!

Another blood-red critical damage countered... and another dead sniper.

At this moment, a dark look hung on the faces of every Cobra Squad member.



They were one of the top elite armed forces in the United States, but they lost three men in a row to a player so quickly. They would become a joke if word of this got out.

Finally acknowledging the enemy's sniping skills, the remaining eight began to crawl.

After all, they would become sitting ducks if they stayed at the same spot.

They turned exceptionally serious as they didn't believe that their professional sniping skills would lose to a player.

When they were ready, Johnson led them to their next cover. The eight snipers quickly appeared, each targeting a general area, firing at the wall at the top of the building.

Emily did not reveal herself this time. As the snipers were preparing to get down, Emily stood up suddenly and fired away.

Bang!

A critical hit kill!

When she got back down, there was a smile on her face. Her eyes were filled with excitement.

She lit a cigarette and inhaled it deeply before blowing out a puff of thick smoke.

These enemies were pros, absolute professionals! Emily realized this when she saw their movements, but this made it more interesting for her.

Caressing the stock, where the lily continued to bloom and wither unceasingly, she could feel her excitement rising continuously.

Emily was a born sniper. Aiming and shooting were skills that required composure and patience to ensure a precise shot. However, she could do both almost simultaneously, as if she could pull her trigger while she was

still aiming. When the bullet was fired, the barrel would be perfectly aligned with the target.

This was where she outshined the Cobra Squad snipers. They could never hope to match her speed. Even if they did, they couldn't achieve the same accuracy as her.

They were completely overwhelmed by her skill and merciless shots.

Emily gave the snipers kisses of death one by one, utterly destroying the pride in their hearts.

At last, Johnson, as the leader, could no longer stand it and began commanding his team in the team chat.

This compromise undoubtedly proved Emily's dreadfulness, even the Cobra Squad had no idea how to take her down.

"Commander, she's too strong!"

After another sniper was shot down, there were only three of them left.

Facing such a formidable opponent, even the prideful Cobra Squad had to admit that this sniper was far above their level!

Outnumbering the opponent one to twenty, they were still losing.

They'd only felt pressure this heavy before during a friendly fight against the most mysterious team in the United States, the X-force.

Were they really facing just one sniper? They began to doubt.

Nevertheless, the battle had to continue. After the voice chat channel was opened, their communication became much smoother and even their covering tactics had improved.

The most depressed members among them would be those who brought along Auxiliary Mechs.

They had Nano Repairing Bots that could heal their teammates or even boost their allies' damage. Sadly, every hit from the enemy was a headshot, so their teammates were eliminated before they could even be healed.

In terms of damage and range, they were weaker than Rechargeable Mechs. Without sniper rifles, they were essentially useless from afar.

After discussing it, they decided to send out members with Auxiliary Mechs as bait so that the remaining three snipers could take out Emily at the top of the building.

Because of Emily's overpowering strength, the Cobra Squad had no choice but to try one strategy after another.

Alas, even now, they still underestimated Emily, the godlike sniper genius.

When one of the Auxiliary Mechs stood up, the expected shot did not happen. Emily looked at him from afar and waved her hands as if she was greeting him.

"No! Don't get up!" the soldier screamed but it was too late. The sniper behind him was already aiming, he could not get back down in time.

**Bang!**

The bullet pierced through both their mechs and heads, splattering blood everywhere.

**Double kill! Double critical hits!**

# Chapter 292 - Safety Tag

Under the Black Lily's merciless massacre, the ace team of the Third District Military Base was completely defeated.

Every member was killed with one shot, including Johnson. This was no doubt a depressing result.

The gaming pods opened up one by one, revealing Johnson and his squad.

"Oh? Wiped out again?" the commander laughed while watching a movie and holding his mug of coffee.

Johnson and his team were grave and silent.

Noticing the Cobra Squad's low morale, the commander asked with a smile, "What's up? Haven't you guys died a few times before? Why do you guys seem so down this time?"

"Sir, why didn't you tell us that the X-force was in this game, too?" asked Lina, the only female member in the team gloomily.

"What? The X-force?" the commander was surprised to hear that.

"Who else could it be? Twenty of us were killed by a single sniper! Don't tell me she's just another player!"

Now, the Cobra Squad had already suspected that Emily was a member of the X-force as her capabilities were well beyond the average player.

"How could that be? X-force doesn't have the time to play these VR games. Also, I chose this game to train you guys because I was playing it myself. When I realized how difficult and realistic it was, I was the one who requested funding for the gaming pods!"

The Cobra Squad was completely baffled.

They thought the VR game training had been implemented widely in the military. They didn't expect that their commander had personally requested funding to buy this game.

At that thought, a chill went down their spines.

This meant that the accurate sniper who killed them like a grim reaper was truly just a gamer!

Given that all the physical conditions in the game were identical to the real world, that player must also be an amazing sniper in real life, too!

“Sir, this player who killed my squad was called the Black Lily... can we check her information?” Johnson asked with his brows furrowed.

“This game is not made in our country, we have no access to its internal data!” the commander replied with his arms spread open.

“Then let's investigate with whatever information we have!” Johnson pushed on.

The commander, feeling equally curious, turned off his screen and opened a database. He searched for a Black Lily.

A huge amount of data popped out instantly.

While reading through the information, everyone quickly focused on a piece of her profile with a blurry black and white picture attached.

Black Lily: Real name unknown

Occupation: Assassin

Information: An ace assassin of the underground organization called the Black Fangs. Her known body count is 398 with zero failed missions. Known as Black Lily the Grim Reaper among other assassins. An extremely skilled sniper, with a record of the furthest target, an oil tycoon who was shot from over a mile and a half away. Definitely received strict assassin training, an expert in spying and anti-spying. Escaped arrests

several times and is now branded as an S-ranked international felon.  
Extremely dangerous!

Note: In 2316, battled with Flying Bear, the ace sniper of the Fifth Military Organization, and Flying Bear was killed in action!

Note: In 2318, battled with the X-force's Fire-man who was assigned security detail on an important congress member and Fire-man was killed in action!

...

Reading these, everyone was shocked, including the commander.

They were especially surprised by the notes. Even the X-force's Fire-man was killed by this Black Lily.

"It must've been her! I'm sure of it!" Johnson opened his mouth suddenly as he scanned through the profile.

The Cobra Squad was suddenly feeling lucky that they were just in a game. They had realized how dreadful she really was.

"Who would have known that she was in this game, too... and she even met you guys," the commander said gloomily.

"Well, it's normal to die under her, because her sniping skills are number one on the international black market ranking. If even Fire-man couldn't deal with her, let alone you guys!"

"But we had twenty people!" Lina was frustrated. I am a woman, too, why are we so different? She thought.

"Get your revenge, then. You won't die in the game anyway!"

Hearing the commander's words, the team was immediately motivated, their eyes flickered with the thirst for victory.

So what if you're number one? We will take you down for sure!

And so, the Cobra Squad took use of the 3-hour cooldown to come up with a plan to defeat Black Lily.

Meanwhile, their commander began writing a report.

He felt that this game could be promoted to the entire army.

National Defense was allocated a budget equal to 3.8% of the country's GDP. If his proposal should pass, they could purchase the source code behind the game to fit it into military training.

Of course, it would have to be approved first.

...

United States, New York City, a certain farm in the Bronx.

Taking off her VR headset, the excitement lingered in Emily's eyes had yet to dissipate.

Frankly, she was not satisfied yet, but her twelve hours of gaming time was up. If she wanted to continue playing, she would have to get another gaming pod.

Sadly, to buy a pod, identity verification was required. She was not sure if the organization would release her information, so she dared not take the risk.

Living in seclusion, however, Emily did not know what to do other than playing games.

Since playing this game was equal to sleeping, she was not tired at all.

She lit up a cigarette and peered through the window, looking at the green field outside and got lost in her thoughts.

The noises of the cows and sheeps snapped her out of it and this dilemma truly annoyed her. After extinguishing the cigarette, she began to think of how to get another gaming pod.

At the same time, she suddenly frowned.

Footsteps!

She immediately picked up a dagger from beneath the table. Then, she walked to the door and lied in wait for her visitor.

Creak! The wooden door was pushed open.

From the cracks on the wooden door, Emily saw a man wearing a black trench coat and a pair of sunglasses.

While she didn't know if that man was from the organization or not, she obeyed the law of the jungle. If you failed to make the first move, it might spell your doom.

Emily took a step forward and thrust the dagger at the man's neck.

The man immediately turned and grabbed the dagger with his gloved right hand.

Emily was stunned. She wanted to retrieve her dagger, but the man's firm grip locked it in place. She was not strong enough to remove it.

"Black Lily?" the man asked inquisitively.

"Who are you!" Emily was alarmed.

"You can call me Number Seven. The organization that I work for now needs some information from you. Please follow me back quietly or I'll have to resort to more drastic measures. I dislike hitting women!" Number Seven explained with a smile.

Although he was not in the same organization as her, Emily did not intend to obey him quietly. She let go of the dagger and took a step back before kicking Number Seven's groin, hard.

...



The atmosphere suddenly became awkward.

“You’re... okay?” Emily was startled.

“Of course! I lost it long ago!” Number Seven replied humorously.

“Fuck!” facing the seemingly undefeatable Number Seven, Emily cursed and turned around, running toward the window.

She realized that she was no match for Number Seven, so her only choice was to escape.

However, before she could jump out of the window, Number Seven gave her a hand chop on her neck.

“I’m so sorry, I really dislike hitting women!” Number Seven said helplessly while looking at the unconscious Emily.

Then, he swiftly took out a phone and made a call.

“I got the target!”

“Well done, bring her back. She has dirt on the Black Fang. Make sure to get her back safely.”

“Alright!” Number Seven replied immediately.

After the call ended, Number Seven carried Emily on his shoulders and walked out of the house with a cocky gait.

...

At the same time back in Dragon Nation, Lu Wu received a notification from his artifact.

[Player Emily is in danger, here are her coordinates...]

Lu Wu treated every gifted player like his own personal treasure, and he made a safety tag to mark all of them to ensure their personal safety.

These players with immense potential were hard to come by. Lu Wu would not want them to die prematurely.

When he saw the coordinates, he realized she was in the United States. At first, he wanted to send Cangxu over.

Then he remembered that Number One was over there right now.

As such, he used the artifact to connect with Number One, then he sent Emily's coordinates and picture into his mind.

“Number One, investigate the situation and rescue her!”

At the same time, Number One was standing in a random alley. A cocky thug was pointing a pistol at him while spewing profanities.

He took the thug out with a lightning-quick punch before replying to Lu Wu respectfully, “Yes, sir! I'm on my way!”

# Chapter 293 - Tomb-Sweeping Day Event

## Chapter 293: Tomb-Sweeping Day Event

On this day, a fine rain fell persistently.

As history progressed, Tomb-Sweeping Day became one of the four largest traditional festivals in Dragon Nation.

It was a requirement for the people of the Dragon Nation to clean off their family's ancestral tombs, pay respect, and commemorate their ancestors during the festival.

Compared with the other servers, the number of Beiqi players was obviously less in the morning. Most of them had gone on an outing to pay tributes to their ancestors.

In the afternoon, after the players who had returned from visiting their ancestors logged on to the game, Lu Wu released a pre-notice for the Tomb-Sweeping Day Event.

[Game Message: Pre-notice for Tomb-Sweeping Day Event called Tributes to Desolated Tombs...]:

Event Details: From 8pm. to midnight, desolated tombs of martyrs who lost their lives in the River of History will appear all over the Land of Beiqi. Players are granted unlimited use of the tribute item to pay respect to and sweep the desolated tombs during the quest period. The quest item called a Gift from Desolated Souls will be rewarded after the cleaning has been done.

(Note: Each player can only pay respect to and sweep the same desolated tomb once. Each desolated tomb can receive tributes from at most 1,000 players and will disappear once reaching the limit.)

Event Rewards:

One Gift from Desolated Souls can redeem 20 soul coins.

Five Gifts from Desolated Souls can redeem a Blue Equipment of Level 100 (with choices).

20 Gifts from Desolated Souls can redeem a Purple Equipment of Level 100 (with choices).

50 Gifts from Desolated Souls can redeem five Soul-Cleansing Pills of Level 3 (permanently increases the Endurance attribute by 8 points per pill).

100 Gifts from Desolated Souls can redeem a special title of The Sympathetic Wanderer (10 free transports per day).

Special Rewards: Secret (will only be revealed during the quest).

The events of Battle Online would always spike excitement among the players.

Seeing the pre-notice of the Tomb-Sweeping Day Event, the players were exuberant because the extremely stingy Wicked Mob was about to be giving away a large number of soul coins.

Lu Wu had put a lot of effort into this event. He didn't just simulate the scenes with the artifact like he usually would. Lu Wu had spent soul coins that amounted to around ten million on the event preparations.

With the help of Bei Li, he materialized the tombs of the prominent valiant spirits in Beiqi from ancient history to present day. He also temporarily released the many valiant spirits in the Valiant Spirits Palace.

In other words, it was not a fake quest but an event of actual tomb-sweeping.

The so-called Special Rewards were related to the valiant spirits who were long dead, but it depended on the players' luck on whether they could find the hidden quests.

Although the Special Rewards were not announced officially, the players were looking forward to the event very much. After all, the officials had never let them down, except for that time during April Fool's.

While the Beiqi players were discussing the event, the players from the other servers couldn't bear it anymore and flooded their forum.

Star\_Universe (Europe): "I strongly protest! Why do they always have events going about? Can we still compete with a happy heart? The Wicked Mob is too biased! I strongly request that this event also be hosted on our server! No, the previous events must be replaced, too!"

Jason (Europe): "Protest+1 Is our great European server not their precious child? Host events for us! Shower rewards on us!"

Reinhardt (Europe): "Let's compete fair and square! They're already that strong yet they get events again! Please weaken their attributes and reinforce ours!"

Heavens\_Seer (USA): "Stop, you guys. Our great Land of Naraka is in hot water! Please host events for us... please empower us!"

Prince\_Charming123 (USA): "Your two servers are so laid back. Our server is in apocalyptic mode! I freaking died around a hundred times ever since the launch of our server! The level of difficulty is depressing. Please empower the players in Naraka! Weaken the other servers!"

Crayon\_Shinchan: "Look, our exasperated buddies from other servers are protesting. Anyway, you guessed it correctly, we are their only true son. (laughing emoji)"

Xueli\_The\_Strongest: "That's enough from all of you. How can you join the event when you don't even know what Tomb-Sweeping Day is? Quit it, or else we won't have mercy during the next Cross-Server Battle. (laughing emoji)"

Watermelon\_Taro: "Stop whining. Let's take a look at the European server – they have the Evil King in the Ghost Emperor Realm protecting them, and

they live a well off life. We Beiqi don't even have a master in the Ghost Emperor Realm, but did we complain? (laughing emoji) Now for Naraka – your server has combined many states, and aside from the fact that your population is large, don't you know how advantageous your growth system is during the prophase? We were not as relaxed as you are when Beiqi just launched. As for the difference in power, who can we blame for having so many cheaters on our server? This is our own power, alright? (confident emoji) It has nothing to do with the officials. Therefore, my last point is – please enhance Beiqi player attributes, Wicked Mob! Our lives are so difficult that we can't carry on anymore!”

Assassin\_Creed replied to Watermelon\_Taro: “Well said! If we never made a fuss, why should all of you cry? Go away. We should be the first ones to cry our lungs out.”

...

The three large servers started to show off how miserable they were because of the event. They complained about how difficult their lives were in their own areas, hoping that the Wicked Mob would pay more attention to them.

It was especially the Beiqi players who wailed enthusiastically with the other two servers although they knew they were the strongest among the three.

To them, despite whether they were really having a tough life, kicking up a fuss would never go wrong. The Wicked Mob might enhance them if they believed their story.

Hence, the players from the three servers started a post thread where they summarized how pitiful they were. They relentlessly commented on it again and again so that it stuck at the top, in hopes that the officials might see it.

Lu Wu was speechless with their persistent complaints.

Even more so toward the Beiqi players, Lu Wu was completely at a loss of words. They certainly knew how to grumble.

Without knowing them well enough, other people might really get tricked into thinking the Beiqi players were in a devastating state after reading their summaries.

At last, Lu Wu ignored their speeches of pity.

Talk big all you like. I won't budge a bit.

Empowerment? Impossible! The most important thing is to earn more soul coins for me!

...

At 8pm, the Mansion of the Dead was free from players with only NPCs roaming around.

At that moment, a game message popped up.

[Server Announcement: Tomb-Sweeping Day Event 'Tributes to Desolated Tombs' starts now... The tribute item with unlimited usage has been sent to the players' personal channels. The locations of the desolated tombs will change every thirty minutes. Players will have to seek them out on their own!]

The event had officially launched. The players who were well-prepared beforehand sprang their legs and scurried across the Land of Beiqi, seeking the desolated tombs.

At the shore of the Liuli Coast.

Hu He was waiting there holding a compass with twenty or more figures standing behind him.

Their faces were wooden as compared to Hu He, as though they were lifeless corpses.

Hu He looked entirely different than he was before. He was no longer babyish nor bandit-like as he had grown to be more sedate and matured.

He had been deeply moved by the people who forsook their lives and used the Blood Sacrificial Haka to save him.

After the battle, Hu He chose to refine them into zombie spirits. Due to his limited skills, their powers had only recovered to a Ghost General's level, and they had lost their consciousness.

Nevertheless, Zombie Forgemasters had a skill, which was Spirit Summoning. He believed that he would someday summon them back as he grew stronger.

Moreover, he had sworn to lead them to kill Yuanxu, using his blood as a sacrifice to repay their kindness of losing their lives to save him.

He returned to Beiqi this time to participate in the Tomb-Sweeping Day Event.

Every event was accompanied by the opportunity to become more powerful. He did not want to miss it.

He came to the Liuli Coast due to a surmise he had in his mind after reading the pre-event notice.

While he was waiting, the compass shone red all of a sudden. A bloody desolated tomb appeared by the coast.

[The Tomb of Cha Na]

Details of Desolated Tomb: Although hundreds of thousands of people have passed away, starting his journey as a pawn, Cha Na had proved himself to the King of Beiqi with his fierceness and fearlessness in each and every battle. The Liuli Coast had once been bestowed upon him as his territory. He was a great general of Beiqi, a valiant spirit!

Refresh Period: 29 minutes 48 seconds

Tributes Available: 500 times (only once per player)

Special Rewards: Secret (Hidden Quest)



Gazing at the desolated tomb of Cha Na, a smile spread across Hu He's face. He knew he had guessed correctly.

He then twisted his head toward Cha Na's zombie spirit.

It felt inappropriate bringing along Cha Na's zombie spirit to pay tribute to his own desolated tomb.

After giving it a moment of thought, He Hu drew out the tributes and placed them on Cha Na's tomb, waiting for the one-minute progress bar of tribute to pass.

At that moment, a silhouette of Cha Na in armor emerged.

That very second, Hu He seemed to witness a blood-spattered Cha Na fighting in a battle, the sounds of combat echoing in his ears.

"I, Cha Na, shall succeed one day!"

The silhouette of Cha Na punched his fist toward the sky as determination and perseverance shone in his eyes.

Even though he was aware that it was merely an NPC, Hu He could feel the blood and flesh of the character in his heart.

Sighing, Hu He slowly bowed toward Cha Na in the flames of the burning tributes.

"Brother Cha Na, I'm sorry that I stole your head!"

As he straightened his body, a sense of resoluteness flashed across Hu He's eyes.

"Worry not, Cha Na. I, Hu He, shall be the most powerful of all in the future. I won't bring disgrace to your heroic doings when you were alive!"

As though he had heard Hu He's reply, the silhouette of Cha Na floating on the desolated tomb suddenly burst into flames. It then punched its right fist toward Hu He.

Facing such a situation, Hu He did not flinch. He stood where he was in silence.

The burning fiery fist stopped at the tip of Hu He's nose.

After a brief moment of confrontation, the silhouette of Cha Na removed his fist.

At that moment, Hu He thought he heard Cha Na's hysterical cackling laughter.

What happened next astonished Hu He. The burning silhouette detached itself from the desolated tomb and dove into the body of Cha Na's zombie spirit.

[Server Announcement: Congratulations to Player Hu He who acquired the recognition of Cha Na's remnant soul! Hidden quest is activated and a remnant of Cha Na's soul is obtained.]

The announcement stirred up a wave of frenzy among the players. They didn't expect the desolated tombs to be the burial of the warriors who actually died in the game. At once, a colossus of players headed for the Liuli Coast.

One after another they dashed, fearing that they might miss the opportunity. After all, each tomb could be paid tribute for only 500 times.

Staring at Cha Na's zombie spirit whose eyes gradually started to glow, Hu He was astounded.

[Cha Na's Zombie Spirit (Half Ghost King Realm)]:

Details of Zombie Spirit: A zombie spirit tempered by player Hu He himself, its body is fused in three sections, Cha Na's head (Ghost General Peak), Mu Te's incomplete torso (Greater Ghost General) and the Cricket of Dawn (Ghost King Intermediate).

Zombie Spirit Status: Under the influence of Cha Na's remnant soul, Cha Na's Zombie Spirit has evolved to manifest Beginner Spirit Wisdom and

has leveled up to Half Ghost King Realm.

It had manifested Spirit Wisdom!

Hu He didn't expect to acquire the recognition of Cha Na's remnant soul and to discover a hidden quest during a simple tomb-sweeping.

Eyeing the tomb of Cha Na, Hu He drew a deep breath before he bowed again.

"I will keep my words. Even though you were once our enemy, you are now our comrade!"

The tomb of Cha Na that lost its remnant soul did not respond. The tributes placed on it had burned completely to ashes and the notification for the completion of quest appeared.

[Completed the paying of tribute to the desolated tomb of Cha Na, quest item 'Gift from Desolated Souls' obtained.]

Glancing one last time at Cha Na's tomb, Hu He turned around and left with his compass taken out.

After making this promise, Hu He felt more weight on the load on his shoulders, but he did not regret it. From now on, he would be the most powerful of all!

After Hu He had left, throngs of players arrived at the tomb, but the tomb details had already changed.

The question marks in the row of the Special Rewards had disappeared and was replaced by the line, Owner of Hidden Quest: Hu He.

Although the players who arrived later felt a tinge of pity, they still paid tribute to their old rival.

Lu Wu had undeniably put a lot of effort into this event.

Except for those who were in the Valiant Spirits Palace, every burial of the valiant spirits that dotted Beiqi were summoned at the price of burning soul coins. As for the hidden quests he was giving out this time, it all depended on whether the players could acquire the recognition of the remnant souls when they paid their tributes.

Nevertheless, the Tomb-Sweeping Day Event was undoubtedly successful. The players were all engrossed in the event quests, where successively, they managed to obtain all sorts of hidden quests, be it weak or strong.

However, Lu Wu felt it was a pity that none of them unlocked the hidden quest, Inheritance of Valiant Spirits.

After all, a few of the valiant spirits were once elites of the Ghost Emperor Realm. It was extremely difficult to acquire their recognition. Even Lu Wu couldn't offer help because it all depended on the efforts of the players.

Hidden Quests were the core purpose of this event.

It was a shady concept on how to acquire the recognition of valiant spirits. It might be the single sentence Hu He had unintentionally spoken that caused the remnant soul to empathize with him, hence acquiring its recognition. It might even be as simple as the matter of looks, where the valiant spirit thought the player as the fateful one and dished out the hidden quest without having the player to do anything.

Anyhow, the players were oblivious to all of these. The moment they knew there were rewards for hidden quests, they became exceptionally sincere while they paid their tributes. Each of them wished to acquire the recognition of the valiant spirits and be rewarded.

There were even comical players who knelt before the tombs of unknown valiant spirits, wailing and crying in hopes of touching the owners' heart, so that they would grant them hidden quests.

During that period, the players tried out all kinds of bizarre tactics, so much so that even Lu Wu who was observing behind the scenes felt shameful for them.

# Chapter 294 - Anti-Addiction Setting

## Chapter 294: Anti-Addiction Setting

The Tomb-Sweeping Day Event officially ended at midnight.

Ridiculously wild brainstorming and tactics of the players occurred during the event.

They included wailing before the tomb, adopting a godfather, becoming a disciple of a mentor, becoming sworn brothers, and many more. Lu Wu felt ashamed for the series of actions the players had done in order to acquire the recognition from the valiant spirits.

Although such tactics did not earn the players the Inheritance of Valiant Spirits, some of them loved the acts. The players attained many other types of hidden quests, such as learning a Special Skill or obtaining part of the remnant souls.

After accepting a certain valiant spirit as his godfather, there was even a player who received the coordinates of a treasure it had hidden in Beiqi when it was alive.

Subsequently, the player dug up the treasure vault on a live stream. It turned out to be a depository of spiritual material and spiritual ore supplies. Other players envied him very much.

After the event ended, the players couldn't help but envision the next event.

At the same time, Lu Wu received feedback from Number One who was in America.

The mission was accomplished successfully!

After tracking down Number Seven who held Emily hostage, Number One didn't attack right away. He trailed after him, sneaking into the branch of the Jie De Corporation's Underground Laboratory of America. With his powerful body modified by Bei Li, he demolished the entire human experiments laboratory by himself and rescued Emily from them.

The power of Number One completely shook Emily. She discovered the strength of his human flesh, but it could withstand gun bullets to the extent that one could rip an iron plate with bare hands.

Such combat power that burst out through normal flesh was wild and dominating. Other than being impressed, Emily began to adore such power.

The damsel-in-distress story plot worked well everywhere.

Despite being renowned among assassins, Emily was, after all, only a young woman who just turned 20 years old. Being rescued under desperation inevitably led to the fluttering of butterflies in her stomach.

However, Number One thought nothing of that sort. As he brought Emily toward the safe zone, he blatantly told her that he lost his manhood and asked her not to enquire questions about his name or age, as it was annoying.

Number One's words caused Emily to develop a phobia.

Could it be that men must lose their manhood in order to become stronger?

Thinking of Number Seven and then the man before her, Emily felt queasy.

...

It was the day after the festival and the players resumed their normal routines.

At the moment, Lu Wu was eating spiritual fruit and sipping spiritual tea brewed from the spiritual spring water comfortably. At the same time, his eyes were glued to the official web forum, going through the daily discussions of the players.

While he was browsing, the content of a post attracted his attention.

It was about the anti-addiction setting Lu Wu had added into the game.

[Please remove the anti-addiction setting. Does a middle-aged woman not have human rights? I strongly protest! I want to play games!]

Author: Pink\_Rabbity

I'm 13 years old, an eighth-grader. I'm considered half an adult and I usually love to game. I came across Battle Online and am completely obsessed with it. But what the heck is this five-hour anti-addiction setting? We're in the 21st century! Why is there still an anti-addiction setting? Don't you know that young people like us are the main players in this game? I protest! I protest!

Below the post, many underaged players agreed with her while players of age were in contempt.

Divine\_Knife\_Style: "I agree. I wanted to talk about this long ago. Why can't young people game for 24 hours straight? We want our human rights. (thumbs up emoji)"

Northern\_Ancessor: "The author is right. Although we are underaged, our world needs to be fair! You can't discriminate against us. Five hours is too short. Please change the setting. (thumbs up emoji)"

White\_Snake\_Spirit: "Yes, yes! She is just like me. We are obviously old middle-aged women, but we can't even get past the anti-addiction setting. (crying emoji)"

Watermelon\_Taro replied to White\_Snake\_Spirit: "Oh my god, are 13-year-olds starting to call themselves old middle-aged women already? What about 20-somethings? Old middle-aged men?"

Assassin\_Creed: "Then those who are in their 30s like me would be old grandpas by now. (laughing emoji)"

Foot\_Picking\_Chap: “Then those in their 40s like me are old ancestors. (laughing emoji)”

Fisherman: “What about me past 50?”

Crayon\_Shinchan replied to Fisherman: “You are a bottle of fine wine. (laughing emoji)”

Cultivating\_Longevity: “I am more than a hundred years old. According to all of you, I might just be one of the Terracotta warriors...”

Invincible\_Loneliness replied to Cultivating\_Longevity: “Hahaha, the Terracotta Army is a good metaphor! Nice! (laughing emoji)”

...

The players were divided into two groups based on their different opinions on the anti-addiction setting.

One of the groups was underaged players who hoped the officials would enhance the system or even remove it.

Another group was the players of age who hoped to enforce the system, reducing the allocated five hours to two hours. Then, the flowers of their motherland would be able to study without being addicted to the game.

After reading through their comments, Lu Wu suddenly reminisced about his youth.

He was a die-hard gamer when he was younger. He had hated the anti-addiction setting the most because it prevented him from playing to his heart's content.

However, as he grew older, he hoped that the anti-addiction setting could be improved. It was best that the setting could restrict the primary schoolers from playing the games because, at that time, he was already of age.

At that moment, what the underaged players wanted was what Lu Wu had wished for in his youth.



Lu Wu could empathize with them on this point. After careful consideration, Lu Wu decided to alter the anti-addiction setting.

Of course, an alteration was not equivalent to a removal.

After discussing with Bei Li, he decided to add a study setting into the anti-addiction system.

When the anti-addiction system was operating, the underaged players would not be forced out of the game once the five gaming hours were up. Another selection menu would appear instead.

Option One was to transport the player to the Trial Arena and revise study materials according to their grades. After a one-hour study session, the system would randomly arrange tests on the material. The players would earn another three gaming hours if they passed the test. Otherwise, they would have to study for another hour.

Option Two was to exit the game.

Lu Wu only decided to launch this proposal after careful pondering and consideration.

Besides, the artifact could inspect the souls. It could effortlessly determine the grades of underaged players and pick out related study material from the database.

After all, Lu Wu wished to form a mighty army of players. He, of course, knew that those underaged players were one of his potential developing forces in the future, a foundation that could evolve sustainably.

Lu Wu would not allow them to become completely addicted to the game. The implementation of the anti-addiction setting was not only for the underaged players' welfare but for his, too.

After all, the younger generation was the source of propulsion for sustainable development.

The launching of the new anti-addiction system garnered a great response from the players.

Firstly, for the players of age, they were all good with the system that could assist in the children's studies. After all, many of them had children who were still in school.

As for the underaged players, they seemed to be repulsive toward the new anti-addiction setting. To them, studying and gaming were complete opposites.

However, the officials of Battle Online had always been dictatorial. After a fruitless protest from the primary schoolers, most of them miserably chose to enter the Study Channel and start with their proper revision.

Nevertheless, when they returned to the game after they had passed their tests... Hmm, it felt awesome!

# Chapter 295 - The Debut Of A Super Sidekick Force

Chapter 295: The Debut Of A Super Sidekick Force

Lately, the Beiqi players had encountered two issues that caused them headaches.

First of all, it was the Land of the Nine Luminaries in the west.

His Excellency of the Nine Luminaries was unable to bear the players' successive raids anymore. Therefore, he started intercepting their moves, reducing the chances of successful pillages.

The messengers visited again to nominate a new King of Beiqi.

Of course, the players were against the idea, but the messengers asked them to reconsider the matter. Otherwise, Beiqi and the Nine Luminaries would definitely go to war in the near future.

Although they didn't reject the messengers outright, the players understood that it would only be another temporary solution. The war would eventually come someday no matter what they decided now.

The players might be worried about the battle, but they were never afraid of it as they were certain about one thing.

No matter what, the Land of the Nine Luminaries would fall into their hands sooner or later.

Another problem was from the Underworld Sea in the east.

Recently, the Death Clan no longer launched invasions. Since the players could no longer hunt them for resources, they went to the Void Ocean to search for them.

However, they were astounded to discover the disappearance of the Death Clan in the Void Ocean.

In order to get to the bottom of it, many players visited the Kuilong Ocean in hopes of finding the Sea King and having a really good talk with him.

The players soon found out the reason after their trip to the Kuilong Ocean.

A war had arisen between the Mu Te Sea Empire and its surrounding forces.

The Death Clan had left the Void Ocean because the battle the Sea King was facing was in desperate need of troops.

A detailed investigation led the players to unveil the cause of the war. It was related to the force from Langya Island who fought with them during the Sea King's Nation Establishing Ceremony.

The power of Langya Island alone was no match for the Sea King's Mu Te Sea Nation.

Nevertheless, Langya Island had entrenched themselves in the Kuilong Ocean for many years and had made many acquaintances. Moreover, the owner of Langya Island had roamed everywhere to drum up support, conveying a message to the many forces of the Kuilong Ocean.

If the Sea King dominated them, the status and income of the many forces in the Kuilong Ocean would be affected. According to the Sea King's character, he would definitely not back off when facing the many forces.

The leaders of the forces had contemplated the matter and had originally decided not to meddle in the confrontation between Langya Island and the Sea King. After all, sticking their necks out and risking their clans' lives to fight was a foolish decision.

However, the owner of Langya Island gave them an irresistible offer. After all the forces in the Kuilong Ocean had formed a union to wipe out the Mu Te Sea Nation, Langya Island would not take its share during the splitting of land and resources.

The Mu Te Sea Nation possessed 35 percent of resources of the Kuilong Ocean. The offer was awfully tempting. What was more was that the Kuilong Ocean would fall back to the days where the many forces counterbalanced each other after the downfall of the Mu Te Sea Nation.

The very existence of the Mu Te Sea Nation was prone to spike endless wars. All of the forces found the two benefits appealing.

Therefore, the war began.

The Sea King would not have dreamed that every force in the Kuilong Ocean would gang up against him this time.

Facing such a situation, the Sea King had no choice but to channel the Death Clan that was in the Void Ocean into the battle as a shield.

However, the Mu Te Sea Nation was undoubtedly at a disadvantage confronting the army of a coalition of all the other forces in the Kuilong Ocean.

After understanding the situation, each of the players slammed the table and stood up in rage.

The Sea King was the cash cow they had raised for a long time. The players could not bear to see it being milked by other forces.

The current situation was like pests eating a chive they had planted. As farmers, they naturally had to exterminate the pests for the chive to grow better.

Therefore, the players had a meeting and a colossal fleet of Specter Warships gathered at the Liuli Coast. They were prepared to sail and stir up trouble.

...

At the same time, the commander of the Fifth District Military Base of the United States had acquired approval from management on his report. The game, Battle Online, was officially launched throughout the military.

Before that, they had looked into the game thoroughly. They were assured that dying in the game would not adversely affect the mental health of the players. They had also fully experimented and tested the gaming pods from the Black Sea Corporation. After the two aspects were guaranteed to be free of issues, it would not be a problem to launch the game to their troops.

The degree of simulation of the game was sufficient to train soldiers without risking any casualties.

It could also save them ammunition and resources used for training. In the long term, the proposal was plausible while saving a huge cost for the military.

They had even obtained Lu Wu's phone number from different channels, in hopes of purchasing the game and the technology behind it at a stupendous price.

Lu Wu rejected them right away. It was not up for negotiation.

The National Defense of America was angered by Lu Wu's attitude, but they could not locate him at all. They could not even find out the identity of Battle Online's boss behind the scenes with their current database.

The exasperated National Defense of America suggested a second proposal.

To cooperate!

This time, they hoped the Battle Online Corporation could produce a brand new, tailor-made virtual world without any other players for the sake of military training.

The setting could be the same as the Land of Naraka, only that it must completely stand alone without being linked to other devices.

Lu Wu still rejected them. What a joke! Naraka did exist in reality. Lu Wu couldn't just duplicate it even if he wanted to.

The negotiation was unsuccessful. So, the National Defense of America had no choice but finally decided to dispatch troops onto the public server in the

presence of civilian players. They wanted to try it out first. If the result was proven effective, they would try talking to Lu Wu again.

No one could be happier than the Black Sea Corporation with the National Defense of America's decision, because numerous orders had come in from the military.

Although Lu Wu would receive a commission of five percent, he was not concerned about the money. He cared more about the army from the National Defense of America.

Once they had entered the game using the gaming pods, they were Lu Wu's army, an army that even death could not free them from.

Lu Wu did not expect the National Defense of America to make such a decision.

A dumbfounded Lu Wu received an entire army from the National Defense of America as his subordinates while their souls were marked by the artifact.

Naraka's combat power appeared to have a linear increase because of them.

After officially entering the game, the soldiers of the United States were initially complacent. They felt that the creatures would've definitely been wiped out with them joining the server.

However, on their first day, the entire army was flattened by the creatures in Naraka. Their original plan of building a military base in the Blue Valley Ruins had not even lasted for half a day when endless creatures invaded them.

Death, revival! Death, revival!

The National Defense of America's power that dominated the world, when facing creatures whose attributes flattened them, was not worth mentioning.

At that moment, in order to fight the creatures, they had no other choice but to level up and increase their attributes like other players.

However, it was notable that the effect of training their troops was surprisingly good.

Although they couldn't build a military base for expansion in the Land of Naraka, they altered their strategy. They started to form strongholds all over the Blue Valley Ruins and even recruited players to grow stronger.

Observing the National Defense of America ransacking their brains to occupy the Blue Valley Ruins, Lu Wu felt like laughing.

He had been troubled with the disadvantage the players there had.

The death rate In the Land of Naraka was too high after all. The difficulty level was way higher than Beiqi's and Cangxu's. The players were tortured into accepting that it was normal to die three or four times per day.

No one expected the National Defense of America to join in on the battle. Moreover, they were planning to expand the territory for Lu Wu.

With their help, the daily production rate of soul coins increased tremendously.

Lu Wu couldn't help smiling like an old farmer.



# Chapter 296 - : Lang Ya's Incentive

Chapter 296: Lang Ya's Incentive

Underworld Sea, Void Ocean.

There was a huge fleet of a few hundred thousand Specter Warships and a million Specter Ships out on the Void Ocean, slowly advancing toward the Kuilong Ocean.

In order to preserve their popular foe the Sea King, many guilds in Beiqi joined forces to launch a rally request to all the players. A large number of them responded to the call, intending to support the Sea King in winning the battle.

All the players had an aggressive look. They were all prepared for a protracted battle.

As the huge fleet was approaching the Kuilong Ocean and preparing to advance toward Xin Mo Island, countless dark shadows suddenly emerged from the waters.

Numerous gigantic sea creatures with grimaces broke out of the water and formed a huge army of sea creatures, blocking the players' fleet.

“Welcome to Kuilong Ocean, our honored guests from afar!”

Just when the players thought the war was about to commence, a giant white-shelled tortoise appeared from under the water. The one who spoke was the white-haired old man standing on the back of the tortoise.

The person had a divine poise and sagelike features with a nine-sectioned cane in his hand. He had a benevolent look which gave off an intimate feeling.

However, the players had their analyzing ability. They could tell the identity of the person right away and instead became cautious toward him.

[Lang Ya (Ghost King Peak)]:

Character Details: Owner of Langya Island, one of the three top forces of the Kuilong Ocean. Originally the subordinate of Kuilong Ocean's Broken Wave Palace forces, the Palace Divine Beast. He betrayed the Broken Wave Palace after that under the temptation of the benefits behind the opposition's forces. He even exposed a lot of the Broken Wave Palace's secrets against the enemies, which led to the fall of the Broken Wave Palace. After that, he went on betraying the several forces he pledged allegiance to and established Langya Island in the end with the resources he gathered.

Character Status: Normal

The players sighed the moment they saw Lang Ya's status.

They didn't expect such a benevolent-looking old man would turn out to be a cunning old geezer who enjoyed being a spy. They couldn't help but feel ashamed for his behavior.

In the players' opinions, Lang Ya definitely was not having any good intentions. They weren't trying to be friendly toward him either.

Lang Ya gave out an awkward expression when he realized the players were aiming all the cannons on the warship toward him. He spoke again, "My honored guests, welcome to Kuilong Ocean. Is there any misunderstanding between us? Why don't we take a seat and discuss it?"

Lang Ya was in fact perturbed by the players' apparent hostile attitudes toward him.

The knowledge of their very existence had already been spread around the Kuilong Ocean after the Sea King's Nation Establishing Ceremony. It was natural for Lang Ya to know about them.

After completely starting a war with the Sea King, this extremely powerful force of mysterious origin had always been Lang Ya's greatest concern.

They had thoroughly suppressed the Sea King's forces in the current war situation, victory would soon be theirs if the trend continued.

Yet, the destabilizing factor was the players. No one could guarantee whether these forces, who seemed to be in close contact with the Sea King, would assist him or not. If the players' forces would really be willing to help the Sea King in battle, the victory that naturally belonged to them would be filled with uncertainties.

So, Lang Ya thought of drawing them over to his side. He even had a plan made up in his mind, which was to negotiate with the players' forces using 15% of the resources in the Sea King's territories.

His condition was simple, he would just need the players' forces to stay put and not get involved in their battle with the Sea King.

The condition was undoubtedly extremely tempting, yet Lang Ya was not confident with the outcome at that moment.

After seeing this huge fleet made up of millions of ships and warships, Lang Ya felt that he had underestimated the true powers of the force.

At the same time, he didn't want to go against them at all.

"What do you wish to talk about?" Gu Yu stood right at the front on the Myth Guild's Warship's deck and asked.

"I don't think being enemies is our only choice, perhaps we could be friends as well. For that, I have prepared a generous gift for our honored guests to address my sincerity!"

Lang Ya pointed toward the tortoise underneath him as he spoke.

"Commander, would you mind coming down to have a talk?"

The players looked at one another after hearing what he said. A few guild leaders even started discussing in the guild chat.

They had no idea what Lang Ya was up to. Besides, they did not have any good impression of Lang Ya after seeing his character menu. They did not think he was credible at all.

After having a quick discussion, several leading guild leaders decided to bring along a few men to go down and see what Lang Ya had up his sleeves.

Lang Ya paused for a moment and turned his gaze toward Gu Yu after seeing the numerous figures jumping down from the warship. He always thought Gu Yu was the sole leader of this force, he didn't understand why he would bring so many people with him.

“Don't misunderstand, I am just one of the commanders,” said Gu Yu straight away after getting on the giant tortoise's back.

Lang Ya nodded promptly as he heard him.

Liu Chai, Gu Yu, Wu Guoyi, Ye Xue'er, Lu Zhan, Yin Xiaoqi, and the rest of the major guild leaders began to hop off one after another. Lang Ya then used his spiritual power to form a conference table on the giant tortoise's back allowing everyone to take their seats.

“Lang Ya, what do you wish to talk about? Besides that, what's the generous gift you spoke of?” Gu Yu yawned while supporting his head with one hand.

Lang Ya took a glance at everyone and nodded.

“Let me just ask everyone here a single question. How are your relationships with the Sea King?”

Everyone's expressions changed when they heard him.

They didn't know how to express their thoughts. They were the reason why the Sea King had lost his position of the Void Ocean's overlord after all. Otherwise, why would they come to the Kuilong Ocean to fight for

maritime power? Moreover, the Sea King even lost his elder brother in that Beiqi Battle Event.

Their relationship would be absolutely irreconcilable looking at all the joint hatred.

That was why no one knew how to give an appropriate answer to the question at that moment.

“Okay, I guess?” Wu Guoyi spoke right then.

Be it the guild leaders who were present or the players who were eavesdropping in the live chat channel, everyone almost broke out in a sweat when they heard him.

Yet, Lang Ya was rather excited to hear this answer, it was exactly what he wanted to hear.

“Everyone, now let me tell you about the generous gift which I have prepared for all of you!”

Lang Ya then raised his arm and waved toward the back. The thousands of sea creatures that were at the front line opened their mouths, revealing tons of unique spiritual materials and treasures.

“All these are for us?” Gu Yu was rather surprised.

“That’s right, all these treasures are for you... however, I do have one condition!” Lang Ya squinted his eyes as he spoke.

Gu Yu and the rest glanced at one another. They all knew what Lang Ya wanted to say but still proceeded to give Lang Ya assurance.

“Island Owner Lang Ya, you can just speak your mind!”

“If the players’ forces withdraw from this battle, the rest of the Kuilong Ocean’s forces and I will not only offer you treasures and spiritual materials, we will also offer you fifteen percent of the Sea King’s territory’s annual output!”

Lang Ya made his thoughts crystal clear, he didn't want the players to participate in the battle.

If the other party was just a normal force, they wouldn't have been able to reject Lang Ya's alluring offer.

After all, they could receive treasures and resources without lifting a finger. It was an irresistible temptation for the respective forces of the underworld where the law of jungle was practiced.

Unfortunately, the ones Lang Ya encountered were the players.

15% of the Sea King's territory's annual output was undoubtedly rather tempting, yet, how could the players ever be satisfied? In the players' opinion, the Sea King's entire force should belong to them. Just 15%, did they think that the players were mere beggars?

There was only one thought in the players' minds at that moment, be it the Sea King's forces or the treasures offered by Island Owner Lang Ya... they wanted it all!

The players would never have to choose anyway.

# Chapter 297 - Just Raid

## Chapter 297: Just Raid

“What do you say, my honored guests?” Lang Ya asked with anticipation when he saw that Gu Yu and the others were silent.

“Alright, we won’t participate in this war. We will take these treasures with us and wait for your 15% of resources when the time comes,” Gu Yu said smilingly.

“Hold on!” Lang Ya suddenly added at this moment.

“My honored guests, you can’t take these treasures away now... but rest assured, we will surely present these treasures to you, together with the 15% resources from the Sea King’s territory... after the war is over!”

Needless to say, the crafty Lang Ya had yet to put his trust in the players, and he voiced out his opinion again.

“What do you mean!?” Gu Yu instantly furrowed his brows.

“My honored guests, since I’ve expressed my sincerity, you should’ve returned me with equal sincerity. I won’t give you anything less than what I’ve promised, but this is merely an oral agreement in which you might go back on your words anytime. As such, you can’t take the treasures away yet. Once the war between the Sea King and us is over, I’ll send these treasures and spiritual materials to you... nothing less!”

The players were instantly stunned by Lang Ya’s suggestion.

Apparently they never thought Lang Ya would take such a step. Their initial plan was to deceive Lang Ya into giving them the treasures, but it appeared that this trick did not seem to be working on him.

“My honored guests, you can be assured that I am a respectable man in the Kuilong Ocean and would never deceive you!” Lang Ya put on a smile and spoke again, seemingly after noticing the looks of dissatisfaction on their faces.

Upon hearing that, the players knew they were unable to trick Lang Ya. It was unrealistic now for them to simply turn against Lang Ya after taking away the treasures and spiritual materials.

Thereupon, smiles slowly broke out on their faces as Lang Ya looked at them with a gleam of anticipation in his eyes.

Since you’re not going to give it to us, we might as well just rob you of it!

“My fellow brothers! Rob him!”

Along with Liu Chai’s growling in the zone live chat, all the rechargeable cannons that were aimed at the army of sea monsters some times ago were fired at the same time.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Lang Ya was obviously bewildered, “My honored guests, what do you mean by this?”

“What do I mean by this? A raid!”

With a nasty grin on his face, Liu Chai heavily smashed his right arm and destroyed the table that was made by soul energy. Meanwhile, Gu Yu and the others stood up in an instant.

“Honored guests, we could bargain over the treasures if you want...” said Lang Ya as he grew anxious at the sight of the scene.

“Fuck off! You keep dragging your feet! So cut the crap now! I’m telling you, we’re going to raid you now!” an extremely spectacular scene appeared following Liu Chai’s growl.



Countless spirits of warships emerged at the back and the scene looked as though crooks of all kinds were running wild. All the sea creatures were awed by the imposing manner that was gathered at once.

“Honored guests, I’ve promised you and I’ll certainly honor my words. Please have faith in me...” Lang Ya immediately said after realizing the gravity of the situation, intending to save it.

However, it was impossible for Liu Chai and the others to negotiate with him. They were players, not negotiators. Since he could not satisfy their conditions, they might as well just settle it by force and arms.

Being players, they could be as wayward and touchy as they wanted.

The battle had finally begun. A group of huge warships was charging forward and directly hitting the sea creatures on the surface of the sea.

This war will eventually come. Now that it’s come to this, let’s just fight!

Looking at the Player Clan’s attitude, Lang Ya suddenly recalled what his subordinates had told him when they were reporting about them.

The Player Clan has an unpredictable temper, whereby they will just fight at the risk of their lives once there’s a disagreement!

“All forces, fight back with me!”

Right now, Lang Ya’s face was taken over by a gloomy expression. He certainly would not just await his doom in the face of attack. He shouted at his back right away.

The army of sea creatures began to counterattack.

“Pull back!”

Along with Liu Chai’s words, all the guild members, other than Gu Yu, immediately turned around and headed back to the warships.

In response to that, Lang Ya waved his right arm to the front, flexing three gleams of sharp claws to attack Liu Chai and the others.

Since the war had already started, there was no need for him to conserve his strength.

“Demonic God!” Gu Yu’s eyes turned crimson, his body abruptly expanded one round and his body surface was covered by scarlet flames.

Gu Yu was about to step forward and take Lang Ya’s blow after he turned into the Demonic God so that he could create an opportunity for the others to retreat. However, Liu Chai was one step ahead of him. He blocked Gu Yu and raised his right arm over his chest.

Bang!

Liu Chai was thrown away by the huge shock of impact, yet he did not suffer from any injury by relying on the absolute defenses of his right arm.

“Gu, let’s go!” Liu Chai immediately shouted in the live chat channel while he was in the air.

Gu Yu stared deeply at Lang Ya upon hearing that. Flapping the burning wings on his back, he rose into the air and flew toward the direction of the Myth Guild’s Warship.

“Where are you going!?”

After noticing that Gu Yu and the others were the leaders of this force, Lang Ya was struck by the thought that he could seize him and used him as a deterrence against the Player Clan.

Lang Ya’s strength was obviously incomparable with that of Gu Yu, whereby he caught up with Liu Chai within seconds. However, Gu Yu abruptly turned over his body.

“Evil Eye Stare!”

Inside the scarlet eyes was a dancing flame and Lang Ya instantly fell into it as he was caught off guard.

Instantly, numerous murmurs were ringing in his ears. Past events rose before his eyes, and hosts of thoughts came crowding in his mind, leading to his sadness, fury, gloom, and despair.

This was the power of the Demonic God. After all, even Lang Ya was unable to drive the thoughts out of his mind for a while. He sank into endless agony, his tears came rushing out of his eyes, and his body fell straight down from the sky.

With that, Gu Yu raised his middle finger at Lang Ya, then turned around and flew toward the Myth Guild's Warship at a high speed.

At the back of the army of sea creatures, the leaders of all the forces were baffled to see Lang Ya falling into the sea out of the blue. They rose into the air one after another and flew to the location where Lang Ya fell.

After all, Lang Ya was the current leader of this military alliance and they couldn't afford anything to happen to him at the present stage.

The leaders of the forces were dumbfounded when they picked Lang Ya up from the water. All they saw was Lang Ya bursting into tears, his face full of sorrow, seemingly to have completely lost his head.

"Big Brother, what's wrong with you?" Lang Fu, the second in command of Langya Island, grabbed Lang Ya by the shoulders and shook him violently.

Despite that, Lang Ya was deeply immersed in his sorrows and showed no sign of coming back to his senses, he cried until snot was running from his nose.

All the leaders were dumbstruck by the scene before them. Just when they were at a loss as to what to do, Lang Ya convulsed his body and drove all the evil thoughts out of his mind, regaining his consciousness.

Bastard!

As Lang Ya gained back his senses from the effect of the Evil Eye Stare, he shoved Lang Fu away who was still pressing on his shoulders. He then stood up abruptly and turned around to look into the distance, staring at the Myth Guild's Warship.

Meanwhile, Gu Yu was waving his hand at Lang Ya from afar and a grin rose onto his face. With a stomp of his foot, a golden lion emerged at the top of the warship, letting out a growl at Lang Ya that seemingly shook the heavens.

Lang Ya was enraged at the sight of Gu Yu's demonstration. He pointed his hand at the Player Clan from a distance, his body shaking, and yelled, "Since you can't tell chalk from cheese, let's fight!"

Although the huge size of the Player Clan's warships put Lang Ya under extreme pressure, he couldn't care less about it anymore. They were riding roughshod over him now, naturally he wouldn't just sit still and await his doom.

Thereafter, the first war between the Player Clan and all the forces of the Kuilong Ocean broke out.

At first, the forces of the Kuilong Ocean felt anxious about this war. However, they found that the army of Player Clan was actually nothing more than a paper tiger and their actual combat effectiveness was no match for Kuilong.

It made them more and more excited as they fought. Lang Ya's palpating heart was more likely due to the pleasure of revenge.

On the other hand, the players were extremely calm. It's just death, they've long gotten used to it. Besides, they never intend to win this battle anyway!

For that reason, the players specifically chose to kill the sea creatures first that were carrying treasures and spiritual materials in their mouths.

Both sides were feeling excited. The Kuilong Ocean Military Alliance was fighting to wipe out the Player Clan whereas the army of players was

battling for their own greedy interests.

# Chapter 298 - Go! The Sea King!

Chapter 298: Go! The Sea King!

The war had been going on for three hours and the army of players was completely surrounded by countless sea creatures. Under the circumstances, Lang Ya once again suggested negotiating with the players.

It seemed that this fleet was clearly not all that the Player Clan had and most probably there was a much bigger force behind them.

However, it was hardly possible for the players to give up now that they had gotten serious in the war. They raised their middle fingers at the cunning Lang Ya and the war erupted again.

The players were well aware that they would lose the battle for sure, but they were not discouraged by it since their soul coins and experience levels were constantly increasing. For them, that was the actual benefit, which was far more crucial than a so-called victory.

As such, the players continued to offer stiff resistance and fought desperately with the Kuilong Military Alliance on the sea.

This battle led the players to recognize the strength of the Kuilong Military Alliance, and clearly, both of them were not on the same level.

Among the millions of warships, only a few remained in the fifth hour of the war. As for the Kuilong Military Alliance, there were still an infinite number of sea creatures left. It was as though they could never kill all of them.

Lang Ya still kept a straight face when the last warship of the Player Clan was bombarded and sank. There was no trace of joy on his face.

The collapse of the negotiation with the Player Clan indicated that more warships would be here soon after, bringing a twist in this war that he was

supposedly bound to win. Above all, the background of the Player Clan army remained an enigma.

“From now onward, dispatch garrisons to guard the border of the Kuilong Ocean and Void Ocean. On no account can you let the Player Clan join up with the Sea King Navy!” Lang Ya said with a gloomy face as he stared at the numerous corpses of sea creatures floating on the sea.

However, his face turned grave in an instant, sensing some peculiarities.

Odd! Something is very odd about them!

Where are their corpses?

Where are the wreckages of their broken warships!?

After identifying the issue, Lang Ya immediately commanded all the forces to pick up the players' corpses and wreckages of warships.

Half an hour later...

Nothing was found and all the forces of the Kuilong Military Alliance were stunned by the result.

Although it was very rare in the underworld for a corpse to vanish after death, such a circumstance did exist. The living creatures in the Underworld were classified as those with a physical body, a Yin body, and a spiritual body.

Most of the creatures that vanished after death were living creatures with spiritual bodies, for instance Yin souls and a small fraction of the creatures with Yin bodies. The body formation of these creatures was partly related to the Laws of the Underworld, hence their bodies would disintegrate after death and return to nature.

But the players clearly possessed physical bodies. Lang Ya could be certain about this after coming into contact with them. How come they would just vanish?

Not being able to perceive the situation, Lang Ya interpreted the players as living creatures with bodies that were almost the same as physical bodies but were, in fact, Yin bodies. This was the only reason that could explain why they had vanished after their deaths.

But the wreckages of warships are made of spiritual materials and ores, how is it possible for them to just disappear!?

Lang Ya was completely dumbfounded. It appeared extremely incredible that all the corpses floating on the ocean were only those of sea creatures. Not one piece of floating debris from the warships could be found.

Regardless of how hard they tried to speculate and ponder about it, they were unable to perceive the crux of the problem.

Everything seemed so bizarre to them.

In the end, the Kuilong Military Alliance retreated and left after the fruitless search, leaving a few forces guarding there to serve as an early warning for the subsequent forces of the Player Clan that might return.

...

Xin Mo Island, Sea King Palace.

In his palace, the Sea King and the rest of the lords, who used to be kings, were staring at an annotated map of the Kuilong Ocean with solemn expressions on their faces.

“Your Majesty, Lang Ya has found out our intention of using the Death Clan to wear down their army and no longer conserves their strength in the subsequent battles. They clearly intend to win the battle in one go!” Hei Sui said while pointing at the last battle point on the map, his face full of worry.

“It seems evident that it’s unrealistic to rely on the Death Clan to wage a war of attrition. Let’s gather the forces of the Death Clan and form an army of a certain scale before counterattacking. Right now we should focus on defending!” said the Sea King with a stoic face.



He knows very well that they are beset with all the difficulties to win this war, but at least there's still hope. Besides, he has the entire Death Clan as his backup force. He can afford to lose even if he has to because he has a route of retreat.

On the other hand, Hei Sui and the others were frantic with worry. Unlike the Sea King, they couldn't afford to lose the battle.

The consequence of the failure was the doom of their entire nations, which would then become a long-running history during the course of time.

Just when the Sea King and the others were exchanging views about the arrangement of the defense force, Tian Kun came in a hurry from the outside.

“Your Majesty, the force of the Player Clan is here!”

Everyone was taken aback by the news.

“What is their purpose in coming here? Are they friends or foes?” Hei Sui asked anxiously.

“I'm not certain if they are friendly forces, but they waged war on the Kuilong Military Alliance off Langya Island three days ago, which ended in the utter annihilation of their army!”

The eyes of Hei Sui and the others lit up as they listened. They were delighted, not for the fact that the army of Player Clan was completely annihilated, but for the underlying meaning of that situation.

“Don't count your chickens before they're hatched... the Player Clan is not a Good Samaritan! Besides, they certainly know better than to simply attack the Kuilong Military Alliance in Langya Island aimlessly!” said the Sea King as he stared at everyone, he couldn't help but cast a damper over them.

Although the Sea King had no idea of the Player Clan's intention, he felt a little restless at their actions because this Beiqi force never played by the

rules. Will they be my supportive force in fighting against the Kuilong Military Alliance of Langya Island? Or will they be a cancer that kills the Mu Te Sea Nation? Even the Sea King didn't have full confidence in this.

“Right, the Player Clan is ruled by Yue Yao, correct? He just took over Beiqi and should be consolidating his power not attacking. Why would he let the Player Clan out?” Sha Shui couldn't help but interrupt.

“Do you really think Yue Yao is capable of restraining them? If I'm not mistaken, Yue Yao is probably dead by now!” the Sea King's eyes were steadfast as he said so.

“This... Yue Yao is of the Ghost Emperor Realm...” Sha Shui seemed to find it unbelievable.

“So what if he's a Ghost Emperor! The Player Clan is definitely not as simple as you think! Think about it carefully, what was Yue Yao's attitude when he first came here? And what exactly did he want?”

The rest of the lords sank into deep thought after listening to his words.

After a while, Tian Kun suddenly said, “Yue Yao was very modest at that time, and he wished for peace instead of war!”

The Sea King nodded his head, “That's right, Yue Yao wishes for peace. If he's still His Excellency, there's no way he would allow the Player Clan to march on over to the Kuilong Ocean with a great army, much less initiate war with the Kuilong Military Alliance of Langya Island!”

All the other lords nodded in realization and their faces took on a complex look soon afterward.

All in all, Yue Yao was a strong man of the Ghost Emperor Realm. They had a good impression of Yue Yao for his easy-going manner. They couldn't help but lament his death.

“Enough! No matter what the purpose is of the Player Clan, they did nothing to offend us at this present stage, thereby we must not take the

initiative to turn against them!” the Sea King opened his mouth after pondering for a while.

All the lords subconsciously nodded their heads as they listened to him.

They were currently in an extremely inferior position anyway. Although they knew that the Sea King and the Player Clan were acquainted with an irreconcilable enmity, they hoped that the Sea King would not spar with the Player Clan out of impulse under such circumstances.

They sincerely agreed with Sea King’s decision this time, so much so that they were wishing for the Sea King to make an alliance with the Player Clan in order for them to widen their advantages in winning the war.

Just as everyone was thinking over how to persuade the Sea King to put aside his hatred and join forces with the players, a soldier stationed outside the hall came in great haste and handed over a letter to the Sea King.

The Sea King was puzzled. He opened the letter and saw a line of crooked words on the letter.

“Go for it, Sea King! We support you this time!”

Go!

# Chapter 299 - Research Maniac

Chapter 299: Research Maniac

Blue veins stood out on the Sea King's forehead when he saw the letter and signature of the player at the bottom.

Now that the Player Clan had chosen his side, he was supposed to automatically feel delighted about it.

However, the players' ambiguous attitude made the Sea King feel uncomfortable. He couldn't put the feeling into words. It was as though he was a beast being chased by a hunter. He spared no effort in running away, yet the hunter smilingly took his time to hold up the gun and looked at his struggles.

Besides, the reason why they offered to help this time was that he had come upon a tiger when he was running away. Seeing that the prey would soon fall into the jaws of the tiger, the hunter could hardly sit still and launched an attack.

Bang!

The Sea King smashed his fist onto the table, his face gloomy as he felt uneasy at even the thought of it.

It was just the same as last time when he was provoked by the force of Langya Island, whereby the players had initiated an attack and threw him an odd look before they left. The same thing occurred now that he was facing the Kuilong Military Alliance.

How could he possibly believe that there was nothing fishy going on?

What exactly were they trying to do!? What are they plotting!?

Glancing around at the surprised looks on the faces of the lords here, the Sea King sank into deep thought.

...

Land of Naraka, Blue Valley Ruins.

A man was hiding in a teetering building that appeared to be in imminent danger of collapsing.

He was down on all fours on the ground. On the floor was a paper that was two yards long and two yards wide, full of all sorts of equations and sketches. The room around him was cluttered with all kinds of mechanical components bought from the shop.

‘Fortress Plan’ was written on top of the huge design draft.

As the man was drawing, he would occasionally lift his head and cast a glance at the Rechargeable Mech placed in the corner, and then put his focus back on designing.

Being the top scientist in the National Defense of the United States, Tesla actually felt disdain in his heart when he first came into contact with these kinds of products that far exceeded the reality of science and technology.

He entered the game solely for the purpose of ascertaining whether this 100% realistic simulation game was really as good as what others had said.

However, Tesla was soon dumbstruck by the game. Not only did the simulated world really achieve 100% reality, but the mech settings here were also marvelous.

After thorough research, he figured that all these mechs took action and battled via the operation of the correspondent power system.

For instance, the most common left-foot jump, in which the power and components of the mech’s left foot would start operating during the jumping, would not bring the kinetic energy of all the other components of the body into operation. This was only one of those ingenious aspects in the

game where Tesla found remarkable. It was absolutely not just a whole piece of mold.

Tesla simply disassembled his mech in order to ascertain the cause, but it still left him dumbfounded.

Apart from the mech's core power system that could not be disassembled, the internal part of the mech was actually made by putting mechanical parts of different sizes together. Every part was fit perfectly together, constituting the exact transfer points of the power system.

What concept is this? If this is just a simple game, they can absolutely use a mech mold and leave the internal part empty. It seemed somewhat unbelievable to him that the mech in the game was, in fact, a complete unit.

Above all, he was well aware that the research on mech technology consumed lots of energy. But this is just a game.

Speculating in this respect, Tesla suspected that the Battle Online Corporation might even be fully capable of building a mech in reality, based on the degree of understanding of the research and development team behind the scenes.

This totally upended Tesla's worldview. After a momentary shock, Tesla fell into a fit of a frenzy due to his desire to get to the bottom of this world and explore the profound mystery inside the mechs. All in all, everything seemed enigmatical to him.

As such, Tesla set foot on the road to the truth in the game, trying to find the bugs in this simulated world due to his serious behavior.

He was a materialist, in which he believed that bugs definitely exist even if this world felt so real to him.

This is just a game anyway. As long as it's a game, there will be a bug, and he's going to find out the bug to verify his perception.

However, the terror of this world had led to Tesla's despair.

It could be said that there was no place for him to do research at all. Basically he spent his days in torment, repeating between dying and waiting for the respawn to cool down.

In the end, Tesla finally sought help from the National Defense of the United States so that he could properly conduct research, hoping that the army could provide him with safety assurance to conduct scientific research in this world.

The National Defense of the United States was more than willing but lacked the power to fulfill Tesla's request.

The military base that they were preparing to set up had been destroyed, and their subsequent fortified points were wiped out entirely as well. They were unable to unite their military force, let alone providing protection for Tesla.

Under such circumstances, Tesla only had himself to rely on. He changed his way of thinking and recalled a wildly inventive idea he once had.

Back when he was working for the government, he came out with an idea of an extremely tough secret weapon while he was designing weapons for war.

It was a battle fortress with a body pieced together by multiple pieces of equipment and power sources, an enormous battle mech in normal times, which could turn into a battle fortress occupying ten square yards after transformation. Being able to attack both the air and land, and at the same time intercept attacks with all sorts of missiles equipped, it could be regarded as capable of attacking and defending all in one. It was not at all exaggerating to call it a moving battle robot.

This idea was merely a wild thought he had in his spare time which he never took seriously. For the reason that the engineering workloads required were too wide and it appeared impossible to be executable based on the current technology.

In spite of that, Tesla was once again shaken when he opened the shop in the game, so much so that he was currently wondering whether this was all

a dream.

Numerous design drafts, all sorts of latest equipment and the editing function of customizing mech hanging on the right-hand side of the shop.

All these turned Tesla's once impossible dream into a practical one.

Besides, his personal safety would be out of the question once he owned the moving battle fortress.

Thereupon, the idea that appeared to be extremely insane even for Tesla himself, was formally put into operation.

However, the most important thing was missing before he could start inventing the battle fortress, and that was money!

All the blueprints in the shop were not cheap at all. If he were to utilize his ability to save up soul coins by killing the monsters, most probably it would be impossible for him to do so in his entire life.

As such, in order to buy a massive amount of blueprints and equipment for his research, all he could do was apply for a research grant from the National Defense of the United States.

The money was indeed difficult to be approved. If it wasn't because of his great value and the fact that he repeatedly played an important role in the weapons development of the United States, there wasn't the slightest chance for approving this grant.

Even the executive officers were stunned when they knew Tesla was planning to apply for a grant worth over 100 million dollars.

The highest-ranking officer in the military personally gave Tesla a call to inquire about his idea and whether he was designing some kind of secret weapon.

Tesla didn't have any cunning plot as he devoted himself to doing research. Hence, without hiding anything, he spoke with great confidence about his



intention in using all the money to top-up in the game and buy soul coins from the hands of the other players.

The highest-ranking officer was dazed at that time, wondering if he was not fully awake yet.

He knew Tesla very well after all. Tesla was a complete research maniac who wouldn't even care to sleep or eat when he was fully concentrated in his research.

Nonetheless, Tesla was in fact telling him that he wanted to apply for a multi-million dollar grant to play a video game. This had completely overturned his views in outlooks of the world, life, and values, leaving him thinking that the world might have changed.

Originally it was absolutely impossible for them to approve the grant. However, Tesla threatened them with more than twenty important projects that were in progress, indicating that he would walk out if he couldn't get the money to top-up the game.

He also expressed that the reason he played the game was for the sole purpose of doing research and thus there was no room for negotiation over the money.

In the face of Tesla's threat, the mighty National Defense of the United States chose to compromise as Tesla was the very heart of all the important projects. They had no choice but to allocate millions of dollars for Tesla to use in the game.

All in all, they were acquainted with Tesla's temper, whereby it was impossible to pull him back once he set his mind on something. Threatening did not work well on him either. In fact, he simply joined the National Defense of the United States for the mere reason that they could provide him the huge amount of consumption demand he needed for his research.

At that moment, the executive officers of the National Defense of the United States felt extremely complicated feelings in their hearts.

# Chapter 300 - Battle Fortress

## Chapter 300: Battle Fortress

After receiving the grant from the National Defense of the United States' executive officers, Tesla could finally execute his idea.

His first step was, of course, to purchase more soul coins. With the financial support of that huge grant, Tesla bought all the soul coins with relatively reasonable prices in the Soul Coins Transaction Center of the American server in one go.

Despite that, the soul coins were still insufficient for him to carry out his plan as the building and execution of a battle fortress required an extreme amount of soul coins. Besides, many players in Naraka were unwilling to sell their soul coins since they didn't even have enough soul coins for their own use. Meanwhile, he was not the only person purchasing the soul coins. There were other cash rich players like him who were splurging money on soul coins. This resulted in a continuous increase in market price. Some of them were even the players from the National Defense.

In the face of such a predicament, Tesla had no choice but to increase his bid price, forcing the soul coins in Naraka to double in cost.

Although Tesla's act antagonized many players who wanted to spend money in-game, he couldn't care less about them and had his heart set on fulfilling his own plan.

In the end, he managed to collect an adequate amount of soul coins for his research, but he had ramped up the market price of soul coins so much in Naraka and it wouldn't drop any time soon.

The players were cursing him again and again for his madness, but other than feeling helpless, there was nothing they could do about it since they had no idea of the purchaser's identity.

After acquiring enough soul coins, Tesla bought a total of about a hundred draft papers from the shop, different types of mechanical arms, and hundreds of components for the purpose of remodeling, and a corresponding big remodeling device. After he was fully equipped, he formally threw himself into remodeling the mech.

First, he drew an analytical diagram of his Rechargeable Mech on a draft paper, and then considered the way to merge the content on the design draft with his Rechargeable Mech.

He even bought a book called the Mech Manual for Beginners from the shop for this.

Bei Li put that Mech Manual for Beginners up for sale so that the Naraka players could have a better understanding of the functions on the mech. The selling price was only 10 soul coins, and yet less than ten books had sold until now.

Owing to the reason that the mech description in the book was very complicated that one would not be able to comprehend it without a certain degree of technical expertise. It was like abstruse writing that was unintelligible to the players.

However, Tesla was different from the other players. Based on his enthusiasm and dedication to scientific research, his progress was totally limited by the available knowledge on science and technology nowadays. Now that he had the manuals for these high-end technology products, he kept on absorbing information in the manual like a sponge and rapidly increased his understanding of mech.

After spending three days studying, the whole manual was filled with the relevant content he had annotated, and he was quite confident about his newfound knowledge.

Although it was a crazy idea, so much so that even Tesla himself found it difficult, he had no intention of giving up because this place could provide him with all the resources he needed to carry on his project.

However, he could not find a zone for him to develop mech safely in Naraka because danger was lurking everywhere. In the end, all he could find was a fairly remote building in a state of disrepair to carry out research on his plan.

Thanks to the nutrient solution, Tesla could really dedicate himself to the research without resting or eating.

(Note: The gaming pod is in the mode of nutrient solution, in which it is directly assimilated to the body and thus situation like the urgency of urination will not take place.)

After five days of sketching out the project, repeatedly modifying and simulating with the aid of the mech editor from the shop, there were significant changes in the mech's structural diagram on the draft paper.

By relying on the shop's powerful setting, Tesla was able to finalize the prototype of his Fortress Plan pretty quickly. What he had to do next was to assemble the components and parts.

This was undoubtedly the hardest part. In order to obtain a better result in remodeling, Tesla even invited his old mates in the army and conferred with them on how to continue remodeling.

Tesla started live streaming specifically for this purpose. Meanwhile, all the executive officers were watching outside and expressing their opinions from time to time.

His crazy idea was soon spread among the players, leading them to enter the live streaming channel to see whether the modification was feasible.

Even though the function for remodeling had always been available, none of the players had given it a try. After all, this was an exceptionally huge project. Perhaps it was fairly simple to equip the mech with some peripheral functions, but they dared not think about remodeling the mech from the interior part to the exterior part.

Therefore, they found Tesla's actions intriguing.

The players expressed their outside-the-box imaginations and ideas in the live streaming channel during their observation. Although it was hardly applicable in reality, Tesla took note of all the ideas for further reference.

Half a month later during the ongoing progress of the project, the whole Rechargeable Mech was changed beyond recognition, turning into a giant machine as tall as twelve feet in height.

However, he was not even halfway done since the internal part was not equipped with compartments yet.

First of all, he had to purchase the core component, which was the power source. As a result of Bei Li's reluctance for the technology in the game to interfere too much in reality, the most important core was not available for the players to forge and build. Hence, Tesla had no choice but to purchase it from the shop.

Of course, Tesla had to choose a device that could produce the highest energy due to the huge size of the machine.

Following a short round of selection, Tesla had chosen a high-load power source, which was called the T1 VIT Nano Core.

This power core had a special characteristic of continuous high-frequency power transmission, which was exactly what Tesla wanted. Although the selling price was extremely high, Tesla bought it anyway without any hesitation.

After installing the core, Tesla kept on modifying and discussing with his old mates on the ways to install the components while looking over the manual.

There was an application of eleven different systems, which included the energy system, actuating system, skeletal system, armor system, plugin system, perceptual system, master control system, control system, power system, auxiliary system, and weapon system. The huge workload didn't make Tesla feel depressed, in fact he was quite excited about it.

One by one, Tesla filled up the giant metal mech with the help of his old friends. They meticulously polished every connecting part and attempted to execute it several times in order to ensure that it ran perfectly before they could proceed to assemble the next system.

The giant battle fortress, that was once thought to be impossible, eventually revealed its basic form.

Tesla proceeded in all cases from his personal safety, hence the weapon system was of utmost importance for a battle fortress. He started the last step of modification on assembling the weapons after he studied the manual.

About thirty weapons were loaded in the Fortress Mech, for instance: Arca Plasmor, Saboteur Missile Container, Sinos Particle Rotating Barrel, V1 Photon Gun, Soul Crystal Hand Grenade, Three-barrel High-Speed Charge, and so on.

The whole chain of operations had shaken all the players spectating in the live streaming channel.

There were so many weapons of mass destruction loaded in this mech. It was undeniable for it to be called a war machine if this mech could really operate perfectly.

The players watching the live stream were full of anticipation, wanting to have a look at the horrifying lethality of the so-called Fortress Mech after it was modified.

Nonetheless, this was just the foundation of a battle mech since Tesla hadn't yet perfected his idea. What came next was the construction of the defense system, making the Fortress Mech extremely ferocious by installing all sorts of protective barriers and defensive weapons. The mech was radiating with a cold, metallic luster.

With the help of the shop and existing tools, Tesla only spent a month to complete the construction of the super fortress, without taking any breaks.

Unfortunately for Tesla, the shop did not supply the remodeling for upgrading the mech. After the complete modification of the system, he had to rely on leveling up and the additional point of spiritual ore for further upgrades.

As such, this research maniac was planning to level up and collect spiritual ore by using his battle fortress, so that he could fully refine it

After climbing into the control cabin, a few hoses connected to his nerves automatically and reached out to link with different parts of his body. The cabin door slowly closed afterward and his eyes recovered after a short period of darkness.

He did not feel any discomfort. It was as though the mech was an extended part of his body. This first test was a perfect success.

He tried to clench his fist and the blue light on the mech suddenly lit up, followed by the roaring of the power source.

Rumble!

Tesla threw a punch and the wall collapsed with a loud crash. He then walked out, step by step, from this deserted building where he had spent a month in seclusion.

“It’s my turn now!” said Tesla, his eyes beaming with excitement. Then, he started running, putting the kinetic system into action. The blue lights on the body surface flickered one after another, and the mech’s status was constantly fed back on the panel board.

When he ran to a fairly wide zone, a launch port revealed at the back of the Fortress Mech and fired a signal flare in an instant, which then exploded in the air.

Then, Tesla waited silently.

Soon, the ground began vibrating as numerous creatures flooded in.

There was no doubt that the first appearance of this Fortress Mech attracted the attention of many players. They gathered around Tesla's live stream and stared attentively at the mech on the screen, wanting to see whether the final result of this crazy experiment was a success or a failure.

Whirr... whirr...

As the crowd of creatures was approaching, the internal part of the mech started whirring. The three-barrel gun emerged in front of the arm, the barrel then rotated and fired a hail of bullets. The dense bullet rain turned numerous creatures into sieves.

This was just the beginning. The weapons that emerged on the mech's body surface were increasing as the number of creatures increased. In addition, all the weapons were operating simultaneously. The fortress had become a radiator, appearing as though it was roaring as the mech vibrated, and venting its endless flames of fury at his surroundings.

The players in the live stream were stunned at the scene before them. Apparently, the toughness of the Fortress Mech was far beyond their imagination.

"Fortress, battle mode!"

It became harder and harder to defend as more and more creatures gathered around him. At this moment, Tesla initiated the second form of a fortress.

The players were in total bewilderment at what had taken place.

All they saw was the Fortress Mech instantly change its form and lay flat on the ground. Centering upon the place it stood, it turned into a fortified point of ten square yards full of different kinds of weapons and missiles.

"Initiate Unlimited Firepower!"

Accompanied by Tesla's growling, all the weapons thundered at the same time, covering half the sky with bullets and missiles.

The toughest part of the Fortress Mech finally cut a striking figure.



# The Boss

## Behind The Game

*by Slashing Blade*

W E B N O V E L

